



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 19

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1801: The Seven Assassins

After Tiantai and Ji Chang's Club's battle, the rankings of Champion University had changed. It had been a long time since such a battle had taken place there. People were still shaking with excitement.

The Star Group had suffered a crushing defeat. Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Tantai the Wise, Wu, Qing Feng, and so on had all risen in the rankings. Many people were shocked. Why were Tiantai's people all so strong? They were all so talented...

Of course, the most incredible battle had been the one between Lin Feng and Ji Wuyou. Lin Feng had defeated the first student, Ji Chang's brother. Now, Lin Feng was at the top of the low ranking list, amazing the whole university. Ji Wuyou had been at the top for such a long time, it was an incredible change, yet he was now merely the second student...

After that battle, the most famous low-level emperors of Champion University were the members of Tiantai. From that moment on, people who would join Tiantai would be considered very strong.

Ji Chang's Club's Star Group was declining. It was as if they had lost their reputation between one moment and the next. Initially, many people wanted to steal Lin Feng's Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, but because of this battle, they had already give up on the idea. And if medium-level emperors and high-level emperors wanted to oppress Lin Feng with their strength, they had to think twice because he now had support.

People usually admired the top three students of the university. Even though they didn't support them openly, the elders of Champion University understood this as well.

In the remote mountains, Ji Wuyou was practicing cultivation like a madman. Yu Wen Jing was sitting next to him and practicing cultivation too.

An old man appeared in the air and looked down at them. He was surprised as he landed next to Yu Wen Jing.

“Ancestor,” said Yu Wen Jing, opening her eyes. She bowed to Ancestor Zhu Tian.

“What’s wrong with him?” asked Ancestor Zhu Tian, pointing at Ji Wuyou.

Yu Wen Jing looked awkward, but she finally admitted the truth. “Ancestor, we lost.”

“Oh?” Ancestor Zhu Tian was surprised and asked, “The little boy defeated Ji Wuyou?”

“Indeed,” said Yu Wen Jing, pulling a long face, but nodding nonetheless.

“Alright,” said the old man, nodding calmly. He said, “A defeat doesn’t matter. Study hard.”

Then, the ancestor left, shaking his head. Ji Wuyou wasn’t as strong as Ji Chang, but he didn’t have time to take care of young people that much. The old man would wait before becoming Ji Wuyou’s official teacher, he had to see how strong his potential was first.

In another place, in Lin Feng’s residence, Tiantai was lively. Yun Qing Yan looked overjoyed and said to Huang Fu Long, “Buddy, look, there are already thirteen more people who want to join Tiantai. I gave them months of exams to see how strong they were. If they succeed, I’ll allow them to join the external disciples of Tiantai.”

“Hehe,” Huang Fu Long laughed. Tiantai was becoming famous.

Even when walking around in the university, Huang Fu Long had the sensation that everybody was looking at him in admiration.

“Where’s Lin Feng?” asked someone at that moment. Yun Qing Yan raised her head and saw a smiling young man. His hands were in his sleeves.

“Why do you want to see Lin Feng?” asked Yun Qing Yan.

“I have something to tell him.”

“Jing Shou, I have the feeling you harbor evil intentions,” said Yun Qing Yan to the young man. Now, Jing Shou was the third student in the ranking list.

“What do you mean? Lin Feng is strong and famous. Even if I meant him harm, I wouldn’t stand a chance,” said Jing Shou with a smile. Yun Qing Yan wanted to say something, but Lin Feng came out and Jing Shou noted, “He’s right behind you.”

“You’re looking for me?” Lin Feng had just come back from Champion Hall, and now encountered Jing Shou.

“Indeed. I want to talk to you,” said Jing Shou, nodding at Lin Feng.

“Alright, come with me,” said Lin Feng. He didn’t refuse. Jing Shou was extraordinary, with an incredible reputation in Champion University as the first assassin. Lin Feng wondered why Jing Shou was looking for him.

—

Lin Feng took Jing Shou to a courtyard with stone chairs. “Please have a seat.”

Jing Shou sat down, his hands still in his sleeves, as always.

“So, Assassin Jing Shou, why were you looking for me?” asked Lin Feng.

“I want to join Tiantai,” said Jing Shou, smiling indifferently.

Despite himself, Lin Feng was surprised and asked, “Why?”

“I am more interested in the ranking list than other people, and I found the battles amazing. Tiantai’s cultivators are incredible fighters, and many people who joined Tiantai changed,” said Jing Shou, smiling indifferently.

“They hadn’t fought on the battle stage for a long time, of course they had changed since the last time you saw them. Otherwise, what’s the purpose of a being a university student, if you don’t become stronger?” asked Lin Feng.

However, Jing Shou shook his head and said, “Other people haven’t noticed, but I have. They haven’t only become stronger. I’m an assassin, I see things people don’t. I noticed that the core disciples of Tiantai have studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures.”

Lin Feng frowned. Jing Shou was right about that. As an assassin, he had acute perception!

“I admire Tiantai’s people, you and your friends. I also think it’s amazing that you transmitted the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to all your friends. Who would do that?” asked Jing Shou, narrowing his eyes and smiling, “No wonder you managed to survive after leaving the small world and coming here.”

Lin Feng was shaken. They had never talked that much, how did Jing Shou know that Lin Feng was from a small world?

“Besides, we are old friends. We should have stuck together,” said Jing Shou. Lin Feng was dumbstruck, but Jing Shou ignored his facial expression and smiled as if Lin Feng had been his old friend. Lin Feng was very curious.

“Who are you?” asked Lin Feng.

“Assassin, Jing Shou,” said Jing Shou, standing up. Suddenly, he released Qi towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s hair bristled and he also stood up, releasing his own Qi.

“Don’t worry. I didn’t come to fight. Don’t you recognize my Qi?” asked Jing Shou with a smile. Lin Feng sensed the Qi and trembled.

Indeed, he had already sensed that Qi, a very long time ago. Was it in a dangerous situation?

“Are you surprised? The first time I saw you, I didn’t know you were Lin Feng until Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi showed up and you recreated Tiantai. Then I knew that the person I wanted to kill a long time ago had joined Champion University,” said Jing Shou smiling calmly.

However, Lin Feng didn’t look happy, he was staring at Jing Shou. “You’re from the Celestial Qi Castle?”

“No, no, absolutely not. The members of the Imperial Assassin Union are not all Celestial Qi Castle’s people. They just controlled me for a certain amount of time,” said Jing Shou with a smile that was not a smile. “But I, the first assassin, had already left the Celestial Qi Castle before you were there, and now we meet again. That’s a surprise.”

“First Assassin!” Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. Jing Shou’s Qi exploded. Lin Feng remembered the assassins he had met a few times back then. Surprisingly, the second student, Jing Shou was the first assassin!

“Back then, in the small world, the Imperial Assassin Union killed people who were talented. The first and second assassins rarely had to show up because they only had to kill people who really had the potential to become extremely strong and you were lucky, because you weren’t on that list,” said Jing Shou calmly.

Lin Feng was surprised, “Why didn’t the first and second assassins kill me then? And who was the second assassin?”

“The seven assassins don’t know each other, and they also change all the time. When you are available, you’re an assassin;

otherwise you're not. I did know who the second assassin was," replied Jing Shou.

"You recognized him?" asked Lin Feng.

"You know him. He was very important to the seven assassins. However, I've heard that he also betrayed the Celestial Qi Castle because he was a member of the Celestial Wen Castle," said Jing Shou.

Lin Feng began to recall many things. "Who?"

"His name was Wen Ao Xue," said Jing Shou confidently.

Lin Feng frowned in astonishment. Wen Ao Xue was the second assassin?

"Surprised? You don't need to believe me. But I think that only a few people knew his real social status," Jing Shou told him. Lin Feng looked pensive, startled at this new information.

Chapter 1802: Heavenly Grace Godly Wood

“I’m surprised because the Imperial Assassin Union tried to kill Wen Ao Xue, was he pretending back then? I don’t need to think too much about him, however,” Lin Feng said after remaining silent for a few seconds.

Jing Shou smiled, “Who said the second assassin was extremely strong? Maybe back then he could have really died.”

Lin Feng raised his head, looking thoughtful, but then he smiled indifferently. He didn’t care about the seven assassins anymore. His enemies were the members of the Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine.

“You are the first assassin and now you want to join Tiantai, why would I accept?” asked Lin Feng, smiling at Jing Shou.

“Maybe that the second assassin wasn’t very strong, but I was the strongest, I understand how to kill people the best. Since you want Tiantai to be powerful, don’t you think I’d be a good fit? I’m strong. If I obtain the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, I’ll be like your friends. And when Tiantai becomes very, very strong, I’ll be a powerful assassin in the institution,” said Jing Shou, his hands still in his sleeves, smiling easily.

Lin Feng’s heart accelerated but he smiled back, “How can I know that you don’t harbor evil intentions?”

“People who join Tiantai are all brothers. If I betray Tiantai, you’ll all join hands and kill me. That’s your motto, unless you think that your friends and you can’t kill me even if you join hands,” said Jing Shou calmly. He was convinced that since Lin Feng and his friends had the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, he’d accept.

As expected, Lin Feng smiled, “Release your godly awareness.”

“Alright,” Jing Shou nodded and released his godly awareness,

Lin Feng transmitted the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to him. After that, Jing Shou opened his eyes and Lin Feng said calmly, “You are now a brother, if you betray Tiantai, Tiantai’s members will kill you.”

“We are now brothers,” agreed Jing Shou, standing up and smiling, and then the two cultivators walked out together.

—

Yun Qing Ya saw Lin Feng and Jing Shou come out, she was surprised. What had Jing Shou told Lin Feng? Their expressions had changed.

“Qing Yan, from now on, Jing Shou is a core disciple of Tiantai. He’ll help you make Tiantai become stronger and bigger,” said Lin Feng to Yun Qing Yan, smiling warmly. Yun Qing Yan was very surprised, but she smiled happily at Jing Shou.

Jing Shou was the first assassin. He was an incredible killer. He was also the third student in the ranking list, so he was very strong. If he studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, he would become even stronger. He also had incredible senses and acute perceptions, like most assassins. He could become a real asset to the group. Having an assassin was a great asset for killing enemies.

Lin Feng left and looked for Hou Qing Lin, Tantai, and the others. Lin Feng said to Hou Qing Lin, “Brother, we’re slowly rising in Champion University. Ji Chang’s Club are our enemies but they won’t dare cause trouble for now. I’m going to leave for a while. Take our members away to practice if you have time, help them become stronger. Also, I accepted Jing Shou in Tiantai. I told him to stay with Qing Yan, they’re going to recruit more people. With you guys, I’m confident nothing will happen to Tiantai.”

When Hou Qing Lin heard that Jing Shou had joined Tiantai, he nodded, “Jing Shou is mysterious. But he has a good position in the rankings, it’s a good thing that he joined Tiantai.”

“I think so, too. I think Jing Shou also comes from our small world, he was the first assassin back then,” said Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin was startled.

“Lin Feng, where are you going?” Tantai asked when he heard that Lin Feng was going to leave.

“I’m going to your tribe, actually. I need to ask some things of the elder of your tribe,” Lin Feng said to Tantai.

“My tribe?” Tantai was surprised and looked at Lin Feng strangely.

“Let’s go. I know someone who has been injured, I don’t know how to cure him, so I’ll ask the elders of your tribe,” Lin Feng told him.

——

After leaving the university, Lin Feng and Tantai jumped into Lin Feng’s boat and left the Holy City. Lin Feng was so grateful that Duan Mu the Celestial Emperor had given a boat to him. Without that boat, he would have wasted so much time traveling.

They flew to a desolate area. Tantai’s tribe still looked simple, as if nothing had changed since the old days, and the young people’s cultivation levels were still so low. It was difficult to imagine that such a place was just outside of the Holy City, unless you understood the philosophy of that tribe. Otherwise, many people actually despised them, thinking they were primitive weaklings.

“Grandpa!” shouted Tantai.

The old man turned around and shouted back at Tantai, “You little boy, why did you come back! Did you have an accident while traveling?”

“Hehe, I didn’t have any problem this time. Look at my cultivation level,” beamed Tantai. Crackling sounds were heard and a terrifying Qi rose to the skies as his lions roared.

The old man was staring at Tantai. He smiled and said, “Little boy, what happened? You’re quickly growing up.”

“Bullshit, you think I’m a weakling?” retorted Tantai loudly, then he laughed and said, “Of course, I also came because of Lin Feng, he has something to ask you. No matter what he wants, you can’t refuse, otherwise, I’ll get angry.”

“You’re becoming insolent, little boy,” said the old man to Tantai. Then, he looked at Lin Feng, “Little boy, tell me what you want.”

“Master, I have a friend, a sword cultivator. He was injured by cosmic energies, and his injuries are severe. I wonder if you could heal him,” said Lin Feng, bowing politely before the old man. Tantai didn’t know if his tribe could heal sword cultivators.

“I can heal almost anyone, I think. I just need time. And I need to see the patient,” said the old man, “If I don’t see the person, I can’t do much.”

Lin Feng frowned. Was Emperor Wu Tian Jian in Jiange? Even if he was there, would he follow Lin Feng to the periphery of the Holy City to see a doctor?

“Master, is there any other way?” asked Lin Feng.

The old man remained silent, he looked pensive. Then, he nodded, “If you could obtain the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood from the Godly Wood Valley, then you could heal any cosmic energy injury.”

“Grandpa, are you joking? Lin Feng would die if he went there, there are guards,” Tantai blurted out furiously, staring at the old man.

“I didn’t tell him to go,” replied the old man evenly.

“Master, what is the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious. He knew where the Godly Wood Valley was, he had read about it in the Edict Palace. He had heard that there

was a tribe there which was isolated from the world, maybe it was a world in itself. The members of the tribe protected their godly wood, but Lin Feng didn't know what it was.

“The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood is really well protected. It comes from the cosmic energies of the earth and sky. Some people say that the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood can help when fighting against great emperors. Your friend is injured, but with the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, he could definitely be cured,” explained the old man, “However, the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood is in the Godly Wood Valley, they don't allow outsiders there precisely because of the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. There are many great emperors there who are terrifyingly strong. Nobody dares offend them. Therefore, you need to think carefully before trying to obtain it.”

An ancient tribe, thought Lin Feng before he said, “If I go there as a guest, will I have problems?”

“No problem, the Godly Wood Valley and the World Clan are the same, they can't stop people from coming. Actually, they also send disciples to the universities of the region, but those students never say they're from there, that's all,” said the old man patiently.

“Grandpa, are there only two possibilities? Isn't there a third one?” asked Tantai to the old man. He didn't want Lin Feng to try and take the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. In the Holy City, many people wanted the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. Those who had tried had failed and ended up in difficult situations.

“No, nothing else. The patient can come himself or you can use the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, that's all. Of course, we can forget about the Godly Medicine of the Immortals,” said the old man indifferently. Very few people had ever seen the Godly Medicine of the Immortals, getting it was almost impossible.

“Lin Feng, you should bring him here. My tribe can take care of him.”

“I understand,” nodded Lin Feng. He had already thought of a plan. He looked at Tantai and said, “Tantai, you stay here, I’m leaving.”

Tantai knew what Lin Feng wanted to do.

“I’m coming with you,” Tantai stated to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng frowned and was about to say something before the old man interrupted, “Go, just be careful.”

Chapter 1803

Even though the old man didn't mind, Lin Feng did mind and asked Tantai to go back to the Holy City. Lin Feng had read about the Godly Wood Valley in the Edict Palace, it was an incredible place. The people there were incredibly strong. Lin Feng preferred to go there alone. If he couldn't get the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, then he'd give up. If he could get it, then that was great. Regarding Tantai, Lin Feng didn't want him to take needless risks.

In the Edict Palace, Lin Feng had read that the Godly Wood Valley was an ancient valley in the Great Shiny Mountain, a great distance north-west of the Holy City.

—

After a week of travel, a boat appeared in the sky above the vast Great Shiny Mountain. Lin Feng was still flying at full speed.

The Great Shiny Mountain is just like in the legends, depopulated and scary, thought Lin Feng glancing around. There were rotten trees, orange grass, desolate mountain ranges, no sign of life.

Lin Feng glanced around and whispered, "The Great Shiny Mountain is incredibly vast. The Godly Wood Valley will be difficult to find."

Suddenly, three Lin Feng clones appeared around him.

"One life turns into one, two lives turn into three, three lives: the ten thousand things of creation!" Lin Feng turned into three shadows, and then nine, but those shadows looked like illusions, not like clones. They had no Qi and seemed very fragile.

More and more Lin Fengs appeared in the sky and moved in every direction.

Lin Feng's real body landed on the ground. He closed his eyes and started sleeping.

The Three Lives Scriptures allow me to have three bodies. However, when one body turns into three, the two others still belong to your other body, it's impossible to control them independently. It's like a body transformation technique, thought Lin Feng. When he turned into a million clones, his clones couldn't fight, but for now it didn't matter.

The million clones traveled around in the mountains. Lin Feng saw some people there. One of his clones was in the air above a valley, his eyes twinkling. Then the clone's silhouette flickered and descended into the valley. Lin Feng realized there was a path there.

At that moment, his clone slowly walked forwards. A new world appeared before his eyes, a city with a bustling crowd was there. Lin Feng had just followed some people to find that place.

Far from the Great Shiny Mountain, the real Lin Feng opened his eyes and flew in that direction. When he arrived above the valley, his millions of clones came back to him and he became one person once again.

Lin Feng created another clone. He looked as real as the real Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at his clone and descended from the sky. After a short time, he arrived in the city. Even though there were quite a few people there, that city couldn't be compared to cities in the outside world. It wasn't as crowded, and there weren't as many buildings. However, people there were abnormally strong. On both sides of the road, there were vendors' booths. They sold Godly Wood.

"Your Excellency, how to get Godly Wood?" asked Lin Feng of one of the vendors. The wood he was selling was red and twinkling, it contained cosmic energies.

"A chapter of medium-level ancient imperial scriptures for a stick," the owner said to Lin Feng.

“Medium-level ancient imperial scriptures!” Lin Feng looked surprised and said, “Is that Heavenly Grace Godly Wood?”

“Heavenly Grace Godly Wood?” The owner looked at Lin Feng strangely, smiled, and said, “Your Excellency, it must be your first time in the Godly Wood Valley.”

“Indeed,” Lin Feng laughed and nodded at his words.

“The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood is the internal part of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. Even if you can find Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, a stick can’t be exchanged against medium-level ancient imperial scriptures, it’s priceless. The wood we sell is from branches only. Of course, other vendors sell other parts of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree in the city, but the price will be much higher. Concerning the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, nobody sells it in the Godly Wood Valley.”

“I see. So if someone wants the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, there’s no hope, right?” guessed Lin Feng.

“The stocks of Heavenly Grace Godly Wood are controlled by the main clan of the Godly Wood Valley. Only their members can use it. If you want to gain some Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, you have to be a member of the Godly Wood Clan. But to be honest, with your cultivation level, it’s impossible,” said the merchant. He was even surprised that Lin Feng had found this place.

“I understand,” said Lin Feng politely. “I can go to the Godly Wood Valley, right?”

“You can. No problem. One day every month, the valley is open to foreigners. Some people go there to trade, it’s a win-win deal. The Godly Wood Valley can’t prevent its people from having contacts with the outside world. You came precisely on time, today is the open day, you’re lucky. You can go to the Godly Wood Valley.”

Lin Feng nodded, he smiled and said, “Can we go together? It

would be great if you could show me around.”

“You seem nice, so why not,” said the vendor agreeably. “You must come from a powerful family, it’s an honor for me to know you. Please call me Chang Lin.”

“Alright, Brother Chang Lin. My name is Lin Feng!” Lin Feng talked to and got to know that vendor. After a short time, the news spread that the open day was starting. Lin Feng and Chang Lin walked to the edge of the small town and entered a new world: the Godly Wood Valley!

In the Godly Wood Valley, there were trees everywhere. There were many different colors in the forest, and courtyards and gardeners everywhere.

“Lin Feng, look, those people are grafting the trees in the Godly Wood Valley. Those trees contain cosmic energies. They are not very natural though, they are not made of the cosmic energies of the earth and sky. Only the Godly Wood Clan have real Sky Blue Godly Wood,” said Chang Lin. Many people were in the valley and looking for things they needed.

“Brother Chang Lin, some people must also go to the Godly Wood Clan, right?” asked Lin Feng.

Chang Lin nodded and pointed at a group of dozens of people, they looked extraordinary.

“They are going to the Godly Wood Clan. They are all extremely strong, weaklings can’t go there. The clan has priceless items, and in order to deal with them, you need to be extremely rich.”

“Let’s go there too,” said Lin Feng and he started that way. Chang Lin frowned and stretched his hand out, but Lin Feng was already out of reach, so he smiled wryly, “What a funny guy!. Alright, I’ve never been there, so why not?”

The group of people kept moving forwards. After a long time, Lin Feng arrived at an ancient city. Cosmic strength floated in the air

and covered the whole city. Lin Feng was astonished and gasped with amazement.

“That’s the Godly Wood Clan, who control the Godly Wood Valley. It’s also a holy world. You can find real Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees here,” said Chang Lin, sensing the Qi. He looked at the cosmic energies in admiration.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng and they continued on. However, at that moment, two young men with Godly Wood armors stopped them. “You can’t go into the Godly Wood Clan’s territory.”

“But these people just did?” said Lin Feng, pointing at the group of people.

Chang Lin pulled Lin Feng’s sleeve as the guard said, “They were invited by the Godly Wood Clan. They are allowed in.”

“Lin Feng, those people must be business partners of the Godly Wood Clan, that’s why they were invited,” said Chang Lin to Lin Feng using telepathy, “Let’s leave.”

“We’ve brought many great things. We can also be considered as guests, I guess,” said Lin Feng, taking out weapons which floated in the air in front of the two guards, radiating oppressive energies.

The guards glanced at each other and one said, “Since you came to trade, come with me. The first time, someone must lead the way.”

“Thank you!,” said Lin Feng, putting his treasures away. Then, he rose up into the air with the two guards. Chang Lin looked at Lin Feng strangely and followed along. Lin Feng had come prepared!

Lin Feng sensed the cosmic energies all around him and sighed. The Godly Wood Clan was incredible, their territory was covered by cosmic energies created by the earth and sky.

The guard took Lin Feng and Chang Lin to a palace. There were other people there, who looked at Lin Feng strangely. They didn’t

know these two new people, but they didn't care, the Godly Wood Clan could deal with them if necessary.

Chapter 1804: At The Foot Of The Tree

At that moment, someone came out of the palace. The crowd walked forwards, one of them smiling and asking, “Mister Lu, why is it so calm today?”

“Sorry, everyone. We have some guests, the young masters are all there attending a banquet. They didn’t have time to come, they told me they didn’t have time to take care of you, but you can all come and attend the banquet,” said Mister Lu, smiling politely. He was in charge of the business operations of the clan.

The Godly Wood Clan does have close relations with groups of the outside world. Groups like Tantai’s tribe are very rare, thought Lin Feng, as the group followed Mister Lu.

Mister Lu noticed Lin Feng and Chang Lin, he slowed down and smiled at them, “I don’t know you, it must your first time here.”

“Indeed, it’s our first time. My friend brought some precious treasures, he wants to trade with the clan,” replied Chang Lin. Mister Lu said nothing. Very quickly, they climbed up the stairs and arrived in the room where the banquet was taking place. Lin Feng glanced around; the people there were very young, chatting, laughing, and having fun.

“Brother Ji, you shine with splendor. Everybody admires you, including me. Come, cheers!” said an imposing young man to another young man who was wearing a cyan robe. They raised their glasses and laughed.

“Ji Chang!” whispered Lin Feng, frowning. The young man who was drinking was surprisingly the champion of Champion University, Ji Chang!

Ji Chang suddenly turned around and looked at Lin Feng coolly.

“Who are you?” Ji Chang asked Lin Feng. He rarely went to Champion University these days, traveling and practicing

cultivation a lot. He didn't know who Lin Feng was.

"A student of Champion University," said Lin Feng, his facial expression not changing. He still looked calm and composed. Ji Chang nodded once. Since Lin Feng was a student from Champion University, they could be friends, he asked, "Are you hiding your cultivation level?"

"Kind of," replied Lin Feng, releasing cosmic energies.

Ji Chang was surprised and said, "What a powerful technique. I can't even see through it."

Lin Feng laughed, but said nothing. He looked at the other people. They all looked extraordinary. The young man with whom Ji Chang was talking was probably from the Godly Wood Clan.

At that moment, a young man stood up and smiled at Lin Feng and the others, "Welcome to the Godly Wood Clan everyone, please join us."

That person seemed polite. Chang Lin and Lin Feng sat down next to one another. Chang Lin pulled Lin Feng's sleeve and said, "Dude, you're from Champion University and you're hiding your cultivation level, I feel stupid. I've heard of Ji Chang, he's a genius from Champion University, and even he couldn't see through it."

"So what? He's sitting in a good place, I am on the ground," replied Lin Feng.

Chang Lin laughed and replied, "You're insane."

Lin Feng laughed back, but said nothing. He listened to Ji Chang and the others. Ji Chang had already spent a few days there. He had met some young people from the Godly Wood Clan while traveling and made friends with them. All the young men there were heroic.

"I've heard that the Godly Wood Clan grows the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees for ten thousand years, is it possible to see them?" asked a young man just under Ji Chang. Many people shivered.

Few people had ever seen real Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees.

“Right, I want to see a real Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree too,” said Ji Chang. The young men of the Godly Wood Clan glanced at one another.

“Brother, since Ji Chang and the others want to see the trees, we can show them,” said a beautiful woman of the Godly Wood Clan. She was the princess of the clan and talking to her older brother, Shen Mu Qi.

Shen Mu Qi nodded agreeably and said, “Since Brother Ji and Brother Yan want to see the trees, why not? I cannot refuse. Please stand up, everyone.”

“Thank you very much, Brother Shen Mu and Brother Shen Mu’s sister,” answered Yan Ping, smiling broadly. Ji Chang and the others stood up. They wanted to see the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, and they also wanted to get their hands on some Heavenly Grace Godly Wood.

“Come with me, everyone,” said Shen Mu Qi, pointing at Shen Mu Yun who was going to lead the way. Chang Lin and many other people remained seated though. Only Lin Feng suddenly stood up and followed.

The young man turned around and smiled at Lin Feng, “Your Excellency, please stay here and have a few drinks. We’ll have the opportunity to chat when I come back.”

“Your humble servant Lin Feng would like to see the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, too,” said Lin Feng. He perfectly understood what the young man meant, but since Ji Chang and the others had asked first, Lin Feng couldn’t miss that opportunity. At least, he wanted to see where the tree was.

“I don’t like making guests feel awkward,” said Shen Mu Yun politely. He sounded nice, but posh. Lin Feng could also see that those people considered people like Ji Chang as equals.

“The Godly Wood Clan controls a world, I came here because I admire you and your clan. I would be disappointed if I couldn’t see certain things, especially if others could, it would be unfair,” Lin Feng replied easily.

Shen Mu Yun’s eyes twinkled coldly, but Shen Mu Qi intervened calmly. “Since you really want to see it, then go.”

Shen Mu Yun looked at Lin Feng coolly, but turned around and continued walking. Ji Chang hadn’t turned around at all. He didn’t care about this matter. The others looked at Lin Feng in amusement.

What a guy, he dares follow them, thought Chang Lin. He was stunned. Lin Feng was audacious. He was not afraid of offending the Godly Wood Clan. He had insisted on going and seeing the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees.

But he looked at Lin Feng with admiration, nonetheless. After all, Chang Lin had been in the Godly Wood Valley for a very long time, and he had never seen a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree.

—

The distance between the palace where the banquet was taking place and the field with the trees was important. They arrived at a thick and dense forest, controlled by the Godly Wood Clan for the incredible Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees there.

When Lin Feng arrived at the forest, he sensed the Qi surrounding his body and shook. This forest was protected by some incredibly strong guardians. It was impossible to steal trees here!

“There are Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees here but I don’t know where the usable trees are,” said Shen Mu Qi with a smile.

Ji Chang’s eyes sparked like lightning. “I’ve heard that the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees are alive and can even switch locations. It seems that even extremely strong cultivators can’t

necessarily kidnap them. This place is so vast, finding a mature tree mustn't be easy."

Then, Ji Chang's figure blurred into the wind, and disappeared.

The place was extremely vast, but the Godly Wood Clan had fenced-in the territory. There was only one exit. The young men of the Godly Wood Clan trusted Ji Chang and the others. Besides, even if they found usable Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees, they couldn't necessarily use them.

The others started walking. Lin Feng didn't move. Shen Mu Yun looked at him and said, "Why don't you go and look for a tree?"

"I'm going now," said Lin Feng. Suddenly, a clone appeared and moved in a different direction.

Shen Mu Yun frowned, this guy could duplicate himself?

While moving, Lin Feng's clones continued multiplying and moving in every direction, looking for a mature tree.

—

Very soon, Lin Feng found a gigantic tree containing terrifying cosmic energies. Lin Feng stood at the bottom of the tree and took a deep breath. He could sense the cosmic energies of the earth and sky.

"Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, the child of the earth and sky. It's not mature yet, but it has such an incredible Qi. This is the grace of Heaven. If it were mature, its cosmic energies would be incredibly strong," murmured Lin Feng. Even in that incredibly dense forest, there weren't many Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees. They were extremely rare. Lin Feng had only located a few of them.

"According to legends, the first Buddha achieved enlightenment at the foot of a Bodhi tree. That's where he became a Buddha. I wonder if I can make my energies turn into cosmic energies at the foot of this tree," whispered Lin Feng, then walked closer to the tree and sat down cross-legged. He started meditating.

Lin Feng's millions of clones also started meditating at the foot of other trees. It didn't matter whether they were mature or not. He had never sensed such powerful cosmic energies!

Chapter 1805: Heavenly Grace

Even though his clones didn't have strength, they could still practice cultivation and meditate. In that forest, there were Lin Feng clones everywhere.

Lin Feng's real body walked in the air and glanced around. The Godly Wood Clan was very powerful. Their ancestors had created a real world here and sealed it off, It was their personal property. Many extremely strong cultivators appeared all the time in their clan. Few outsiders dared offend them.

"Eh?" At that moment, Lin Feng stopped in the air and gazed into the distance. Ji Chang was in front of a gigantic Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. His hands were at his back and he seemed to be talking to the tree. The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree seemed to be swallowing some strange lights. Cosmic strength kept rising to the skies.

The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree were famous because they contained the cosmic energies of the ten thousand things of creation, the energy of creation.

"That Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree must be so old. I wonder whether it's mature or not," muttered Lin Feng. Even though he was in the air, Ji Chang didn't look at him. He just looked calm and composed. He was talking to the tree.

At that moment, some sounds spread out in the air, but they weren't distinct. They sounded like Ji Chang's voice, however.

"I've heard that many Champions usually come here before becoming Celestial Emperors and after achieving enlightenment, they usually come back. Which tree can help me become a Champion here?" whispered Ji Chang, as if nobody were next to him. Lin Feng was surprised, Champions came to the Godly Wood Valley?

Besides, according to Ji Chang, Champions came to study the cosmic energies of the trees to become Celestial Emperors?

Suddenly, Ji Chang rose up into the air, his eyes bestial and sharp. He glanced at Lin Feng, and Lin Feng suddenly had the sensation he couldn't move anymore. His heart started pounding. Ji Chang was the strongest young man of Champion University among people who weren't Celestial Emperors. Dazzling lights surrounded him. He was really terrifying.

At that moment, Ji Chang's eyes were glowing blue, he was looking at some red lights. He jumped and landed on the ground, making it shake violently. Rumbling sounds spread through the air. Dragons appeared, blotting out the sky as they roared.

Suddenly, red wood appeared and rose into the skies as fast as lightning.

"Where are you going?" asked Ji Chang, waving his hands. Dragons appeared and surrounded the red lights.

Subtle sounds spread in the air, the cyan dragons he brought out almost broke apart. The entire tree suddenly rose up in the air. Ji Chang was startled, and jumped up, chasing after the red wood.

"Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree?" Lin Feng frowned. Was that red wood a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree? Why was it so small?

Lin Feng took out his boat and chased after the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. Ji Chang wanted to steal the red wood, were the rumors in the outside world not true? Ji Chang wanted to steal a tree, that place was protected by strong cultivators, nobody prevented Ji Chang from stealing a tree. Did it mean that the strong cultivators accepted letting him steal a tree, or did it mean that they had confidence in the strength of those trees?

Lin Feng chased the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree and realized that it was too fast. It had turned into a distant beam of red light already.

However, at that moment, more dazzling red lights appeared as thunder rumbled, and many people looked over there.

“Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree!” Lin Feng frowned and saw the red wood turn into a strange ancient tree. It was gigantic, and looked extremely old. It crashed onto the ground, its roots burrowing down to hold it in place. Vast cosmic energies rose to the skies.

—

At that moment, at the top of a hill, an old man suddenly opened his eyes and gazed into the distance, looking at the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree.

“Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, another powerful one,” murmured the old man. Outsiders thought that they were there to protect the trees, but actually, they were just guards. Even for the Godly Wood Clan, it wasn’t easy to obtain real Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees.

Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree referred to two things: the actual body of the tree, which was a child of the earth and sky, and the Heavenly Grace which could bless people. In that way, the cultivator could become the owner of a tree. Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees had souls, they were alive, they didn’t like being controlled, even by the members of the Godly Wood Valley. Only blessed people could obtain Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng landed in front of a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. It was gigantic, so big that it made him shiver. Even if Lin Feng were a high-level emperor and released ten sorts of cosmic energies, they wouldn’t have been as powerful as the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree’s cosmic energies. That tree was mature, a true king of trees.

At that moment, a terrifying pressure suddenly descended from

the sky. A gigantic silhouette appeared and said, “My clan, the Godly Wood Clan, protects the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees. Same old rules, people who manage to take away a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree King can keep them for a hundred years. A century from now, please bring them back for future generations to benefit from them.”

Everybody heard that voice and shook inside.

“The Godly Wood Clan are the protectors of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree in the Dark Night Region?” Lin Feng was also intrigued, they were so mysterious. Even in the Edict Palace, he hadn’t heard that. People from the outside world didn’t understand the Godly Wood Clan that well. Maybe that the old man of Tantai’s tribe knew that, which was why he had said Tantai could go with him. Lin Feng had thought too much, he had made Tantai leave.

People who managed to take a tree could keep it for a hundred years, and then they had to bring it back. People who could take a tree were already incredible strong, and the trees were astonishingly strong. However, a hundred years was a long time...

In the Dark Night Region, nobody comes to the Godly Wood Valley to steal trees, there’s something mysterious about that, Lin Feng thought. The Godly Wood Clan didn’t own the trees, they were just there to protect them. If someone was talented enough to take a tree away, then they could take them away and keep them for a hundred years, allowing every generation to benefit from them.

The silhouette in the sky disappeared. Ji Chang and the others looked at that Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. He shook his hands and dragons roared furiously. They surrounded the sturdy tree and the atmosphere shook as thunder rumbled. The earth kept shaking. However, the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree didn’t move.

The dragons are extremely powerful, but nothing is happening,

thought the crowd. They were amazed and their hearts were racing. Ji Chang had made the tree appear, but the tree refused to accept him as its owner.

“As the ancestor said, you can’t force a tree to come with you,” whispered Ji Chang. He then jumped forwards and sat down cross-legged at the foot of the tree. He looked at the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree and released several types of cosmic energies.

“Several sorts of cosmic energies,” Lin Feng mused, watching Ji Chang. The other was displaying his prowess, he wanted the tree to submit.

At Ji Chang’s back, a dazzling cyan dragon appeared, and several Cyan Dragon Totems appeared as well, while nine cyan dragons appeared and chanted. They were much more powerful than Ji Wuyou’s cyan dragons.

Suddenly, another illusion appeared behind Ji Chang... it was a dragon king! Ji Chang really wanted to become a Champion and he needed help, so he wanted the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree to acknowledge him.

Chapter 1806: Chosen by the Godly Wood

Red lights twinkled, terrifying cosmic energies rose to the skies and blotted out the sun. The crowd saw intertwining red vines among them. Those were probably the viscera of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. According to legends, the red Godly Wood contained an infinite amount of blood.

“The one the Godly Wood will choose must be like your ancestors, I want you to stay with me and someday I’ll become an emperor! I won’t disappoint you,” said Ji Chang, slowly rising up into the air. Nine dazzling dragons appeared, lights shone out and surrounded the tree.

As expected, when the tree heard Ji Chang, it became even more dazzling. It could understand Ji Chang!

At that moment, those watching saw a silhouette appear under the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. That person looked like an ancient great emperor. He was walking next to the tree, in symbiosis with it. Suddenly, the strong cultivator stretched his hands out and embers appeared, the flames glittered. He exhaled and the embers flew away from his hands and turned into dazzling lights which moved towards the distant mountain ranges.

The small embers rose to the skies before descending and turning into real fire mountains. They looked like true ancient mountains.

“Eternal strength,” whispered Ji Chang after he saw the illusion. Lin Feng and the others shivered too. What a terrifying strength. They all swallowed. That fire was eternal and had turned into a mountain!

“Ancient kings had their own path. I will have my own path too. I will become a powerful ancient cultivator someday. I won’t be a disgrace to the Godly Wood,” said Ji Chang confidently. He had the soul of a Champion. The illusion disappeared.

The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood has its own life, thought Lin Feng, amazed. Ji Chang was determined and strong. He really had the potential to become an incredible cultivator. He was never satisfied, always wanting to become stronger and stronger. Without the will to become stronger, a cultivator was destined for failure.

Thunder rumbled. The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree rose up, the red lights continued blotting out the sky. Suddenly, the tree turned into a bleeding Godly Wood. The crowd frowned. Had the tree chosen and acknowledged Ji Chang?!

The crowd was shivering with excitement. Ji Chang had managed to make the tree submit? Was he going to obtain the tree?

—

At the top of the mountain, the old man looked at that display and sighed. “It’s the third time in ten years that a tree chose someone. People are really strong these days. The young people of the Godly Wood Clan can’t compete with them. How many new kings will appear in the next hundred years?”

Many people were jealous of the Godly Wood Clan’s people because they had the privilege of guarding the forest. Many times, the situation had almost deteriorated. However, the strong and powerful clans didn’t attack them because anyone could go there and if the trees acknowledged people, then they could leave with them. Therefore, letting the Godly Wood Clan guard the forest wasn’t a problem.

—

The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood was floating above Ji Chang. The blood-red lights condensed and at that moment, blood appeared and a drop fell down onto Ji Chang’s head and penetrated into his body. Suddenly, Ji Chang’s cosmic energies became much more powerful. He looked eternal.

“You will follow me for a hundred years now,” Ji Chang said proudly. Suddenly, the red Godly Wood started whistling and penetrated into Ji Chang’s body.

It acknowledged him!, thought the crowd in astonishment. They began walking up to him and smiled, “Congratulations, Brother Ji Chang! The Godly Wood acknowledged you! The gods protect you. You will definitely become a king!”

“Brother Ji Chang, you’re amazing. Congratulations. You’ll soon become a champion.”

Ji Chang looked aloof and composed. It was a big step for him. Soon, he’d become a Champion. He suddenly remembered back then when Ying Cheng had become a Champion.

“Ying Cheng, wait for me. Ling Tian is gone, now I’m your new opponent,” said Ji Chang sharply, clenching his fist.

Qi filled the air. The old man reappeared in the sky.

“Ji Chang,” shouted the old man.

Ji Chang raised his head and said, “What is it, Master?”

“You can keep the tree for a hundred years, and in a hundred years you must bring it back. Besides, the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree only has a hundred drops of blood. A drop of blood is extremely valuable. When you bring the tree back, it will need a hundred years to recover. Remember it’s a priceless creature!” the old man said to Ji Chang.

Ji Chang nodded obediently and promised, “I’ll bring the tree back in a hundred years!”

“Very good,” nodded the old man. He wasn’t worried about that. People acknowledged by trees were incredible, and benefited a lot from the time they spent with trees. They were also very determined. They didn’t try to steal the trees forever.

“Since the tree already chose an owner, Shen Mu Qi, bring

everyone back,” said the old man. The crowd was stupefied.

“Master,” said Lin Feng suddenly. The old man looked at Lin Feng strangely and said, “What do you want?”

“Ji Chang has his own tree, but I haven’t tried yet. I hope you can give us more for time to try,” said Lin Feng to the old man. The old man was surprised.

“People who try to find a tree here are usually high-level emperors or higher, or at least, they must be at the top of the medium Huang Qi layer. However, even though you seem to be a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer, it seems that you’re hiding your cultivation level. You must have studied some strange and mysterious techniques. Show me your cultivation level.”

“Low-level emperor,” said Lin Feng. Then, he released his cosmic energies.

The old man frowned, “You can control ten sorts of cosmic energies? Impressive. Alright, I’ll give you a chance, but I have to warn you, people who come here to take Godly Wood are usually medium-level emperors at the least, and usually they are about to become high-level emperors. I don’t think you can succeed.”

“Thank you, Master. I understand. Having a chance is an honor,” replied Lin Feng politely. He perfectly understood that with his cultivation level it was going to be difficult. The Godly Wood Clan didn’t even allow their own young people to come to the forest.

“No problem. If you can take a tree away, then, you’ll be able to become much, much stronger. There are a dozen trees. If all the trees are taken away by cultivators, then the region will become extremely powerful,” said the old man indifferently before disappearing.

The crowd looked at Lin Feng strangely. He was a low-level emperor and he wanted to try and take a Heavenly Grace Godly Wood? It was impossible...

“Brother Ji Chang, let’s go back. We want to have drinks with you,” said Shen Mu Qi, smiling at Ji Chang. He didn’t feel like staying there. Ji Chang had already obtained a tree.

“With pleasure,” said Ji Chang, smiling back. He was very happy, he had obtained a Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. The others didn’t move, though. Just like Lin Feng, they also wanted to try and get a tree.

—

After they left, Lin Feng continued running through the forest using his thousands and thousands of clones.

At the same time, he released his godly awareness palace and sensed the powerful cosmic energies all about him.

Lin Feng ran at full speed and landed in front of a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, but that tree wasn’t an king, it seemed. However, Lin Feng didn’t look at the tree, he looked at the earth next to it.

Dong!

Lin Feng suddenly jumped, earthly lights rose up to the skies.

Lin Feng started running around like a madman, while the earth shook and cracked. A gigantic tree slowly emerged from the ground, but then it stopped, it didn’t leave. Its energies were extremely thick and dense. It was provoking Lin Feng, it seemed.

“That tree is quite amazing,” whispered Lin Feng. Then, world strength emerged... it was the world of his spirit!

The tree suddenly started shaking violently. The tree turned into a Godly Wood and suddenly left in a flash of red lights.

“Eh?” Lin Feng frowned, the tree had reacted strangely when it sensed Lin Feng’s energies, and even fled.

Chapter 1807: Nobody Knows What Awaits Them, But who can't Recognize a Monarch?

Lin Feng used his boat to chase the tree, light following lightning. At the same time, he kept releasing the strength of his spirit world. He wanted to imprison the tree inside. If he managed to catch up with the tree, he'd be able to capture it. Lin Feng didn't have time to be acknowledged by the tree, he wanted to kidnap it!

However, Lin Feng hadn't anticipated that the tree would be so sensitive and would escape.

The boat was amazingly fast. However, it couldn't catch up with the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. The tree was behaving strangely, moving in an enigmatic manner. Lin Feng was startled.

As Lin Feng was chasing the tree, he realized that the trees on the ground had gone still. There was no cosmic energy anywhere anymore.

"Eh?" At that moment, the old man sensed something strange, what was going on in the forest?

"The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree can't acknowledge him," muttered the old man, and then closed his eyes again. Lin Feng was a low-level emperor, he couldn't be acknowledged by a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. Such a thing had never happened in the Godly Wood Valley.

Lin Feng was annoyed and stared after the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. It didn't want to acknowledge him. Was there anything he could do to kidnap the tree? It seemed there was no hope. There were guards. Only incredible geniuses could be acknowledged by the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees and the guards probably paid attention to that, otherwise, why would there have been guards?

As Lin Feng was thinking, a mighty Qi rose up in the air, and the

ground shook violently. Lin Feng frowned.

“It’s there!” Lin Feng stopped and turned around. He looked at the place he had passed by. Another tree was breaking through the soil!

Lin Feng’s boat suddenly turned around and moved in that direction. The whole forest started shaking violently.

At that moment, more terrifying cosmic energies rose up in the air. Lin Feng felt them, and sensed some demonic cosmic energy. Of course he recognized that energy!

Boom!

The gigantic tree broke through the soil and appeared in front of Lin Feng. It was much more ancient and majestic than the tree Ji Chang had obtained, truly a Tree King. Its Qi was unruly, obstinate, and powerful. All the ten thousand things of creation submitted to such a creature.

“That’s...” Lin Feng was astonished. Suddenly, he jumped off his boat and walked up to the tree. The tree didn’t act in a hostile way. Quite to the contrary, it looked friendly, as if it wanted to make friends with Lin Feng!

At the top of the mountain, the old man suddenly opened his eyes again. Rumbling sounds spread in the air and above Lin Feng, the old man appeared once again and stared at the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree.

“How is that possible?” wondered the old man. Why had this Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree shown up? He could remember the last time it had acknowledged someone. Since that person had brought the tree back after a hundred years, it hadn’t acknowledged anyone else, apparently abandoning all cultivators and refusing to acknowledge people. Many people had tried, but they had all failed in the last thousand years.

That Tree King had abandoned kings and Champions. But now, it

had reappeared. It had voluntarily shown up in front of Lin Feng!

“Where does that young man come from? Surprisingly, the tree wants to get to know him. Does the tree really want to acknowledge him?” The old man was staring at Lin Feng. Ji Chang had obtained a tree, that was no surprise. However, at that moment, he was stunned. If Lin Feng had taken a tree, that would have been quite surprising already, but if he managed to take THIS tree, that would be absolutely astonishing, because he had seen so many people fail with this tree.

Lin Feng looked at the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree calmly. He didn't release a powerful Qi like Ji Chang, he just looked at the tree as if he were looking at an old friend.

“You want to come with me?” Lin Feng asked the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree calmly. The Tree turned into an illusion, and a silhouette appeared under it, his hands behind his back, looking arrogant and proud.

“It's him!” Lin Feng frowned, he had already seen that silhouette in the Netherworld Demon Emperor's small world, and of course, he had also heard many rumors about him. Now, he was right here in front of him. It was as if there was a connection between Lin Feng and this person.

This person was the Demon Emperor. In the small world, before he had broken through to the Huang Qi layer, he could kill emperors. A thousand years had passed since he used to be the strongest, the Demon Emperor!

Lin Feng admired the Demon Emperor. As a Zun cultivator, he could also kill emperors, just as incredible an achievement.

At that moment, the Demon Emperor suddenly stretched his hand out to the tree and the tree became even darker. An imprint appeared, as if it had existed on the tree forever.

Nobody knows what awaits them, but who can't recognize a

monarch?

The instant that sentence appeared on the tree, Lin Feng's heart started pounding. What was going on?

The world was big, the Continent of the Nine Clouds was gigantic. There were also trillions and trillions of people, but such things were rare!

Even the old man's heart was pounding. He had seen many, many geniuses in his life, and he had been a guardian for two thousand years. He had seen too many geniuses, and so many of the so-called Champions, but he had never seen such a thing.

Lin Feng slowly walked up to the tree, and the tree didn't escape. Lin Feng stretched out his hand and caressed the tree. He touched the words, they looked eternal.

"Nobody knows what awaits them, but who can't recognize a monarch?" He caressed the words as he repeated them, then moved back and looked at the tree again, smiling calmly. "Come with me, I won't disappoint you. In a hundred years, I'll be the king in the region."

"In a hundred years, I'll be the king in the region..." The old man shivered and stared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng and Ji Chang were different. Ji Chang had released a grandiose display. He was already walking on the path of a Champion. Lin Feng's Qi was different, he was smiling and looked friendly and gentle, but he was saying that he'd become a Champion within a hundred years.

The only common point they had was their self-confidence. They were sure they would become peerless cultivators someday.

The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree kept shaking. Terrifying rumbling sounds spread in the air, the gigantic tree started shining as it turned into a black stick, a rare wooden stick.

Nobody managed to control that tree in a thousand years, and

now it's really going to acknowledge that young man?, thought the old man. His heart was pounding. The tree was above Lin Feng's head. A black drop fell from the tree onto Lin Feng and penetrated into his body, it looked like blood, before the tree flew into Lin Feng's body.

"It acknowledged him," the old man frowned. He was astonished. The tree hadn't acknowledged anyone for a thousand years, and now it acknowledged this young man.

Lin Feng smiled calmly. He had succeeded, and obtained a Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. Now, he would be able to cure Emperor Wu Tian Jian's injury and on top of that, the tree would be very beneficial to him.

"Young man," said a voice at that moment.

Lin Feng raised his head and smiled at the old man, "Master, thank you very much."

"You only relied on yourself, I didn't do anything," smiled the old man calmly, "Tell me your name and where you come from."

"My name is Lin Feng and I'm a student at Champion University in the Holy City," said Lin Feng politely.

"Your clan?" asked the old man again.

"I come from a small world. I didn't know about the great world before. And regarding my clan..." Lin Feng just smiled. He didn't need to say much, the old man already understood. He didn't come from a strong clan.

"A small world, you didn't even know about the great world," whispered the old man. Then, he smiled and said, "Go and remember to come back in a hundred years."

"Thank you, Master," said Lin Feng, bowing to the old man before departing.

The old man stared at Lin Feng and smiled, "Champion

University, Lin Feng, I'll remember your promise. In a hundred years, you'll be a king!"

Chapter 1808: Getting Ready To Go Back

In the banquet at the palace, people were drinking and laughing. Ji Chang was at the center of attention.

“Brother Ji Chang, a tree acknowledged you. You’ll soon become a Champion. When you become a Champion, I’ll come and see you. You’re amazing,” flattering Shen Mu Qi, raising his glass and smiling at Ji Chang.

“I’d be very happy if you did,” replied Ji Chang, smiling politely.

“I’ll come too! I wish you much success, Brother Ji Chang,” said a woman laughing and raising her glass. The crowd was having fun.

At that moment, the crowd was overflowing with amazement. Ji Chang was a proud student at Champion University in the Holy City. He had obtained Heavenly Grace Godly Wood, and would definitely become much stronger within a short time.

“Someone is coming!” A few silhouettes had appeared. They looked dispirited.

Shen Mu Yun smiled, “Brothers, did you obtain anything?”

“I didn’t. None of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees acknowledged me. I need to become stronger and then I’ll come back and try again,” said one of them indifferently.

Shen Mu Qi nodded and said, “Please come back then. I’ll lead the way. I’m sure a tree will acknowledge you sooner or later.”

“Thank you very much, Brother Shen Mu,” said the few cultivators nodding.

Shen Mu Yun asked, “Has that guy come out?”

“Oh, we saw him chase a tree with a boat, We don’t know where he is now,” replied one of them. The crowd smiled indifferently at the news, their focus on other things.

“He overestimated himself,” whispered some people

indifferently. They didn't despise weak cultivators, but Lin Feng had overestimated himself. He had thought a Heavenly Grace Godly Tree would acknowledge him even though he only had the strength of a low-level emperor. Such a thing had never happened.

Chang Lin looked embarrassed and whispered, "Poor Lin Feng, he thought he could obtain a Heavenly Grace Godly Tree, he was dreaming."

He shook his head as the people continued having fun and drinking.

Someone else soon arrived. People raised their heads and looked at them, it was Lin Feng. They all looked amused that he had finally come back.

When Lin Feng saw that everyone was staring at him, he understood. Many people wanted to make fun of him, but he didn't feel like explaining anything. He immediately went to Chang Lin and smiled, "Brother Chang Lin, I have things to do. I'm off."

"Are you leaving?" asked Chang Lin surprised. Lin Feng had brought so many good things to trade and now he wanted to leave. He understood that Lin Feng felt awkward though, so he could understand why he wanted to leave.

"Brother Lin Feng, we'll meet again," said Chang Lin nodding and smiling.

Lin Feng looked at the crowd and said, "Everybody, I'm off."

Lin Feng then left as quickly as he could. He had already obtained a tree, so he had nothing to do there anymore.

The crowd watched him go strangely. Of course, Lin Feng was just a guest there, they would quickly forget him.

—

Lin Feng sat in his boat as he left the Godly Wood Valley. Nobody prevented him from leaving. He back out to the Great Shiny

Mountain as his clone disappeared. It had been a great trip. Thanks to the nice old man who had allowed him to stay a little longer, he had obtained a tree!

Lin Feng didn't leave the Great Shiny Mountain immediately however. He was looking for a hidden cave...

—

An ancient pitch-black tree appeared indistinctly. Several kinds of cosmic energies condensed. The whole cave was filled with cosmic energies.

However, Lin Feng was annoyed. The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree was a child of the earth and sky. Even though the Demon Emperor used to control that tree, its cosmic energies were still the cosmic energies of the earth and sky, and Lin Feng's cosmic energies were different.

In the real world, Lin Feng had to rely on his own cosmic energies. He could use cosmic energies in the outside world to practice cultivation, but he couldn't use them to fight. Understanding cosmic energies and using them were different things.

“As long as it has all sorts of cosmic energies, it's beneficial for me. It is connected to all things.”

In the world of his spirit, Lin Feng made the tree appear, and suddenly powerful cosmic energies rose to the skies. The cosmic energies of the ten thousand things of creations of the real world penetrated into his own world. Lin Feng was seated cross-legged at the foot of the tree and studying its cosmic energies.

—

Two months later, terrifying cosmic energies rose to the skies from the cave, they were very thick and overflowing. If there had been people near enough to see, they would have noticed him from quite far away, and have easily sensed the energies.

Lin Feng came out of the cave. His boat appeared again, and he jumped into it. He was ready to leave the Great Shiny Mountain.

—

In the Holy City, in Champion University...

During those few months, Tiantai continued becoming stronger. Jing Shou and Yun Qing Yan had continued recruiting people. At the same time, Hou Qing Lin took people out to travel and practice cultivation. Tiantai didn't mind whether their new members were old or new students in Champion University, but they had to adhere to Tiantai's philosophy. There couldn't be rivalries between the members, or they ran the risk of being expelled. Of course, becoming a core member of Tiantai was extremely difficult. They had to take an exam.

Many strong cultivators noticed that Tiantai was rising. Lin Feng had told the Moon Group that within three years, he'd challenge them. Three years was so short, even very talented low-level emperors couldn't become medium-level emperors within three years, but Tiantai had said they'd challenge the Moon Group!

Ji Chang's Club's Star Group kept declining. Ji Wuyou and Yu Wen Jing were practicing cultivation really hard, and rarely showed up. Ji Wuyou couldn't accept his defeat, and was going insane. He wanted to become extremely strong and fight against Lin Feng again. The next time he fought against Lin Feng, they might be on the medium ranking list.

Everybody knew that Lin Feng and Ji Wuyou now had the strength of the medium ranking list, but they just hadn't thought about going up against those people.

—

Two people appeared in Champion University and headed straight to Tiantai.

"That's Lin Feng, but who's that?" asked Yun Qing Yan when she

saw a young man walking next to Lin Feng. He looked extremely strong and noble. That person couldn't be from Champion University, otherwise, she would have recognized him.

“Jun Mo Xi, from King of Hell Palace,” introduced Lin Feng.

Yun Qing Yan was astonished, her beautiful eyes twinkled as she smiled at Jun Mo Xi, “You're Jun Mo Xi the Prince of Hell!”

“That's me!” Jun Mo Xi smiled back and nodded at Yun Qing Yan. He appeared quite friendly and easy-going.

“This is Yun Qing Yan,” Lin Feng said to Jun Mo Xi. At that moment, many people came out.

“Jun Mo Xi, what are you doing here?” asked Huang Fu Long, smiling at Jun Mo Xi. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi also came out, they were surprised Jun Mo Xi had come.

“I asked Jun Mo Xi to come. I need to talk to you all,” said Lin Feng to Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi. “Brothers, I need to go back.”

“Go back,” Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi's eyes lit up. However, they looked pensive. Tiantai wasn't weak, they would have no problem in the small world, but the nine great celestial castles' leaders were high-level emperors. They couldn't possibly defeat them.

“Brothers, the only group which can pose a threat to us is Qing Di Mountain,” said Lin Feng, “We can consider the journey as a cultivation challenge. Also, our world should be at peace.”

“Alright, let's go back,” said Hou Qing Lin. Besides, they wanted to find their teachers. Lin Feng had told them their friends were in Yao Ye Island. They could finally go and see them.

“I agree, too,” said Tian Chi with a nod.

Lin Feng smiled, “Since you agree, let's choose some people from Tiantai to come with us. The others can stay with Qing Yan and Jing Shou.”

Chapter 1809: Memories

Lin Feng called some members of Tiantai over very quickly. Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Jun Mo Xi, and he were sure to go back. Huang Fu Long wasn't interested in going back to the small world, he preferred staying in the great world and practicing cultivation with the other members of Tiantai.

Qing Feng and Wu wanted to travel with Lin Feng and the others. Suan wanted to stay there. Tantai and Qin Wu also wanted to follow Lin Feng.

Yun Qing Yan wanted to follow Lin Feng, but he refused because she had to stay there to manage Tiantai. Besides, she was a medium-level emperor and had a particular social status, so she could solve many problems. Xi Men Xiao, Qiu Ming, and Yi Ji could help her. Jing Shou could take people away to practice cultivation. At the same time, he could choose suitable people and teach them things. After all, Champion University's students weren't ordinary, and not all of them wanted to become assassins, they were all free to choose their own path.

So eight people – Lin Feng, Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Jun Mo Xi, Qing Feng, Wu, Tantai and Qin Wu – got ready to travel.

Lin Feng and the others left quickly, not wanting to waste time. After all, three years from now they had to fight against the Moon Group. That wasn't something insignificant. They had to become really, really strong, and they also had to remain good fighters.

The Moon Group didn't cause any trouble, and gave them time. The members of the Moon Group wouldn't waste their time on silly things, either.

After leaving Champion University, the group of people sat in Lin Feng's boat. However, there were nine silhouette in the boat, as Lin Feng had released a clone too.

Lin Feng's clone was driving the boat and Lin Feng's real body was sleeping. He was in his spirit world, not wasting time. The others didn't waste time either, their eyes closed in meditation. Sometimes, they opened their eyes when they were tired, so they could enjoy the landscapes.

For the people of Gold Fire City, the Holy City was another world, with different people and different things. They were proud of their Gold Fire Tower.

The Gold Fire City was a town for weapon crafters. There were weapon-making clans everywhere, and people admired them, especially people who were from the northern part of the city. The Mu Clan had already surpassed the Yan Clan and had become the strongest weapon manufacturing clan. There were many talented young people there, including Mu Lin Xue.

Mu Lin Xue had already broken through to the Huang Qi layer and become a core disciple at the Gold Fire Tower. Everybody admired her. Back then, the teachers had recruited disciples, and the old man who had recruited her as a disciple was a Celestial Emperor. Even the leader of the Gold Fire Tower addressed him respectfully. It seemed that the old man came from Vast Celestial Ancient City.

Such cultivators were considered extremely strong in the Gold Fire City. When people heard that such a cultivator had recruited her as a disciple, they were astounded. Even her clan benefitted from such things. Mu Lin Xue and Muyi had particular positions in their clan now. Things had changed a lot for them!

Mu Qing Ying was living a happy life. She had gotten married to a young man from the Si Ma Clan, a clan from the eastern part of the city. Si Ma Nan initially wanted to marry Mu Lin Xue, but she had refused. Then Mu Qing Ying had expressed her interest, so now they were married, and they made weapons together.

At that moment, Si Ma Nan and Mu Qing Ying were outside of the Gold Fire Tower, where they were in charge of the competition. The competition was different from when Lin Feng was there. Yan Feng and others had competed to manage the competition, but the teachers had chosen Si Ma Nan.

“Qing Ying, the competition is fun. Look, two people have already made an imperial weapon. They’re already Level One Professors, that’s rare,” said Si Ma Nan, pointing out a group and smiling.

“Indeed, not bad. But they’re much weaker than you back then,” said Mu Qing Ying with a smile. She could remember the competition back then, she could remember how arrogant she used to be. When she thought of that, she had the impression she had been ridiculous. She also remembered that bastard, the perverted guy with whom she had collaborated. What a humiliation!

But now she had changed, and she also understood that back then Lin Feng didn’t have time to explain anything to her. He had never needed to prove anything to her.

Si Ma Nan remembered that competition too. He took a deep breath and said, “Back then, Yan Feng was also talented. His imperial weapons were great. He also broke through to the Huang Qi layer shortly afterwards. Unfortunately, he had to face Lin Feng, otherwise, Yan Feng would have been the champion. Lin Feng could kill emperors with the strength of the Zun Qi layer. And now, I, Hen Chang Tian and Ge Qing Feng all became much stronger. I wonder how strong Lin Feng has become.”

“Let’s hope he didn’t become stronger than you,” said Mu Qing Ying, laughing. That guy was cruel, but in Gold Fire City, even four-five year old children knew about Lin Feng’s story.

Mu Qing Ying didn’t know that Lin Feng was in the crowd. He could see Qing Ying and Si Ma Nan. Surprisingly, they had gotten married. Lin Feng was surprised, but happy for them. Even though

Mu Qing Ying had changed, she still had a bad temper.

“That weapon crafter is strange. Apart from controlling a weapon manufacturing technique, he can also understand deployment spells. How complex,” Tantai said to Lin Feng, “By the way, Lin Feng, your deployment spells are incredible, can you make weapons, too?”

“Back then, I participated in this very competition. I ranked first, I was the champion,” replied Lin Feng with a laugh.

Tantai’s eyes twinkled, he said cheerfully, “Awesome, you’ll help me learn about weapons then!”

“With your physical strength, you don’t need imperial weapons, and concerning great imperial weapons, if you want some, you need to go and steal them from rich kids,” shot back Lin Feng jokingly.

“Lin Feng, you said you wanted to go and see your friend, is she in Gold Fire Tower?” Qin Wu asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded, “Indeed, she’s here. It’s good that we had to cross Gold Fire City, so I can keep my promise.”

“Qing Ying, the competition is over,” Si Ma Nan said, standing up.

At the same time, Mu Qing Ying heard the name “Lin Feng”.

She glanced around, looking at the crowd, and started shaking.

It was him!

“Lin Feng!”

Si Ma Nan chose three people, they had the possibility to enter the Gold Fire Tower. The crowd burst into applause. However, it was as if Mu Qing Ying hadn’t heard anything at all.

She was staring as she shouted, “Lin Feng!”

“Lin Feng?” Si Ma Nan frowned and slowly turned around,

immediately seeing Lin Feng.

The crowd was surprised when they saw Mu Qing Ying and Si Ma Nan's reactions. But they had also heard of Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, they're shouting 'Lin Feng'?" Some people remembered Lin Feng's name and frowned. Si Ma Nan and Mu Qing Ying watched Lin Feng as eight young people walked up to them.

Those eight people looked incredible, so strong! If they had seen only one person who was that strong, that would have been different, but eight of them, and all together, that was incredible!

"Long time no see," Lin Feng greeted them with a smile. The crowd frowned. Was that Lin Feng? The one who had amazed all of Gold Fire City?

"Long time no see," replied Si Ma Nan, also smiling.

Mu Qing Ying was still rather astonished. She said, "Lin Feng, you're still alive!..."

"Eh..," Lin Feng smiled wryly.

Outside of the tower, many people heard Lin Feng's name and immediately came over to investigate.

"Since you're still alive, you should have come back before! Lin Xue misses you so much, she keeps saying she wants to leave to find you," said Mu Qing Ying. People shivered. This was the real Lin Feng, the legendary Lin Feng!

"Haha, Lin Feng, no wonder that you wanted to come to the Gold Fire Tower," said Tantai, as if he suddenly understood something, and then burst into laughter as Lin Feng blushed. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi looked at Lin Feng and rolled their eyes... he was such a player!

"Is that so?" Mu Qing Feng seemed to understand that Lin Feng was a player and had many women. Mu Qing Feng looked at Qing

Feng, she looked extraordinarily strong and was far more beautiful than herself. Mu Qing Ying felt a bit jealous. Qing Feng was even better looking and stronger than Lin Xue!

After a short while, another group of people came out of the Tower. Some people's hearts started pounding; the teacher in golden purple clothes, teachers in golden red clothes, and teachers in purple clothes, that was stupefying! And a beautiful woman was there, too!

Mu Lin Xue was there! And among them, there was also Duan Mu, the Celestial Emperor!

“Lin Feng, my boy, you finally came back to see us!” exclaimed Duan Mu, smiling at Lin Feng. The crowd was astonished, a Celestial Emperor was calling Lin Feng “my boy”?! It meant that they knew each other, a Celestial Emperor had come out personally to greet Lin Feng!!

Chapter 1810: Can I Come With You?

“Master Duan Mu!” Lin Feng smiled, “Master Duan Mu, you came back to the Gold Fire Tower!”

“At my cultivation level, you want to go back to simplicity. You want to enjoy life, you want to enjoy the simple pleasures of life. If the conditions are not appropriate to become a Saint Emperor, then it’s too hard. It doesn’t matter anymore, anyway,” Duan Mu smiled calmly.

Lin Feng was surprised, but then thought it over. Indeed, people like Duan Mu had seen enough in life. He was a Celestial Emperor, he was extremely strong. He wanted to enjoy the simple things in life.

The crowd was dumbstruck. Among them, only a few people knew that Lin Feng and Duan Mu knew each other. Even Mu Lin Xue didn’t know this. Someone had just gone to find them to tell them that Lin Feng was back, so the teachers had gone to find her. However, her heart was pounding. She had millions of thoughts suddenly.

Even though she was quite talented, someone like Si Ma Nan wasn’t weaker than her, so the fact that Duan Mu had recruited her as a disciple was incredible, she was extremely lucky. She didn’t understand before, but now she understood why.

It had to be because of Lin Feng, because he knew Duan Mu. Only Lin Feng could have asked him to take care of her. Without Lin Feng, he would have never recruited her.

Mu Lin Xue looked at Lin Feng with love in her eyes and said, “Lin Feng, a long time has passed. You didn’t even send me a message.”

“I didn’t want to disturb you while you were practicing cultivation,” Lin Feng smiled back. Years had passed, Mu Lin Xue

had long broken through to the Huang Qi layer. She looked more mature and even more beautiful.

“Hehe,” Tantai laughed. Lin Feng looked at him angrily. Was he stupid or what? How could he laugh?

“Jun Mo Xi the Prince of Hell, Princess Qing Feng from the Animal World, Wu the sun supernatural bird, how incredible. Lin Feng, you don’t even introduce me to your friends?” said Duan Mu as he glanced at Lin Feng’s friends. When the members of the Gold Fire Tower heard Duan Mu, they were astonished. These people with Lin Feng... they were astonishingly strong. The Prince of Hell, the Princess of the Animal World, the sun supernatural bird, those people were terrifying!

Lin Feng had become much stronger if he was with such incredible cultivators!

“Master Duan Mu, you’re too kind,” said Jun Mo Xi, bowing before Duan Mu. After all, he was an incredible cultivator, they had to respect him!

“Master Duan Mu, Jun Mo Xi, Qing Feng, and Wu know one another. That’s Hou Qing Lin and that’s Tian Chi, and there, Tantai and Qin Wu. They are all my friends and students at Champion University,” said Lin Feng.

Duan Mu’s eyes twinkled. “You really joined Champion University?”

“Yes, after leaving the Vast Celestial Ancient City, I went to the Holy City and I joined Champion University. It’s been a while,” Lin Feng sighed.

Duan Mu nodded, “Alright, you didn’t disappoint me. You’re a real genius. I hope you can become a Champion.”

“When I become a Champion, I hope you’ll come to the ceremony!” smiled Lin Feng.

Duan Mu’s eyes glittered sharply. He nodded and said, “Alright,

no matter where I am, in the future, I'll try to keep current with the news of the Holy City. If you become a Champion, I'll come!"

The crowd was astonished by the conversation. Even though they didn't understand everything Duan Mu and Lin Feng were talking about, they could see that it concerned serious matters that they couldn't imagine. Duan Mu obviously thought highly of Lin Feng. Maybe Lin Feng would become a terrifying cultivator some day?

It seems that the champion of the competition back then became a strong cultivator, thought many people. Mu Qing Ying's eyes were twinkling as she watched Lin Feng. He only had the strength of the Zun Qi layer, but Duan Mu was talking to him that way. He was probably hiding his real cultivation level!

"Everybody, let's go to the Gold Fire Tower!" Duan Mu declared, smiling at Lin Feng and the others. Everybody walked into the tower at his words.

Many people were agitated. Those terrifying geniuses were here, Duan Mu was welcoming them himself, and there were students from Champion University. What was going on?

—

Lin Feng and the others followed Duan Mu into the tower and they all headed to a courtyard.

"Lin Feng, do you need to do anything here?" Duan Mu asked Lin Feng. Lin Feng wouldn't have needed to come with so many people if he had just come to visit.

"I do," said Lin Feng nodding, "I need to solve some issues in the nine great celestial castles. We're going back this time."

"Lin Feng, I need to warn you of something," said the teacher in golden purple clothes. He was the Level Nine Professor who had judged their competition before.

"Master, is there something wrong?" asked Lin Feng.

“Last time we went to Vast Celestial Ancient City, a cultivator from the Everlasting Palace chased us and then came to the tower. He didn’t attack us directly, but after that, I investigated a little and I found out that Sword Mountain had informed the Everlasting Palace of your whereabouts. They told them where you were,” said the professor, “Because you have a friend in Sword Mountain, I was extremely worried, I hoped you wouldn’t go there. Don’t go there!”

Sword Mountain! Lin Feng’s eyes shone. Sword Mountain wanted to kill him?

Sword Mountain weren’t his enemies, the only two people who connected him to Sword Mountain were Ruo Xie and Emperor Wu Tian Jian.

Ruo Xie was a disciple of Sword Mountain, so he couldn’t have tried to hurt him, so what about Emperor Wu Tian Jian?

Emperor Tie Jian had fought against Emperor Wu Tian Jian many years before. Lin Feng didn’t know why, did Emperor Tie Jian hate Emperor Wu Tian Jian that much? Lin Feng couldn’t believe it. But that was the only possibility. After all, when he went to Sword Mountain, nothing wrong had happened.

“And what about my good friend Ruo Xie?” Lin Feng asked of the professor.

“I haven’t heard of him. When you left, I heard that he had gone traveling to choose his own path,” replied the professor earnestly.

“Alright, good,” said Lin Feng frowning.

Duan Mu looked at him, “Lin Feng, do you want to go to Sword Mountain? I can take you there.”

“Lin Feng, Sword Mountain has many cultivators in Gold Fire City. They’ll soon know you’re here. Let him go with you,” said Mu Lin Xue, she was very worried. After all, Sword Mountain had great emperors! Lin Feng couldn’t do anything against them.

“No need. We’re not enemies,” said Lin Feng shaking his head, “Even if Emperor Tie Jian shows up, I’ll tell him my social status. If a great emperor dares fight against me, Sword Mountain will be wiped off the map,” said Lin Feng. Indeed, they weren’t enemies. And Emperor Wu Tian Jian and he weren’t that close, either. They just got along quite well. Qing Feng and Wu had memories with their clan. If Emperor Tie Jian dared attack, the Animal Clan would destroy Sword Mountain.

“Alright, not bad. I’ll transmit some memories to you. If you are in danger, let me know,” Duan Mu said, opening his third eye, which emitted dazzling lights. He put the lights in a talisman and gave the talisman to Lin Feng. “If you have a problem, break the talisman and I’ll come.”

“Thank you very much, Master,” bowed Lin Feng. Duan Mu was extremely generous. If Qing Di Mountain attacked him, he could ask a celestial emperor for help!

—

The group of them spent more time with the elders, and then it was time to leave. “Duan Mu, thank you again for today. I’ll come back to the Gold Fire Tower to see you again. I’m off!”

“Are you leaving?” Duan Mu asked. “Why are you in such a hurry?”

“Master Duan Mu, I can’t waste time. In Champion University, the competition is extremely high,” said Lin Feng.

Duan Mu nodded, “Champion University’s geniuses are determined. No problem, be off with you!”

“Teacher!” said Mu Lin Xue, standing up right then.

“What? You want to abandon your teacher and leave?” said Duan Mu smiling, “I transmitted some techniques to you, and you need to choose your own path now. If you need anything, come and find me.”

“Thank you very much, Teacher!” said Mu Lin Xue. She sounded like a little girl and was smiling like one. Then, Mu Qing Ying looked at Mu Lin Xue and said, “Sister Lin Xue, are you...”

“I’m going to travel!,” smiled Mu Lin Xue. She looked at Lin Feng and said, “I want to go and travel with you. You can’t refuse, right?”

When Lin Feng heard Mu Lin Xue, he smiled wryly, but Duan Mu had nodded his assent. Lin Feng didn’t know how to refuse!

“Alright, you can temporarily stay with us. We’ll come back to Gold Fire City on the way back anyway,” Lin Feng agreed. He also wanted to bring Mu Lin Xue back to her clan for a visit...

Chapter 1811: On Yao Ye Island

At the Yao Ye Islands, bestial Qi was floating above the millions of islands. At that moment, on one of them, an explosive Qi rolled out, dust floated in the air, stones exploded, and the ground crackled.

Two gigantic apes were fighting. They both looked like gigantic towers. Great wooden sticks filled the sky, bearing terrible and explosive power.

At that moment, a pitch-black demon hand came slamming down, explosive thunder erupting as it did. The fist shadow crushed the rising energies, which returned to the void.

“Haha, Yuan Fei, you lost again!” said the Great Earth Demon Ape, laughing loudly. Yuan Fei looked exhausted.

“Damn it. Come again!” said Yuan Fei, holding his wooden stick. He refused to lose!

“Forget about it. Yuan Fei, you already progressed a lot!” said the gigantic ape. The Great Ape Emperor was there, too, all three apes in company with one another.

“Hehe, I still have to destroy the Celestial Qi Castle, I’m still not strong enough!” said Yuan Fei. Back then, the Celestial Qi Castle had taken control of him, he had to get his revenge.

“Yes, your father is still in the Mountain of Flowers and Fruit in the small world. I wonder how he’s doing,” mused the Great Ape Emperor. His gigantic eyes were twinkling. The entrance to the small world had probably been sealed already. They couldn’t go back!

“We’ve all made great progress, Ban Ruo, Li Hen, Xing Zhan are all emperors. Someday, we’ll go back and destroy the Celestial Qi Castle,” said Yuan Fei loudly. His eyes were shining.

“Yuan Fei!” someone called out at that moment. A few people

had arrived. Yuan Fei raised his head and saw Ban Ruo and the others. He smiled and said, “I was just talking about you guys, and now you’re here. Are you getting ready to go and travel a bit?”

“Indeed. We’ve been back for a while already. We should go travel and practice now,” said Xing Zhan. He didn’t like staying in the same place all the time.

“Alright! What about you, grandpa?” asked Yuan Fei to the Great Ape Emperor.

“You can go. I’m not coming,” said the Great Ape Emperor, shaking his head. He was old. He couldn’t keep up with the young people anymore.

“Alright, we’re going!” smiled Yuan Fei. He didn’t want to waste time. He immediately rose up into the air. However, he saw people in the distance, coming towards them quickly.

What’s that? They’re so fast!, thought Yuan Fei and the others, gazing into the distance. They frowned and stopped moving. The light beam was getting closer, and resolved itself into an ancient boat carrying many young people.

Suddenly, Yuan Fei’s eyes went wide, staring at the boat.

“Lin Feng!”

“And Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, and Jun Mo Xi!”

Ban Ruo and the others recognized the people who were coming, they could see them now. Their hearts accelerated as the boat finally stopped in front of them.

“Brothers, Lin Feng!” Ban Ruo and the others greeted their friends. They were back!

“Ban Ruo, Li Hen, Xing Zhan.” Hou Qing Lin walked over to them and they all bumped fists hard. Tian Chi followed, smiling. So many years had passed, and finally, they were together again.

“Brother!” They looked at Hou Qing Lin, who looked even more

amazing than before.

Lin Feng grinned widely. “Six of us are reunited, and with Ruo Xie, we’re seven! Four people are still missing, as well as our teachers.”

“Tiantai’s disciples will definitely gather again!” proclaimed Tian Chi loudly.

“Lin Feng, you’re good, you found Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi!” Ban Ruo exclaimed to Lin Feng. Back then, he had also saved them from the Celestial Qi Castle.

“We bumped into each other in the Holy City. Now we came back to see you. We want to do what our teachers wanted us to do. We also recreated Tiantai in the Holy City,” Lin Feng beamed.

“Lin Feng is right. We recreated Tiantai in the Holy City. This time, we came back because we want to go to Ba Huang. Things should change in the nine great celestial castles,” Hou Qing Lin said grimly. The nine great celestial castles controlled their small world, and considered the strong cultivators of the small world as prey, they had to change that.

Ban Ruo frowned, “Brother, even though we all became stronger, I don’t think we’re ready for the nine great celestial castles. They all have high-level emperors. Even medium-level emperors are difficult to defeat. If we go back...”

Ban Ruo stopped talking when he thought about that. Unless the members of Yao Ye Island helped them, they couldn’t return to the nine great celestial castles.

“Don’t worry. We have many good things,” smiled Hou Qing Lin dangerously. Ban Ruo and the others nodded. Since Hou Qing Lin said that, it meant they knew what they were doing. They all couldn’t wait for the day when they’d destroy the Celestial Qi Castle.

“Let’s go. Let’s go and see Master Shen Yu, and then let’s head to

the nine great celestial castles,” proposed Lin Feng. They were at Yao Ye Island, they had to go and greet the elders, doing otherwise would be impolite.

“Yes, Hu Yue missed you!” said Xing Zhan. Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. How was Hu Yue doing?

“Demon Ape, come with us,” Lin Feng said to the Great Earth Demon Ape. The ape descended from the sky and landed in front of Lin Feng. His Qi was terrifying and oppressive.

“What? You came back, and you don’t want to fight against me?” asked the demon ape, smiling at Lin Feng. Back then, Lin Feng used to go and fight against him all the time to practice.

“You kept humiliating me back then, but you can’t anymore!” grinned Lin Feng cheerfully.

The demon ape said, “You show off! Come here and fight!”

Then, the Great Earth Demon Ape stepped back and sent Lin Feng a challenging look.

Lin Feng smiled indifferently before charging ahead with his wind speed. He was much faster than before!

The Great Earth Demon Ape also jumped forwards and shouted furiously, the earth and the sky shook. The ape raised his hand, which blotted out the sun and came slamming down.

Lin Feng raised his fist, too. He didn’t dodge the attack. Their fists collided violently. A terrifying strength rocked everyone. The Great Earth Demon Ape had the sensation that his forearm was broken. He was driven backwards, staring at Lin Feng as he was forced away.

“What do you think?” asked Lin Feng. He was standing there motionless, grinning at the big ape. His friends were astonished. Lin Feng and the Great Earth Demon Ape had a similar physical strength? He even won against the ape?

“Little boy, you progress way too fast,” sighed the Great Earth Demon Ape, scratching his furry head. He looked annoyed, “I need to practice more.”

He came down to join them, nevertheless.

Lin Feng watched him and laughed. Then, the group of friends headed off to meet the elders of Yao Ye Island.

After a short time, they landed on an island thick with bestial Qi. A silhouette in red appeared, jumping over to Lin Feng and hugging him.

“Lin Feng, little brother, you came back to see your sister,” said Hu Yue cutely. Lin Feng was speechless. She hadn’t changed at all.

“Sister Hu Yue, so many of my friends are here, I can’t spend too much time with you, I’m sorry!” replied Lin Feng.

Hu Yue looked at them approvingly and smiled, “Good little boy. Your friends are really strong, and there are two beautiful girls too. No wonder you forgot about me.”

“How could I?” said Lin Feng, smiling wryly. He glanced at Shen Yu, begging for some help here.

Emperor Shen Yu glanced at Hu Yue and sighed, “You can leave him alone now.”

“Mind your own business!” sniffed Hu Yue, but she still let Lin Feng go.

“Is everyone alright?” Lin Feng asked Shen Yu.

Shen Yu nodded, sharp lights glittered in his eyes as he asked, “Lin Feng, you and so many of your friends came here, is there a specific reason?”

“Yes, we want to go back to Qing Di Mountain. We need to sort out some issues...” Lin Feng nodded.

“Do you need Yao Ye Island’s help? After all, Qing Di Mountain is a great imperial group.” Emperor Shen Yu was worried for them.

“Uncle Shen Yu, the great emperor of Qing Di Mountain wouldn’t dare show up. And we can deal with the others,” replied Lin Feng, smiling confidently. “Shen Yu, Hu Yue and the others looked impressed.

Hu Yue smiled, “I want to come with you and have some fun.”

“Eh...” Lin Feng looked at her, what did she want to do?

“Don’t worry. I won’t disturb you!” said Hu Yue.

Lin Feng could only smile wryly and nod, “Alright!...”

“Hehe, let’s go. I’ll take you to your little girlfriend, she missed you!” said Hu Yue, hugging Lin Feng again before they left. Everybody looked at her strangely...

Chapter 1812: Apparition Of A Palace

The little girlfriend Hu Yue was talking about was Mu Yun. Mu Yun was very happy to see Lin Feng, and smiled at him gently. She was so happy to see him that she didn't know what to say, she just forgot to talk.

"You're so beautiful!" said Lin Feng. He didn't know what to say, so he just said that and smiled. Mu Yun shivered and blushed deeply.

"How's your journey going?" asked Mu Yun, changing the topic quickly. She still looked every bit as beautiful and gentle as before.

"It's going alright. And you, aren't you bored here?" Lin Feng asked her.

Mu Yun shook her head and said calmly, "I'm not bored. I study a lot, I learned how to make many new sorts of herbal potions and drugs. Sometimes when I have time, Sister Hu Yue helps me practice cultivation. I'm very happy here. I don't miss the tribe at all."

"I'm going back there. If you want to go to the tribe, you can come with me." Lin Feng knew that Mu Yun was a simple person, and didn't want to become an extremely strong cultivator, as she didn't like competition. She used to be a Priestess, and just like before, she just wanted to help people.

"Go back?" Mu Yun looked stupefied, "Can we go back?"

"Yes, nobody will dare oppress the tribes in the desert anymore. We're going to crush the nine great celestial castles!" promised Lin Feng, smiling and nodding at her.

Mu Yun looked at her thatched hut as an old man came out and told her, "Yun, if you want to go back, you can. You can come back and stay with me sometimes."

"Teacher!" said Mu Yun.

Hu Yue flitted over next to her, smiled and said, “Sister Yun, don’t worry, you can go back. You must be bored being all alone in Yao Ye Island. Go with Lin Feng, he’ll take care of you.”

Mu Yun glanced at Lin Feng and shook her head, “I’m going back to the tribe. If I stay with Lin Feng, I’ll just bring him trouble.”

“Alright, say goodbye to your teacher then!” Hu Yue told her. Mu Yun walked over to the thatched hut, and spoke for a time with the old man. Although she was sad to do so, she was going to leave.

After leaving, Hu Yue moved even faster than Lin Feng, as if she were in a hurry. Lin Feng was speechless.

“Lin Feng, after you left, a great emperor of the Everlasting Palace came here. Surprisingly, he spent two years in Yao Ye Island, he was very patient. But in the end, since he didn’t find you, he left,” Hu Yue smiled icily as they flew along.

Lin Feng doubted that the Everlasting Palace would forget about him. They had also chased him on the path from Gold Fire City to Vast Celestial Ancient City. Surprisingly, they had also sent people to Yao Ye Island...

The three of them went back to the others. The group was even stronger now with Ban Ruo, Xing Zhan, Li Hen, Yuan Fei, and Hu Yue added to their numbers.

“Are you leaving?” Shen Yu asked Lin Feng and the others.

“Yes, Uncle Shen Yu. I’m truly happy to see that you’re all still fine,” Lin Feng bowed to the elder. Cultivators were straightforward here, everyone was fine, that was the most important thing.

“Alright, Hu Yue will stay with you, the situation could be dangerous. If Emperor Ni Chen causes trouble, remind him of the agreement. I don’t mind teaching him a lesson and showing him how weak his disciple was,” Emperor Shen Yu said evenly. Lin Feng nodded agreement.

Back then, when Emperor Shen Yu had taken Lin Feng away, Emperor Ni Chen and Emperor Shen Yu had agreed to have a contest at some point to see whose disciple was the strongest. If Emperor Shen Yu hadn't reminded Lin Feng of that, Lin Feng wouldn't have remembered. He had really forgotten about it. After all, Qi Yu Chen and Zhou Tian Ruo couldn't compete with him anymore.

Ni Chen's favorite disciple was Wen Ao Feng. Even if he was a real genius, and even if he had already become a low-level emperor a long time ago, he couldn't possibly have broken through to the medium Huang Qi layer. Not everyone could be like Chu Chun Qiu!

"Uncle Shen Yu, uncles, see you!" Lin Feng waved at everyone. Ban Ruo and everyone else waved too as their group left.

They were finally going to Qing Di Mountain!

There were a dozen people in the boat already, with four beautiful women among them: Qing Feng, Mu Yun, Mu Lin Xue, and Hu Yue. They were all beautiful in their own way. Hu Yue kept provoking Lin Feng and asking him about his relationship with Qing Feng, she also asked him if Mu Lin Xue liked him or not. She found it amusing.

She knew about everybody, and she also knew about the things Lin Feng had done in the Holy City. Even though she enjoyed annoying Lin Feng, everybody in the boat liked her and found her funny. It was a pleasant journey, especially as the people got to know another. After all, they all knew each other thanks to Lin Feng.

So many years had passed, and Qing Di Mountain was a gigantic territory, nothing major had happened there. People had their own lives in their own castles. Cultivators could choose their own path.

The members of the nine great celestial castles were no different.

Even though there were still tensions between various cultivators, they still lived peacefully together. However, all in all, everybody understood that there were important tensions between Celestial Qi Castle and Celestial Wen Castle. After all, the Celestial Wen Castle had taken control over the small world, and were going to manage it for ten thousand years.

At the same time, because of Lin Feng, tensions had appeared between the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine and the Celestial Qi Castle. After he left, the situation had become better, but the battles between their members were still intense, especially between their younger people. Even those who eventually joined Qing Di Mountain were like that.

—

In the buffer zone of the nine great celestial castles, there were many people gathered at a certain vendor's booth.

Xia Tian Fan was walking down the street, he had just bought some ore and emerged from a pavilion. He frowned.

“What’s going on here? Surprisingly, there are so many purple meteorites. They are very useful for holy marks. They can also be used to fabricate weapons and to carve deployment spell marks. But why would someone need so many? Besides, they’re quite expensive, buying them in bulk requires lots of money.”

Xia Tian Fan frowned. He didn’t understand. Who was buying so many meteorites?

“Purple meteorites have limits, but they’re very hard, even emperors can’t easily destroy them. Only two people have stock in the nine great celestial castles, the Celestial Wen Castle and the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. They probably want to know who those people are more than we do,” spoke up someone next to Xia Tian Fan. They didn’t understand. How much did so many purple meteorites cost? And who was behind such a transaction?

“I want to know why he needs so many purple meteorites,” whispered Xia Tian Fan. He raised his head and looked at the people in front of him: Zhou Tian Ruo and Wen Tian Ge.

“Brother Xia, I trust you have been doing well since we last met,” Zhou Tian Ruo greeted him cordially Xia Tian Fan.

Xia Tian Fan ignored him indifferently, and looked to Wen Tian Ge, angering Zhou Tian Ruo. Xia Tian Fan was such a bastard, giving him no face whatsoever.

“Do those people want other things?” Xia Tian Fan asked Wen Tian Ge.

“They do. They also want red fire stones, melted golden sand, and they want to buy in bulk,” admitted Wen Tian Ge. Xia Tian Fan shivered. Those materials were extremely hard. People used such materials to build secret rooms. What did they want to do?

“Can the Celestial Wen Castle say who the buyer is?” asked Xia Tian Fan.

Wen Tian Ge shook his head, “I just know that they’re from a terrifyingly powerful clan. They paid a good price, so we couldn’t refuse the transaction. We’ll quickly know what they want to do,” Wen Tian Ge said, nodding to Xia Tian Fan before leaving.

Wen Tian Ge was right. Ten days later, they learned what those people wanted to do.

In the buffer zone in the space of one night, palaces appeared in a picturesque disorder, the corridors all intertwining. It looked like a new small town. Someone had destroyed the other buildings which were there initially. Nobody complained, which meant they had been paid well.

When the crowd saw this, they were as astonished as if they had seen a mysterious thing. Cultivators had incredible powers, but building such a city in one night was incredible, especially using

such materials.

That wasn't a small world created by an emperor, people had built those buildings with the materials purchased recently!

Chapter 1813: Offering Great Imperial Scriptures

“Yesterday evening, I heard loud sounds and my apartment kept shaking. When I came here, I saw those palaces,” spoke up someone in the crowd. He had been shocked during the night.

“I can confirm that, I live over there. Someone came up to me and paid me to find a new place. I accepted. I walked away and when I turned around, I saw that!” said someone else. They were all curious. Who had done that? However, at that moment, many people were afraid too. After all, the one who had build those buildings had to be an incredibly strong cultivator. They were afraid to offend him!

At that moment, a group of people came out of the palace. Those people looked ordinary, they were all ordinary Zun cultivators. They weren’t strong cultivators at all, but at that moment, they were carrying a gigantic stone shield. On that gigantic plaque, some words were carved.

Those who go will be held responsible for their own actions.

The cultivators put the shield above the entrance and then went back inside. The words contained terrifying sword and immortal meaning!

An emperor carved those words!, thought the crowd. Then, they looked at those who had put the shield in place and asked, “Who’s the owner of that vast palace?”

“We have been hired for this job, we don’t know who the owner is. But you should be careful, don’t violate the rules,” answered one of them, before continuing into the depths of the palace. The crowd was stupefied, what a mysterious thing! They were all curious. Who had built this building?

“Jin Chen Jun!” shouted someone at that moment. The crowd

moved aside for the strong cultivator from the Celestial Qi Castle, Jin Chen Jun.

“The Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine is here too.” At that moment, a middle-aged man arrived as well, an emperor from the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. The two of them looked at the palace.

“Jin Chen Jun, who do you think the owner of that celestial palace is?” asked the strong cultivator from the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine to Jin Chen Jun.

“We should go in and see!” smiled Jin Chen Jun.

The strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine smiled back and said, “I know you are very strong, you control gold cosmic energy and you have been protecting the Celestial Qi Castle for such a long time. Therefore, you should go in first.”

Even emperors are afraid to go in, thought the crowd, shivering despite themselves. Jin Chen Jun and the strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine were both emperors, but they didn’t dare go in.

“What is going on?” A new group of people arrived and landed there. The crowd moved away from them cautiously.

Jin Chen Jun looked happy, the Young Master was there!

“Master Yu Chen,” said Jin Chen Jun, bowing. That person was Jin Chen Jun, a direct descendent of the Celestial Qi Castle.

Qi Yu Chen was a genius of the Celestial Qi Castle. Even though he had lost in battle many times, he had also broken through to the Huang Qi layer.

Besides, he had another social status, he was also one of Qing Di Mountain’s cultivators.

Qing Di Mountain’s cultivators had a particular position in the

hierarchy of the region, a symbolic social status. They were noble and strong. Qing Di Mountain's cultivators had the potential to become medium-level emperors, or even high-level emperors!

"Young Master, this palace..." said Jin Chen Jun.

Qi Yu Chen shook his head and said, "This palace was built in one night using purple meteorites. I know."

Jin Chen Jun nodded and didn't add anything. Qi Yu Chen walked up to the palace.

"I am Qi Yu Chen from Qing Di Mountain, I came to greet the owner of the palace! I hope I can see him."

Qi Yu Chen didn't say he was from the Celestial Qi Castle, he said he was from Qing Di Mountain. In this region, nobody dared offend Qing Di Mountain, they were the rulers here.

However, nobody replied to Qi Yu Chen. He was initially very self-confident, but his self-confidence was crushed.

The atmosphere was completely silent. Qi Yu Chen frowned and shouted furiously, "I am Qi Yu Chen from Qing Di Mountain and I came to see the owner! Come out, or I'll come in!"

The owner must be terrifyingly strong, he dares ignore Qing Di Mountain!, thought the astonished crowd. Their hearts were pounding.

"Hmph!" Qi Yu Chen looked furious and he walked into the corridor and said, "Since nobody is coming out, I'll go in."

"How noisy!" shouted a mighty voice at that moment. Someone rose up into the air, their silhouette gigantic. Their strength kept exploding in the air around them.

"An emperor!" Jin Chen Jun frowned. Finally, an emperor had come out, but it was only a low-level emperor.

"Are you blind?" said Tantai, releasing more of his Qi. Qi Yu Chen also released his Qi straight towards Tantai. A golden scroll

appeared and surrounded Tantai.

“Let’s see what you can do!” said Qi Yu Chen, releasing more and more empty space cosmic energies. He was from the Celestial Qi Castle and Qing Di Mountain, who dared cause trouble there?”

A lion roared, loud enough that the earth and the sky started shaking violently, and millions of lions charged towards Qi Yu Chen. He had the sensation his head was going to explode.

Tantai jumped away, he punched out as the lions rained down on him. The gigantic army of lions made the ground shake violently, the earthquake intense. The crowd shivered as they sensed the Qi, it was terrifyingly strong!

Qi Yu Chen’s face changed drastically. His golden scroll surrounded him and he retreated even further. However, there were lions everywhere. A terrifying strength reached out for him, he raised his hands to protect himself, but the lions kept striking him. Blood splashed and he was sent flying helplessly.

“Master!” Jin Chen Jun’s face turned deathly pale as he caught Qi Yu Chen. Qi Yu Chen looked extremely weak, he had the sensation that his viscera were destroyed and his chest was burning. His face had turned grey.

Qi Yu Chen had never suffered such a crushing defeat, even back then when Lin Feng had defeated him. He had also never looked this desperate. He had a great reputation, especially since he had become a cultivator in Qing Di Mountain. People admired him, he was considered a genius. And now, facing another low-level emperor, he hadn’t withstood a single attack.

The crowd was astonished. The lions were still roaring. How terrifying! How could a low-level emperor be so strong?

Is that the leader? What is his social status?, wondered the crowd as they looked at Tantai.

Jin Chen Jun looked at Tantai and asked, “Your Excellency, who

are you? Are you the owner of the palace?”

“Who the fuck do you think you are to even talk to me? Fuck off! If anyone dares come here again, I’ll crush them!” shouted Tantai extremely aggressively. His voice exploded in the air and pierced through people’s ears. Then, he grunted coldly, turned around, and disappeared in the palace.

Jin Chen Jun was petrified. He didn’t have the right to talk to him?

Jin Chen Jun understood that he couldn’t do much, so he turned around and brought Qi Yu Chen away. The strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine frowned and left at the same time. How many people were there inside the palace?...

People in the crowd kept talking about this. That person was so strong and terrifying. Those lions had created an earthquake and had an explosive strength. He could even pressure medium-level emperors, and had defeated Qi Yu Chen in the blink of an eye! Would the Celestial Qi Castle react?

The news spread quickly through the nine great celestial castles. Everybody knew that a mysterious palace had suddenly appeared, and that there were terrifying emperors inside. A cultivator from there had totally crushed Qi Yu Chen from Qing Di Mountain!

On the second day, more news spread, that palace had created a sect and they were recruiting disciples. The name of the sect was Tiantai!

Tiantai recruited disciples, their cultivation level didn’t matter much. People who weren’t emperors yet received low level imperial scriptures, low-level emperors received medium-level imperial scriptures, medium-level emperors received high-level imperial scriptures.

The most astonishing thing was that people who became core members of Tiantai also received great imperial scriptures!

The news spread quickly and amazed everyone in the nine great celestial castles. Qing Di Mountain quickly heard about it, and everyone was astonished.

Great imperial scriptures were wondrous and rare. In this region, only Qing Di Mountain dared transmit great imperial scriptures, but now if people became core members of Tiantai, they could receive great imperial scriptures!

Chapter 1814: Protected

In the Celestial Qi Castle, a group of people were at the top of a certain castle. Qi Yu Chen's injuries were already healed, but he wouldn't be able to use his full strength for a while. His face was long, unable to forget the humiliation.

A descendant of the Celestial Qi Castle, a Qing Di Mountain cultivator, he was considered a great cultivator here, but surprisingly, this new palace had appeared, a strong cultivator had come out and injured him. He had suffered a crushing defeat!

"Emperor Dong, Tiantai used to be a powerful group in the small world, isn't there a problem?" a middle-aged man asked Emperor Dong coldly. Emperor Dong had only one arm left. Back then, Lin Feng had thrown a talisman at him and he had lost an arm, which he still couldn't recover. He knew that Celestial Qi Castle wouldn't waste resources to help him.

Emperor Dong was furious. He hated Lin Feng, but unfortunately, back then, Lin Feng had managed to escape and he had gone to Yao Ye Island. Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Lei had been killed by members of Yao Ye Island. He still remembered those events perfectly.

On that day, the leaders of the nine great celestial castles had not shown up. Emperor Ni Chen had been forced to leave. Lin Feng had taken Yuan Fei and the others away from them.

And now a new palace had appeared, and they had created a new group, Tiantai, in the nine great celestial castles' buffer zone. Emperor Dong was surprised at their daring.

"In the small world, there was a Tiantai, and Lin Feng was a member of Tiantai, but they only had Zun cultivators back then. Even their two emperors weren't that strong; one of them was a medium-level emperor, and the other was a low-level emperor. Even after a few years, they couldn't possibly have become much

stronger. They even give great imperial scriptures to core members, I don't think it can be the same. They are definitely different," guessed Emperor Dong.

The middle-aged man's eyes were glittering. He looked at Qi Yu Chen and asked, "Yu Chen, how strong was the cultivator you fought, and what skills did he use?"

"He's very strong. when he shouts, heaven and earth shake violently. He also punched out and lions appeared. His cultivation, skills, and techniques are incredible. Even in Qing Di Mountain, there aren't many people who could deal with such cultivators, and even those who could are probably core disciples. I don't think it's the same Tiantai you mentioned. They just happen to have the same name," agreed Qi Yu Chen.

"But Tiantai built their palace in the buffer zone, so we have to be careful," said the middle-aged man. This Tiantai was truly mysterious. They had appeared in a single night, they didn't even know who was inside. This was a dangerous time.

"Should we inform the leader of the castle?" Emperor Dong asked in a low voice.

The middle-aged man looked at Emperor Dong coldly without saying anything. Emperor Dong lowered his head and shivered to himself.

"If we tell the leader about this, he'll think we're pieces of trash!" the man eventually answered icily. Emperor Dong pulled a long face. He was being scolded like a teenager!

"Find some emperors, and send them to Tiantai to see what's inside!" said the middle-aged man. The others nodded. This was an emergency!

The Celestial Qi Castle wasn't the only group who thought of doing that. Tiantai had appeared so suddenly, so the nine great celestial castles had to find out who they were. Since Tiantai was

recruiting people, why not seize that opportunity to go in and explore Tiantai?

In the following days, more and more people headed to the buffer zone, the stream of them was endless. Tiantai refused nobody. All the newcomers were sent to the same courtyard.

The recruiters were Qin Wu, Wu, and Tantai. They were naturally all strangers to the nine great celestial castles.

“Since Tiantai is recruiting people, why do we have to wait here?” someone asked Qin Wu. That person was getting impatient. He was also an emperor, he had come to get ancient scriptures. He wasn’t interested in Tiantai, unless Tiantai was powerful enough to make him rise as a cultivator.

“Please be patient. We’re organizing everything. You are the one decided to join us,” replied Qin Wu calmly.

“We’ve already been waiting for half a day. How long do we still have to wait? Can you tell us precisely?” asked someone else. Qin Wu frowned and smiled coldly. He already knew that some people would be annoying.

“We are recruiting people, we’re not recruiting grandpas. If you don’t want to wait, you can leave,” replied Qin Wu coldly. Many people groaned in aggravation.

“We are already here, how could we leave? You must tell us why we’re waiting, or at least, give us the ancient scriptures you promised,” someone else demanded.

“Indeed. You think you can make us leave when you wish? You’re insane!” someone else spoke up. The crowd was getting really impatient.

“I’ve never seen such conceited disciples!” Tantai swore loudly. Wu stared at those people, his eyes filled with burning suns. He didn’t want to deal with these things, but since he had lost against

Lin Feng back then, he had to obey his orders.

However, Lin Feng didn't care about these people.

"I just have one thing to tell you, if you don't want to be part of Tiantai, then leave. Nobody is forcing you to stay here. If anyone talks shit again, I'll kill them!" Wu promised emotionlessly. The crowd frowned. The Zun cultivators remained silent, of course. Among the people who really wanted ancient scriptures, there were also people who didn't mind waiting, especially if Tiantai was that strong. In the future, they'd be able to compete with the nine great celestial castles. Cultivators didn't mind waiting for a few days for such things.

"How arrogant!" an emperor responded coldly.

Bzzz!

Wu threw himself at that cultivator like a meteorite. That cultivator's face changed drastically as he retreated, but he couldn't compete with Wu in terms of speed. Wu immediately grabbed him with his claws and shrieked into his face as it started raining fireballs. The crowd saw that person's body being torn apart, and then the cosmic energies dispersed.

The people there were astonished. He had killed an emperor in the blink of an eye!

These people are terrifyingly strong. they seem much stronger than others of the same level, thought some emperors. Tiantai was a powerful group if their low-level emperors were this strong. Low-level emperors from the region couldn't withstand a single attack against them, even Qing Di Mountain cultivators like Qi Yu Chen!

The most terrifying part was that these people were also very cruel. They didn't care, they just killed emperors if they wanted, and they disrespected people like Qi Yu Chen.

Up in the air, Wu was surrounded by flames. He glanced at the

crowd icily, and asked, “Is anyone else unhappy? I’ll kill them!”

The rest remained silent, not daring to provoke him. He had just butchered an emperor like a child...!

In the region of the nine great celestial castles, emperors were very strong cultivators but in the Animal World, emperors were ordinary people!

“I would like to warn everyone, if you want to join Tiantai because you harbor evil intentions, then piss off! Otherwise, when the time comes, you won’t have time to escape!” Qin Wu promised grimly. The undercover agents who had been sent by the nine great celestial castles were very nervous, as expected if Qin Wu knew that there were such people among the applicants. But they couldn’t leave, as they had to obey orders and find out who the leader of Tiantai was.

—

A silhouette finally glided in. It was a beautiful woman: Qing Feng!

“Wu, bring them. Tantai and Qin Wu, stay here and have the next ones wait here,” ordered Qing Feng. Qing Feng turned to the crowd and said, “Come with me.”

The crowd followed Qing Feng quickly, wondering what kind of exam would they have to take.

In Tiantai’s long corridors, the applicants glanced around. Many people were waiting. How could they become core disciples, and would they really receive great imperial scriptures?

After having waited for such a long time, it had become dark outside, but the crowd didn’t leave. On the day after, the sun rose again, and they were still waiting.

“Someone is coming!” The crowd saw many people running quickly, they were carrying a corpse, what was going on?

Is that person dead? They had no Qi, thought the crowd, frowning at the sight. Very quickly, those people went outside and threw the corpse on the ground.

“Our brother told us to tell you: Tell the nine great celestial castles to stop sending undercover agents, otherwise we’ll kill them all.” Those people said that to the crowd, and then left again. The crowd was astonished. Those who were undercover agents in the crowd shook inside. Those corpses were from their groups!

Tiantai dared kill their people!

Chapter 1815: Tiantai's Growth

The crowd didn't leave, calmly looking at the palace, but that calm gave people a sensation of suffocation.

Apart from corpses, the others had disappeared. Nobody came out.

What are the people in Tiantai doing?, thought the crowd. Tiantai was so mysterious. They were afraid of what was going on.

At that moment, in the palaces of Tiantai, there was a secret room. In the secret room, there were many talismans. Those talismans contained lots of skills and techniques. When people saw those talismans and saw that people had been killed, they didn't feel like leaving anymore. Before that, they had thought they could come, take some Ancient scriptures and leave. But now, it was different.

Those skills and techniques were too powerful, their existence too explosive. Even though they weren't Qing Di Mountain's cultivators and they had never been there, they knew that the disciples of Qing Di Mountain didn't have such powerful techniques.

And that was only the beginning. Those young people were unbelievably strong. At the same level, they could easily destroy their opponents. They even had great imperial scriptures! Very excited now, the newcomers continued waiting.

However, the newcomers could only become external disciples, no matter what their cultivation level was. They had to go through security checks to become internal disciples. If they became internal disciples, they could still obtain great imperial scriptures!

Apart from external and internal disciples, Tiantai also had core disciples, they were the equivalent of elders in some sects. They had access to incredible skills and techniques.

In a palace inside the complex, Lin Feng and the others were seated. Lin Feng asked Jun Mo Xi, “Mo Xi, your Hell technique is so strange, they have nowhere to escape.”

“It attacks people’s determination, but those whose determination is stronger than mine are not affected,” said Jun Mo Xi with a quiet smile. “Lin Feng, you think promising things to them will be sufficient for them to be loyal?”

“In the world of cultivation, people do what is best for them. If we have nothing to offer, why would they join Tiantai? They will leave if we give nothing to them. If they obtain things, they’ll want more, and they’ll contribute to Tiantai’s history,” Lin Feng said calmly.

“Lin Feng is right. Besides, they can’t possibly be like us, we’re like brothers. What we want is social order, not loyalty,” nodded Hou Qing Lin.

“So what do we do next?” asked Yuan Fei, his eyes gleaming with cold lights. He really wanted to go to the Celestial Qi Castle and kill them. They had enslaved him!

“No rush. We’ll deal with the Celestial Qi Castle when the right time comes,” said Lin Feng grimly. Even though all nine great celestial castles wanted to control small worlds, there were some groups they wanted to destroy above all, especially the Celestial Qi Castle.

Apart from the Celestial Qi Castle, they also wanted to kill the white-bearded old man of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, a medium-level emperor. Lin Feng remembered that old man perfectly, and really wanted to kill him. He had made his teacher kneel down! Lin Feng had to destroy the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine!

In the following days, nothing major happened in Tiantai. It was very calm. However, in different rooms, there were more and more people. Those were the newcomers. More and more people wanted to join.

Some people wanted to join because they were curious, or because they wanted to obtain Ancient scriptures. However, after joining Tiantai, people didn't come out again. The atmosphere was very calm.

The crowd also noticed that two medium-level emperors had joined Tiantai. They had stayed in there and hadn't come out.

The people were astounded, Tiantai was still expanding. New buildings appeared each morning and they were bigger and bigger. A fog also started appearing around Tiantai. People had the impression they were looking at an illusion when they looked at Tiantai's buildings.

The crowd understood that there was a powerful deployment spell caster in Tiantai. They remembered the purple meteorites that had been purchased, those were very useful for deployment spells. They had thought of everything when building Tiantai. Now the buildings were protected by incredibly powerful deployment spells. This mysterious group called Tiantai was quickly rising. Even the nine great celestial castles weren't protected by deployment spells!...

And now that the people were starting to pay attention to Tiantai, even the leaders of the nine great celestial castles couldn't continue ignoring them...

——

Today, many people gathered in the buffer zone. This time, people had come from everywhere, including many medium-level emperors.

“Celestial Qi Castle asked us to come here, why?” asked a strong

cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle, looking at a middle-aged man from the Celestial Qi Castle. These days, the one in charge of foreign affairs in the Celestial Qi Castle was Qi Yun Lin. Back then, Qi Yun Sheng had been killed by cultivators from Yao Ye Island, and then Qi Yun Lei's cultivation had been crippled, so Qi Yun Lin had started rising. He was very strong and had oppressed Qi Yun Xiao.

“As if you didn't know, Brother Wen, Tiantai is rising. You don't mind?” said Qi Yun Lin indifferently.

“Qi Yu Chen is one of the Qing Di Mountain's cultivators and he was attacked, you're very patient, you let them rise,” retorted the strong cultivator of Celestial Wen Castle, smiling calmly.

Qi Yun Lin's eyes flashed angrily. The strong cultivator of the Celestial Wen Castle was making fun of him! However, he quickly controlled himself and replied indifferently, “Tiantai is rising. It's a problem for all of us. Besides, they're mysterious, don't you all feel nervous with them around?”

“Brother Qi, what do you think we should do, then?” asked the white-bearded man from the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. He was the strong cultivator who had made Emperor Yu kneel down. He had a high social status within the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine.

“I also want to know what you intend to do, Brother Qi,” spoke up Zhou Tian Xiao, Zhou Tian Ruo's older brother. He was very talented and quite strong. He had broken through to the Huang Qi layer a long time ago. His cosmic energies were already level eight, and he was getting closer and closer to becoming a medium-level emperor. Many people said that he'd become a medium-level emperor within ten years. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness attached much importance to Zhou Tian Xiao.

“Since Tiantai established their group in the buffer zone of the nine great celestial castles, we can't just sit by and watch. We have

to do something, we have to go there and understand the details. After that we can decide what we want to do, what do you think?" proposed Qi Yun Lin.

The strong cultivator of the Celestial Wen Castle smiled and said, "I've always known you were a careful person, Qi Yun Lin. I had thought you'd go there directly and kill people since they humiliated you."

Qi Yun Lin didn't care about what the strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle said. Tiantai was a mysterious group, and nobody knew anything about them. They couldn't possibly go there alone.

"I think Brother Qi is right. Tiantai is mysterious and I think everybody still remembers Lin Feng?" spoke up a strong cultivator from the Celestial Si Kong Castle at that moment. Everybody remained silent. They all remembered Lin Feng. Back then, the Celestial Qi Castle had failed to kill him. Emperor Ni Chen had personally come, and still Lin Feng had managed to escape with the help of Yao Ye Island's cultivators.

"In Lin Feng's small world, Tiantai existed and he was a member of that group," said the strong cultivator from Celestial Si Kong Castle. People's eyes lit up.

"What you mean is that Lin Feng is back?" asked someone else.

"Maybe. We need to understand what's going on to ensure our safety," replied the strong cultivator from Celestial Si Kong Castle. Everybody understood what he meant. This place was their territory, and now Tiantai was rising here. It was dangerous, especially if they kept growing. In around ten days, they had already become quite large.

"I agree," stated the strong cultivator from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Everybody nodded.

"Since everybody agrees, let's send some people to Tiantai!" said

Qi Yun Lin. Everybody agreed. The nine great celestial castles wanted to join hands. Even if Tiantai was mysterious, they had to give the nine castles face!

Chapter 1816: Chatting

Tiantai was mysterious and powerful, and their territory was now surrounded by fog. Even though they had risen in a short time, nobody knew anything about them, so nobody acted recklessly.

However, today the people of the nine great celestial castles had finally arrived at a decision. This time, the nine great celestial castles joined hands. Some medium-level emperors, dozens of low-level emperors, and a bunch of cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer gathered and surrounded Tiantai. People's hearts were pounding. They understood that the nine great celestial castles were finally going to do something.

How could they let Tiantai settle there? This was their territory. They were like kings here. The buffer zone was their market, and now, a powerful new group had invaded their buffer zone and settled there. Now, there challengers were rising, so they had to do something. They were finally about to do something about it. The masses had thought they'd react much earlier though, but Tiantai was extremely powerful. They had to be cautious.

—

At this moment, the entrance of Tiantai looked like an illusion, there was only fog.

What a powerful deployment spell, thought Zhou Tian Xiao staring at the mists.

“Luckily, it's just an illusion deployment spell. If it were a destructive deployment spell, it would pose a threat to a medium-level emperor.” said a strong cultivator of the Celestial Summer Castle. There were all sorts of deployment spell casters. Some people knew illusion deployment spells, some others knew empty space deployment spells, and some extremely strong deployment spell casters also controlled several sorts of deployment spells.

“Back then, Lin Feng understood deployment spells, and here is Tiantai,” mused the strong cultivator of Celestial Wen Castle, smiling indifferently. The members of the Celestial Qi Castle frowned, did that really have something to do with Lin Feng? Lin Feng had left for a few years only, and at that time, he hadn’t even broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet. Could he be that strong?

Could Lin Feng have incredible great imperial scriptures? Could he buy extremely expensive, almost priceless, materials? Impossible...

“Let’s go inside and we’ll see,” Zhou Tian Xiao answered patiently. Then, he shouted, “The nine great celestial castles have come here to greet the leader of Tiantai!”

His voice spread through all the buildings of Tiantai. For an answer, a group of people came out and glanced at the members of the nine great celestial castles. They said nothing, though. They just watched them calmly.

“Everybody, may we enter?” asked a strong cultivator of the Celestial Qi Castle when he saw that those people weren’t speaking. He was unhappy, those people were just cultivators of the Zun Qi layer. Usually, such people respected him, but these people didn’t.

“If you have an invitation!” replied one of them, glancing at the crowd dismissively. The strong cultivator of the Celestial Qi Castle was infuriated.

“Damn it! The nine great celestial castles are here and you dare act so arrogantly!” shouted the strong cultivator of the Celestial Qi Castle, angry now. He was so loud that everybody could hear him in the palaces of Tiantai.

“Tiantai hasn’t invited you. If you’re not happy, then you can leave,” one of those people retorted impolitely.

The strong cultivator of the Celestial Qi Castle was getting

angrier. He was about to explode. “Who do you think you are talking to?”

“You’re bullying our disciples. If the people of the Celestial Qi Castle take one step into Tiantai, they’ll die, no exception,” said another person at that moment. Everybody heard the voice, the onlookers were petrified. How aggressive and arrogant! The members of the Celestial Qi Castle couldn’t go to Tiantai anymore.

Someone was threatening the Celestial Qi Castle in the buffer zone of their own region, what a humiliation! The faces of the Celestial Qi Castle members changed drastically. They all looked incredibly angry.

“People from the Celestial Summer Castle, from the Ancient Celestial Castle and from the Celestial Transformation Palace, please come in,” spoke out yet another voice. People’s eyes glittered. Tiantai had invited the Celestial transformation Palace, the Celestial Summer Castle and the Ancient Celestial Castle to come in, but not the members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine and the Celestial Wen Castle. Concerning the Celestial Qi Castle, there wasn’t much to say.

“You’re invited,” said the visible members of Tiantai watching the members of the three groups. They were happy to go and see what was inside.

Those who hadn’t been invited frowned and pulled long faces.

The people invited by Tiantai disappeared inside the palaces.

“We came to greet you and you humiliate us!” shouted the strong cultivator of the Celestial Qi Castle furiously.

“Keep calm. When they come out, they’ll tell us everything,” said the strong cultivator of the Celestial Wen Castle calmly. He wasn’t angry.

The members of the three groups who had been invited walked

in the corridors and arrived at a courtyard, where a banquet had been prepared. They looked to the young man who had the best seat. His Qi was extremely sharp. On his left and right, there were more young people, and they looked incredibly strong too. One of them was incredibly tall and sturdy, built like a tower.

Even though they are only low-level emperors, they look really strong. They must be from very famous clans, thought the group. Who controlled Tiantai? Why did all those young people look so extraordinary?

“Everybody, please have a seat,” said Qin Wu, standing up. The guests sat down without fuss.

“You all came to Tiantai for a reason, I guess? Please, feel free to talk to us about anything,” said Qin Wu before he sat down again.

“Sorry for being rude, but why did you come here, and why did you build Tiantai in the buffer zone of our territory?” asked someone from the Celestial Summer Castle straightforwardly. He didn’t need to dance around what they wanted, either.

“Let me explain,” interjected Wu. He glanced at the crowd, his eyes filled with burning suns, and continued, “I am not interested in knowing why you came here. However, we invited you and there are a few things you need to understand clearly. First, Tiantai is here and will stay here, and we will also expand. Secondly, Tiantai will also fight against some of the nine great celestial castles, but it can be avoided. Thirdly, Tiantai has determined some rules not only concerning this place, but also concerning the different small worlds.”

As Wu talked, people’s hearts started pounding. Weren’t they going too far?

“Don’t talk too hastily.” Wu raised his hand, then he continued, “I will not repeat those three things. Now, you can make a decision, you can be friends with us, or you can be our enemies. You are free to make your own decisions. You don’t need to tell me

anything, either. Just remember what I said.”

How arrogant, thought the guests. They had never met someone this arrogant!

“Alright, let’s enjoy the banquet. You can leave whenever you want. Keep in mind that people who were not invited aren’t able to enjoy this banquet!” Wu stood up and left. The crowd was stupefied at his behavior.

“Everybody, he has a very bad temper. Sorry about that, but he’s right! People who weren’t invited won’t even have the opportunity to drink with us,” Tantai said cheerfully, laughing happily, “Everybody, come, let’s drink!”

The crowd had many thoughts, but they couldn’t refuse drinking with Tantai. Wu had told them they could make their own decisions, they could leave if they wanted to.

“Oh by the way, who’s Tiantai’s leader?” asked someone else, putting their glass back on the table.

Tantai and Qin Wu smiled and Tantai said, “Tiantai’s leaders are its members. We are all like brothers. Besides, I can tell you one thing, nobody has a high cultivation level in Tiantai, but we managed to build Tiantai here.”

“I can also tell you something, the one who initiated the construction project isn’t a stranger. You know him. He doesn’t consider you as his enemies, you can decide whether you want to be his friend or his enemy,” Qin Wu smiled. Then, they both stood up and said, “Help yourselves!”

Then, Tantai and Qin Wu left. However, people’s hearts were pounding. They knew the one who had initiated the project?

“It’s Lin Feng, he’s back.” Xia Tian Fan had also come into the palace. He was the first one to break the silence. The crowd shivered. Lin Feng had caused much trouble in Celestial Qi Castle back then. He was back, and he had created a new group here!

When the members of the three groups left Tiantai, the others groups surrounded them with questions, but those people just smiled and glanced at them. They said absolutely nothing and left quickly. The people left outside was astonished.

As they people left, those outside heard a voice which from inside Tiantai, “Tiantai has a message for Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Si Kong Castle, the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders. Iff you want to go to Tiantai, send your leaders. Regarding the Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, they said you could piss off.”

Chapter 1817: Forcing The Way

If the four groups wanted to go to Tiantai, they had to send their leaders. Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine could piss off!

The crowd understood something now. The three groups who had been to Tiantai had been treated properly and politely, which was why they had said nothing and had directly left.

“Something else, tomorrow at noon. Tiantai will go to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine,” another voice rang out. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine suddenly looked both furious and nervous.

“Alright, the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine will be happy to receive Tiantai!” a strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine spoke up after remaining silent for a few seconds. They couldn’t wait to see who Tiantai’s cultivators were.

Tiantai was now surrounded by an illusion deployment spell, so they couldn’t go inside to kill people. But if Tiantai’s people came to their territory, then it was another story...

“Let’s go!” The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine left. Other people started leaving too. The strong cultivators of the Celestial Qi Castle glanced at Tiantai coldly one last time and also departed.

The strong cultivators of the Celestial Wen Castle also glanced at Tiantai, their eyes gleaming.

Since Tiantai was behaving differently depending on who they were, it meant that they really had something to do with the nine great celestial castles.

Tiantai was very polite to the Celestial Transformation Palace, the Celestial Summer Castle, and the Ancient Celestial Castle.

Tiantai wasn't polite to Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Si Kong Castle, and so on, they asked them to send their leaders. And finally, Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine were told to piss off. That wasn't even being impolite, that was a provocation!

Considering the circumstances, the strong cultivator of the Celestial Wen Castle had the feeling that Lin Feng had something to do with them. However, they still had doubts, because Lin Feng couldn't have become that strong so quickly, could he? Tiantai had said they would go and visit the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine tomorrow at noon. What would happen? What would they do?

"Everybody, it seems that we have to inform Qing Di Mountain," said the strong cultivator of Celestial Wen Castle indifferently. The others left immediately, understanding that they had to inform their sovereign.

Tiantai was mysterious, so they didn't try anything dangerous. They had to be careful, especially now that there was an illusion deployment spell around Tiantai's palaces now. They would need to wait and see.

The news that Tiantai was going to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine on the morrow quickly spread throughout the nine great celestial castles. Many people started going to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine to enjoy the spectacle.

The members of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine also informed their leaders. Some strong cultivators started gathering in the buffer zone at the entrance to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. They were going to see what Tiantai was going to do to them!

—

The next day, the sun was shining and at its highest. Although it was quite warm, some people were getting chills. Many strong

cultivators were here now, heading to the buffer zone of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine.

At the entrance of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, the atmosphere was lively. Inside the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, outside of a building, a white-bearded emperor in white clothes looked at the sky. The sun was at its highest. He frowned and gazed into the distance coldly. It was almost time. Tiantai was going to arrive soon.

“Master, you were not here yesterday, but Tiantai humiliated the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. They invited Celestial Summer Castle and two others inside, but they didn’t invite Celestial Wen Castle and some others. However, they said the Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine could piss off. They also said they’d visit us. They’re extremely arrogant!” a strong cultivator reported coldly.

“I know,” the white-bearded emperor answered calmly. “Today, we have six medium-level emperors, we also have eighteen low-level emperors, and I’m here, too. We’ll see if they are strong enough to compete with such an army. If Tiantai bluffed, they’re going to die here!”

“Apart from that little boy back then, I’ve never seen anyone that arrogant,” someone else observed.

The white-bearded emperor smiled coldly and asked, “Ye Si, when will Ye Sheng arrive?”

“Don’t worry. After Ye Sheng’s defeat, he was so sad that he went to a dozen small worlds and gathered experience. After breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, he came back and went to Qing Di Mountain, he’s practicing cultivation really hard there. Emperor Ni Chen thinks that he’s even stronger than Qi Yu Chen and Zhou Tian Ruo. Ye Sheng can even compete with Wen Ao Feng! I told him to come back. He’s going to come back with friends from Qing Di Mountain, they’re all low-level emperors at least. Even if

Tiantai is strong, they can't do anything to us. Qing Di Mountain's strong cultivators are incredible, they can probably kill those people."

"I'm not worried with you," the white-bearded emperor said indifferently. All the emperors around him smiled coldly. With Qing Di Mountain's cultivators, there was even less risk. Tiantai was going to be destroyed soon!

At that moment, people raised their heads and gazed into the distance, it was about time!

—

In the distance, a strong cultivator wearing white clothes appeared, he looked clean and simple. On his clothes, there was a Tiantai logo, a gigantic palace with an endless flight of stairs which rose to the skies. People's eyes locked on him.

So many strong cultivators. Thirty emperors, they recruited more than thirty emperors in such a short time? Incredible!, thought the crowd. They were stupefied. But there were also more than hundred cultivators of the top of the Zun Qi layer with them, and they were dragging a gigantic tank.

The tank was purple and dazzling, made of purple meteorites. There were nine dragons around it. Some people rode them. They looked majestic and imposing. There were also blurry silhouettes in the tank, as if they were in a deployment spell. Tiantai was still so mysterious. Nobody knew who or how many people there were in the tank.

These people still looked so unfathomable and enigmatic.

There were more and more people, the emperors of Tiantai were leading the way. Finally, they landed on the main road.

"They're here!" everybody had been waiting. However, when those people landed, people were suddenly covered with cold sweat. The Qi of Tiantai's cultivators was terrifying. Did they want

to destroy the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine?

If Tiantai wasn't strong, would they have invaded the city, would they have come to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine like this?

In the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, people rose up in the air. However, they didn't dare prevent Tiantai's cultivators from moving forwards. The dragons and the tank continued moving forwards.

How audacious!, thought the white-bearded emperor, his facial expression changing drastically as he saw that army. Tiantai's people were arrogant. Even when the leaders of the nine castles traveled, they never did things like this. Tiantai was crazy!

"Stop!" shouted the white-bearded emperor extremely loudly. Silhouettes rose up in the air; more than twenty emperors, including six medium-level emperors! They all looked extremely strong. If Tiantai dared act that arrogantly, well, the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine was going to show them.

Tiantai's emperors, the dragons, and the tank all stopped. They were still surrounded by fog though, and nobody could see who was in the tank, or how many people there were inside.

"Since you're already here, in the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, why do you keep hiding? You should show your face!" the white-bearded emperor snorted coldly. He couldn't see through the fog, either...

Chapter 1818: Huge Difference

At that moment, other strong cultivators from the nine great celestial castles were in the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine too. They made no secret of their presence, so the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine didn't prevent them from watching.

No matter where those people were, at that moment, the members of the palace were just fixedly staring at the carriage. Who was inside?

"Old white-bearded dude, back then, when I left the nine great celestial castles, I told you that someday I'd come back to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. I'm here now!" a hoarse voice spoke up. It came from the carriage. The white-bearded emperor was stupefied.

Of course, he remembered that time. The first time he had heard him say that, he didn't care, but the second time, he had remembered because he had shown how strong he was during the competition for the small worlds. Back then, he had thought that Lin Feng would probably pose a threat to them in ten years.

However, ten years hadn't passed, and that arrogant young man was back already.

The fog around the carriage slowly dispersed. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine stared at it as a group of people emerged. They were all young, but all of them looked extraordinary. The members of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine started shaking.

"As expected, it's you, Lin Feng!" said the white-bearded old man fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

The group of people jumped off the carriage and rose up into the air. All the members of the nine great celestial castles could clearly

see them. They were stupefied. Lin Feng was back, and he had recreated Tiantai in their buffer zone!

When the crowd saw those people, they paid particular attention to their cultivation levels. Many people took a deep breath in relief. Those young people were all low-level emperors, and Lin Feng was still a Zun cultivator.

They couldn't pose a threat to the nine great celestial castles at all. Of course, the crowd was more worried because of the people who were behind Lin Feng.

"Some of those people were already members of Tiantai back then. The one in cyan clothes is called Hou Qing Lin, that Buddhist monk is called Tian Chi, the one in golden clothes is Jun Mo Xi from the Celestial Palace of the Immortals. Those people there were enslaved by Celestial Qi Castle!" Wen Tian Ge exclaimed at that moment. He understood why Lin Feng didn't like Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine now.

The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine were relieved as well. Lin Feng couldn't do anything against them.

The white-bearded old man smiled coldly, "You kept hiding, I thought you were a mysterious and incredible new group. In the end, you are a bunch of dropouts. And you're disappointing, you haven't even broken through to the Huang Qi layer. You might be stuck at the Zun Qi layer, maybe you'll never break through to the Huang Qi layer. I overestimated you back then. Just call the incredible cultivators who came with you. You are well beneath our notice."

Lin Feng looked at the white-bearded old man in a meaningful way and smiled, "Don't be upset. And we are alone."

"You're alone?" Another medium-level emperor couldn't believe it.

“Indeed. Only us. All the members of Tiantai are here,” Lin Feng replied calmly. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine were astonished, and they weren’t the only ones, everybody was astonished. How did these people dare act so arrogantly?

“Lin Feng, how many talismans did you make to fight against us this time?” asked the white-bearded old man after remaining silent for a few seconds, then he laughed. He hadn’t forgotten about Lin Feng’s talismans. He had used them to kill many emperors back then. Then, he had also used deployment spells. His deployment spells were more powerful than his fighting abilities!

“You’re a medium-level emperor and you’re afraid of me, you’re pathetic,” said Lin Feng, taking a step forwards. He continued, “These people are all my friends. Some of them were direct disciples in Tiantai. The others joined Tiantai later on. But our teachers are still the leaders of Tiantai. You know why we came to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine this time. We want to compare our strength with you!”

Lin Feng smiled and looked at the strong cultivators from the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, “So many emperors. You’re all so old, you look like old skeletons. Who wants to fight?!”

“How arrogant!” the strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine looked at Lin Feng coldly. A low-level emperor jumped forwards. His cosmic energies were already level eight. He would definitely win.

Bzzz!

The old man moved like the wind and countless trees shot towards Tantai. However, Tantai jumped up, cracking and shattering sounds erupted as lions roared.

A terrifying energy rose up as the air distorted. The earth and sky started shaking violently. Lin Feng’s brain was shaking, but he heard nothing. He had the sensation his blood was boiling.

Loud Voice Assassination!, Lin Feng frowned. He saw Tantai wave his hand, millions of lions appeared in the air, but disappeared immediately. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine suddenly fell down onto their knees, in ear-splitting pain.

“Great Invisible Elephant!”

Tantai jumped up and raised his hand, immediately slapping down a strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. The crowd was astonished, especially the strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, their faces twisting in shock. What kind of strength was that? What were those attacks? Loud Voice Assassination? Great Invisible Elephant? There was absolutely no sound in the atmosphere. Everybody was totally silent. Many Zun cultivators had started bleeding from the ears. Everyone was astonished.

“Old fools remain old fools. You’re so weak. Lin Feng, those old dudes are pieces of trash, none of them should have the honor of fighting against us,” Tantai spat out. The atmosphere was completely silent. He then slapped down another man, something broke loudly, and the cultivator gave a horrible shriek as he crashed onto the ground and coughed up blood.

The cultivators Lin Feng brought are terrifying!, thought the shaken crowd. Even though Tantai was a low-level emperor, he was monstrously strong, and extraordinary character.

Of course, Tantai wasn’t proud, he just done what Lin Feng had told him to do. He knew that Tiantai wasn’t all that strong, but these people were just too weak. Their Ancient scriptures, skills, and techniques were weak. They couldn’t compare themselves with such weaklings. These people would probably never study great imperial scriptures.

“That’s the guy who injured Yu Chen!” Jin Chen Jun told Qi Yun Lin. Jin Chen Jun hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would really come.

He remembered Lin Feng perfectly.

Of course, some people remembered Lin Feng even more. Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi, when they saw Lin Feng, hatred exploded in their hearts. Because of Lin Feng, their lives had become miserable. Emperor Dong had lost an arm, and there was Qi Qian Xing, too. Surprisingly, Lin Feng was back! They needed to get their revenge!

“You brought some incredible cultivators,” the white-bearded emperor said coldly. Tantai could even pose a threat to medium-level emperors. They couldn’t clearly see how strong Lin Feng’s friends were. Low-level emperors couldn’t fight against them at all.

“Tantai, move away, those people don’t dare come closer while you’re here,” Lin Feng said with a cheeky grin. Tantai laughed and moved back. Lin Feng smiled at Qing Feng. “Qing Feng, do you want to try?”

Qing Feng nodded and moved forward like a gust of wind. Surprisingly, this time Lin Feng had sent a woman. The members of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine didn’t dare underestimate her. The white-bearded old man looked at another senior and said, “You, go!”

“Alright!” acknowledged the old man, releasing powerful cosmic energies. His cosmic energies were already level nine!

“I’m going to attack,” Qing Feng informed him calmly. Then, she suddenly disappeared into the wind. The old man’s face changed as a gloomy forest appeared around him.

Bzzz!

Fire suddenly appeared and burned the trees. The old man retreated quickly.

“Slow!” shouted Qing Feng, and everything slowed down abruptly. A beam of light appeared, and the old man’s face turned

deathly pale. A gigantic pair of wings crashed against him, and blood splashed. The old man shrieked and was blasted away. One of his arms fell down from the sky without him.

Qing Feng moved back to Lin Feng. The crowd only saw a light beam moving.

Emperors look so weak before these people..., thought the watchers when they saw the strong cultivator of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine look so weak. Why were the low-level emperors of Tiantai so strong?

Chapter 1819: Responsibility

Several sorts of cosmic energies. She used four sorts of cosmic energies, thought the observers, looking at Qing Feng. She was so beautiful and so strong. She wasn't any weaker than the massive Tantai!

The crowd then looked at Lin Feng's friends. Were they all that strong? If that was the case, then the situation looked bad.

But of course, the members of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine were the ones who were the most surprised. If all their low-level emperors continued fighting, they'd all suffer crushing defeats. They already understood that at the same level, they couldn't do much against Lin Feng's friends.

At that moment, Tian Chi walked forwards and put his palms together, releasing golden energies. He looked like a Buddha.

However, this time, the strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine looked at Tian Chi and remained silent. Nobody dared face Tian Chi. The white-bearded emperor looked at Tian Chi coldly.

"Lin Feng told me that our teacher begged for help, but you humiliated him back then. You even stole his treasures. You were very arrogant... and now you don't dare come and fight?" asked Tian Chi. Even though he was a Buddhist cultivator, he could also be very aggressive. Those watching shivered, their hearts pounding in their chests. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine now had to face them because of that one moment of arrogance.

The Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine was being humiliated by that teacher's disciples. They had come to avenge their teacher!

"How ridiculous. You should leave now. Otherwise, the Palace of

the Celestial Kings of Medicine will stop being polite to you,” said the white-bearded old man coldly. What the old man meant was that they were going to send medium-level emperors if Lin Feng and his friends didn’t leave.

Tian Chi understood that, too. He smiled coldly and said, “Today, whether we do one-on-ones or a group battle, we won’t stop battling. Don’t try and find excuses!”

“You’re shameless and ignorant! You came to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine to provoke us. Since it’s that way, Yao Chen, go and crush him! Teach him respect!” ordered the white-bearded emperor coldly. A medium-level emperor jumped up. The crowd was surprised, the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine was now sending medium-level emperors for real!

However, Tian Chi just stood there fearlessly. He was long since prepared.

“Kids dare act that arrogantly and insolently nowadays!” spat Yao Chen. Wood cosmic strength surrounded Tian Chi, turning into vines which sought to bind Tian Chi. However, Tian Chi looked totally serene. He was surrounded by golden lights that were becoming more and more dazzling. He also chanted mantras in a clear and melodious, pure and deep, far-reaching Brahma voice. The image of an ancient Buddha appeared behind him.

Yao Chen jumped forwards, his hands turning into sharp wooden sticks. The wood energies about them were extremely sharp, like blades.

“Indestructible Body!” Buddha lights invaded the atmosphere and stopped the wood energies.

Gold strength was extremely hard. However, Yao Chen groaned coldly and turned into a bestial tree. Tian Chi was surrounded by sharp wood energies which pierced through his golden lights.

Tian Chi continued chanting in that imposing Brahma voice. He

gradually turned into a second Buddha, then a third, and a fourth... and then, they all merged into one gigantic ancient and indestructible Buddha!

Tian Chi's chants never stopped. The gigantic Buddha descended from the sky and pressed down on Yao Chen.

"How could a pitiful low-level emperor defy my cosmic energies! I'm a medium-level emperor!" snarled Yao Chen coldly turning into countless vines. His sharpened wood energies moved towards the Buddha energies. However, they all broke apart.

More vines rose up in the air, the ground was shaking, but Tian Chi's voice only grew louder and louder. His Buddha surrounded the trees, shocking Yao Chen. Tian Chi was too strong!

The crowd around them was stupefied. Even though Yao Chen wasn't a very strong medium-level emperor, he was still a medium-level emperor, his cultivation level much higher than Tian Chi's. But it didn't seem to matter in this battle!

Tian Chi's fighting abilities were incredible. Those watching were astonished, they had rarely seen such strong cultivators!

—

"I understand why those people didn't want to leave Tiantai after joining," whispered Xia Tian Fan to himself. His eyes were twinkling. His skills were already very powerful, the Celestial Summer Castle had some great ones. However, Tian Chi's fighting abilities were beyond terrifying, far beyond the skills he had learned.

"Tiantai's disciples come from the small world. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they are afraid of nobody. They are very determined and only think of cultivation. Nothing can influence them. The geniuses of the nine great celestial castles, even if they are talented, aren't determined enough. They have no ambition, they all hope they'll join Qing Di Mountain and that's all. After

becoming strong enough in Qing Di Mountain, they sometimes try to travel and become stronger but it takes them many, many years.”

In the nine great celestial castles, everybody wanted to become Qing Di Mountain’s disciples, it was one of their main goals. But once they were in Qing Di Mountain, what then? While they were comfortably practicing cultivation in Qing Di Mountain, Lin Feng and his friends had traveled over thousands of kilometers. They had their own paths.

I want to become stronger. I have to leave. I can’t stay here anymore. I have to forget everything. I have to choose my own path and start all over, thought Xia Tian Fan with a sigh. He suddenly felt much more relaxed. How many people had the same thoughts as him? Many people were happy to stay here, they were basically living in a prison they made for themselves...

—

At that moment, the battle ended. Tian Chi’s Sentient Beings Buddhist Enlightenment attack had oppressed the medium-level emperor and crushed him to death.

Tian Chi had killed a medium-level emperor!

“You want to die!” said the white-bearded emperor coldly. Some strong cultivators around him suddenly started running forwards and releasing cosmic energies. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine lunged towards Tian Chi.

Tantai wanted to attack, but Lin Feng prevented him from going and said, “It’s about Tiantai’s direct disciples today. The other brothers don’t need to get involved.”

As Lin Feng talked, Hou Qing Lin had already started running forward and releasing Asura Reincarnation strength. Two cultivators died instantly. People’s hearts pounded. One sword lacerated two emperors! Hou Qing Lin hadn’t shown how strong

he was before, but the crowd could see it now!

Ban Ruo, Xing Zhan, and Li Hen also attacked. They were also the emperors' direct disciples. They had to help!

“Five low-level emperors are killing the emperors of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, are they insane?”

Lin Feng prevented some other people from fighting.

Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi continued running forwards. Hou Qing Lin released Reincarnation Sword energies which blotted out the sky, threatening to devour it. Tian Chi's Buddha lights illuminated heaven and earth. Ban Ruo stayed behind them, as he was weaker.

At that moment, Lin Feng also stepped forwards and looked at the white-bearded old man coldly. “I won't kill you but back then, you humiliated my teacher. You have to pay back, but a hundred times more.”

The white-bearded old man looked back at Lin Feng emotionlessly. He was shaking inside. A Zun cultivator was talking to him like that, and was scaring him!

“Die!” shouted a strong cultivator at that moment, charging towards Lin Feng. At the moment when the crowd thought Lin Feng was going to attack, someone else attacked him by surprise. However, Lin Feng didn't move. The strong cultivator's attack immediately struck Lin Feng. The crowd was speechless and dumbstruck, Lin Feng didn't even move?

However, very quickly, they realized they were wrong. Lin Feng raised his hand and grabbed that cultivator's head. He raised the man's head, who only saw two ice-cold pupils glaring back at him.

Boom!

An explosion rang out, and cosmic energies dispersed. The cultivator's skull had exploded, and his headless corpse fell from the sky. People's hearts were racing madly Lin Feng could kill

emperors so easily? It seemed so simple for him!

Chapter 1820: Slaughtering

“Zun Qi layer?!” Everybody was astonished, Lin Feng had come back, and he had come back with some extremely strong people in Tiantai’s disciples. Lin Feng looked like he only had the strength of the Zun Qi layer, had he hidden his cultivation level?

A low-level emperor couldn’t injure him with his physical strength, thought the shaken crowd. Qi rose to the skies, purple threads flowing through it. The tank rose up into the air. Lin Feng slowly walked towards a medium-level emperor. A low-level emperor who was trying to block the way was crushed by the purple tank and basically disappeared.

On his left side, another strong cultivator attacked Lin Feng, but Lin Feng suddenly turned around and looked at that cultivator with his pitch-black eyes, attacking his will. He released his godly awareness, and that person had the sensation he was going to die, Lin Feng slapped him, Kalpa strength rolled out, and crushed that cultivator who couldn’t withstand a single attack.

Low-level emperors can’t even take a single attack from him, thought the members of Celestial Qi Castle. Lin Feng and his friends were terrifyingly strong. They posed a definite threat!

In the crowd were many of Lin Feng’s old friends, such as Wen Tian Ge, Xia Tian Fan, and so on. When they saw Lin Feng fight like that, their hearts were filled with ambition and ardor, and their blood was boiling. Lin Feng had become so strong he could easily crush low-level emperors. Everybody understood that at the same level, nobody could compete with him anymore.

The most astonishing part was that Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi were equally terrifying. Hou Qing Lin’s reincarnation energies and Tian Chi’s Buddha energies could easily crush low-level emperors as well. Medium-level emperors couldn’t compete with them, either. Tian Chi had already crushed another medium-level

emperor and two low-level emperors!

Hou Qing Lin had studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures a lot. They were incredibly powerful. Even Hou Qing Lin was surprised when studying them. Reincarnation shadows appeared, the earth and the sky turned into a wheel of reincarnation. Inside the wheel of reincarnation, Asura energies crushed people drawn into it. Just now, dangerous cosmic energies had dispersed. A medium-level emperor had fallen, just like that. Hou Qing Lin had condensed a normal sword and then reincarnation inside it.

Even though Ban Ruo, Li Hen, and Xing Zhan weren't as strong as Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi, they also had particular powers and they had practiced cultivation really hard on Yao Ye Island. They had also traveled a lot, so they had lots of experience. Therefore, cultivators of the same level in the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine couldn't compete with them, either.

The crowd watched the battle as stones exploded and dust kept rising. Canyons appeared in the ground, and palaces exploded. Six cultivators from Tiantai were slaughtering all of them! The low-level emperors of Tiantai could easily oppress medium-level emperors of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine!

Lin Feng landed in front of a medium-level emperor and released immortal energy. He looked like a death god. The medium-level emperor's heart was pounding as lightning descended from the sky. Lin Feng punched out at him, making heaven and earth shake. He had never had that feeling, he was afraid of someone who wasn't even a low-level emperor!

Lin Feng condensed immortal, destructive immortal energy. The purple tank slammed down, and the medium-level emperor finally exploded and died.

Lin Feng looked at the white-bearded emperor who hadn't moved. Lin Feng sneered at him arrogantly and said, "What? Your Excellency, you don't even dare fight?"

The white-bearded emperor's heart was pounding. He watched the scene, unable to calm down. Lin Feng had become so strong! He had never thought Lin Feng would become so strong...

He hadn't thought that a Tiantai would appear, either. He hadn't thought that a group of terrifying young people would come to their territory and rebuild their sect here. Even though they were only low-level emperors, they could already kill medium-level emperors! And Lin Feng even controlled immortal energies!...

"Back then when I left, I told you I'd come back to the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. Now, I want you to kneel down and prostrate yourself three hundred times. If you do, I won't kill you!" Lin Feng promised emotionlessly. The white-bearded emperor's face turned red in fury. He was a medium-level emperor of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, could he prostrate himself three hundred times before a Zun cultivator, and one much younger than him on top of that?

"You're young. Be merciful. You're in the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, our territory!" the white-bearded emperor replied cautiously. He was trying to threaten Lin Feng. Many young people from Tiantai hadn't even attacked yet, and he knew that the Palace couldn't win.

"If you had been merciful, today wouldn't have happened! You humiliated my teacher, you're worse than an animal!" spat Lin Feng, aggressively releasing energies. He looked like a death god. The white-bearded emperor was staring at Lin Feng. Behind him, a strange tree had appeared. Most descendants of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine had a tree spirit and controlled wood cosmic energy.

Lin Feng watched him coldly, his expression frozen. He took a few steps forwards, releasing wind cosmic energy. He landed in front of the elder and released sword energy. The white-bearded emperor sensed the energy approaching, and had the impression he was going to suffocate from the pressure.

Dazzling lights pierced through his eyes and he started feeling extremely hot, as if he had started to burn. He used his tree spirit to protect himself. His hands turned into vines, but the vines immediately broke apart, shredded by the sword lights.

Lin Feng's sword energies were heavy, he was using three sorts of sword meaning! The white-bearded emperor's heart was pounding violently in pain. He shouted furiously, and a forest appeared.

At that moment, the fourth sword moved towards him and descended from the sky. It looked like an undying shooting star as it streaked across the sky, full of Immortal intent. He didn't have time to release strength anymore, and didn't know what to do.

However, Lin Feng stopped and looked at him. Then, he moved invisibly quickly towards the white-bearded emperor at full speed. The emperor was struggling to protect himself from the fourth sword attack. Lin Feng raised his hands, thunder boomed. and Lin Feng smashed into him. Bones cracked loudly, and the emperor fell down softly. Even though he was a medium-level emperor, his physical body didn't even have the strength of a low-level emperor. Lin Feng could easily pound on him.

The white-bearded emperor tried to roar in outrage as he raised his head weakly. A gigantic hand crashed down onto his head, pushing him into the ground, where Lin Feng slammed his foot down onto the man's face. The emperor was furious from humiliation, and released more cosmic energies.

However, Lin Feng continued slapping him. Lin Feng was humiliating an old medium-level emperor as if he were an ordinary old man.

More bone-breaking sounds rose, and the old man screamed horribly. He could die anytime, his organs were severely damaged!

That's not a battle anymore, that's a massacre!, thought the crowd. Lin Feng had stopped attacking, but he could have crushed the old man, who was forced to kneel down. Tiantai hadn't come

to battle, they had come to humiliate the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine who had humiliated their teacher. Hou Qing Lin and the others crushed the strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. Nobody would dare offend them after that. The strong cultivators of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine looked so weak next to them.

“Stop!” said someone at that moment. The crowd was startled at the sudden intrusion. Two strong cultivators came charging over.

One of them came from the palace of the leader of the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine, and the other one had traveled from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. He wasn't from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, of course. The one who had just shouted was a cultivator from Qing Di Mountain!

Chapter 1821: Important Decisions

At Celestial Wen Castle, the leader came out personally to greet the guests. He came out of his palace and saw Emperor Ni Chen and Wen Ao Feng standing there. He greeted them politely, “Brother Ni Chen, it’s an honor to see you here.”

“Brother Wen, no need to be so polite. I came regarding the mysterious group Tiantai. Since they suddenly appeared here, I took Ao Feng out, and we’re having a look,” said Ni Chen. He liked to pamper Wen Ao Feng, who was his favorite disciple.

Wen Ao Feng had broken through to the Huang Qi layer before Ye Sheng, Qi Yu Chen, and Zhou Tian Ruo, so he was really talented. Now, he was going to become a medium-level emperor soon, and even in Qing Di Mountain, there weren’t many people like him. Wen Ao Feng would be as strong as him before his hundredth birthday.

He also liked Ye Sheng, but there was still a big difference between Wen Ao Feng and Ye Sheng.

“Indeed, Tiantai is really mysterious. They went to the Palace of the Medicinal Kings today. Some blood will be shed,” the leader of Celestial Wen Castle smiled. Many of their people had gone there to watch.

“I know. I came here because Ye Sheng came back. He took a group of people from Qing Di Mountain there. Tiantai won’t cause too much trouble,” said Ni Chen confidently. He didn’t mind too much either.

“Since Qing Di Mountain went there, Tiantai won’t dare cause trouble, I would guess,” said the leader of Celestial Wen Castle to Emperor Ni Chen with a smile.

However, at that moment, someone appeared in the distance. When that person saw Emperor Ni Chen, they were surprised and

bowed to him, “Emperor Ni Chen!”

“No need to be polite,” said Emperor Ni Chen affably.

That person raised their head and looked to the sect leader, who said, “There is no harm in saying what one thinks.”

“Leader, we now know who Tiantai’s people are. They are old friends,” said that person.

The sect leader looked surprised. “Old friends?” he repeated.

“Leader, an obstinate and unruly young man appeared during the competition for the small worlds, and then Emperor Shen Yu came and took him away. Three years later, he came back and pretended to be a deployment spell caster, remember?”

“Lin Feng!” said Wen Ao Feng first. The sect leader of Celestial Wen Castle didn’t remember Lin Feng, but Wen Ao Feng did. Emperor Ni Chen remembered Lin Feng as well. He had lost face because of Lin Feng. Emperor Shen Yu had provoked and humiliated him back then. They had also agreed to make their disciples battle at some point. The last time he had seen Lin Feng, people from Yao Ye Island had come and protected him. They had also humiliated him! Of course he remembered that!

“So, how is it going?” asked the leader of Celestial Wen Castle.

“Tiantai’s cultivators don’t have high cultivation levels. They are all young low-level emperors. Lin Feng said that they didn’t have any stronger cultivators, but I don’t know if it’s true or not. I came back to inform you of these things,” responded that person. He was only a messenger, influential groups all had them.

“Ao Feng, we have to go,” said Emperor Ni Chen, smiling at Wen Ao Feng. Lin Feng was acting recklessly, he had dared come back!

“Yes, Teacher!” nodded Wen Ao Feng. Emperor Ni Chen gazed into the distance coldly. He hadn’t seen Lin Feng for a few years, so Lin Feng had probably become a lot stronger. If he dared use a deployment spell against Wen Ao Feng, he would regret it!...

.....

At the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, Ye Sheng had just arrived. He was known as one of Emperor Ni Chen's disciples!

Ye Sheng and those people are much stronger than the white-bearded emperor and his friends, thought the crowd quietly, studying the fighters. These people could pose a threat to Tiantai!

Ye Sheng and the others landed on the ground and looked around at all the corpses. Lin Feng had his foot on the white-bearded emperor's face. They looked at him icily. What a humiliation!

"Lin Feng!" shouted Ye Sheng. This was the young man Lin Feng had defeated back then. "Pull your dirty foot away!" Ye Sheng demanded icily.

Lin Feng slowly turned his head and looked at Ye Sheng. Ye Sheng was quite strong, and there were many medium-level emperors with him. He probably had a high position in Qing Di Mountain.

"Who are you talking to?" said Lin Feng, calmly yet disdainfully.

"Pull your dirty foot away!" Ye Sheng ordered again. He was getting furious. The white-bearded old man was his grandfather and Lin Feng had his foot on his face, he couldn't bear the humiliation.

"Wu, slap him," Lin Feng said to Wu. Wu's eyes glittered with cold lights. He was angry at Lin Feng inside. This bastard kept giving him orders! But he had no choice for now. Someday, the situation would change!...

Wu looked at Ye Sheng, his eyes sharp.

Woosh!

A strong wind started blowing, and a golden crow illusion appeared behind Wu. It streaked across the sky like a shooting star, its speed terrifying to behold!

Ye Sheng looked at Wu's eyes, the icy energies which burned in Wu's eyes pierced through Ye Sheng's pupils painfully. He jumped forwards releasing Qi. As he raised his hand, however, a strong wind brushed against him, cutting into his skin.

"Be careful!" shouted some people behind him. Wu turned into a beam of light and returned to where he was initially with a single flap of his wings. Somewhere in the middle of his motion, a gigantic hand had crashed onto Ye Sheng's face painfully, and his face went numb.

That's the Golden Crow Illusion, thought the crowd, staring at Wu. He was a terrifyingly fast animal cultivator!

Sun supernatural bird, a Three-legged Golden Crow!. The crowd shivered.

Ye Sheng was a cultivator from Qing Di Mountain, and had just been slapped! His cheeks burned with the humiliation of being seen.

Lin Feng looked at him disdainfully and said nothing. He turned back to the white-bearded old man, his foot still on the elder's face. He drew his foot back and said, "Kneel down before all the cultivators of Tiantai and prostrate yourself three hundred times. Only then will we not kill you."

"You are now the enemies of the Palace of the Medicinal Kings and Qing Di Mountain! You must have a death wish!" said the strong cultivator from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, icily releasing a terrifying Qi.

However, Lin Feng didn't pay them any heed, he just grabbed the desperate white-bearded emperor. Lin Feng smiled coldly and said, "Don't beg other people for help. Today, nobody can save you."

"Let him off, it's an order!" demanded the strong cultivators from Qing Di Mountain. Lin Feng looked proud and arrogant, making them even more furious. They had even slapped Ye Sheng,

which was a humiliation for Qing Di Mountain!

“Stop barking, little dog!” Tantai spat aggressively.

“We are Qing Di Mountain’s people!” said a medium-level emperor icily. “You dare offend Qing Di Mountain?”

“Lin Feng, is Qing Di Mountain a powerful group?” asked Tantai doubtfully.

Lin Feng turned his head, looking at Tantai and the others, and smiled, “They think they’re strong.”

That guy is crazy, he dares humiliate Qing Di Mountain!, thought the crowd, caught between fear and delight. The strong cultivators from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings and Qing Di Mountain were all around the Tiantai members, and started releasing oppressive energies.

The white-bearded emperor had hope, but Lin Feng only held him more firmly, and the old man shrieked.

“Try if you dare!” said a strong cultivator from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, releasing a powerful Qi, which quickly surrounded Lin Feng. Wu, Jun Mo Xi, Qing Feng, Tantai, Qin Wu and the others finally moved and surrounded Lin Feng. A bunch of low-level emperors were now facing medium-level emperors.

“If anyone dares come any closer, we’ll kill you,” said Lin Feng easily, as terrifying lights appeared. The strong cultivators from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings and Qing Di Mountain would die if they continued getting closer.

“Kill all the people from Tiantai, that’s an order from Qing Di Mountain!” shouted the strong cultivators of Qing Di Mountain, furiously releasing formidable Qi as they charged ahead. A hurricane formed as all the energies clashed violently.

Chapter 1822: Helping Your Disciple

This was Qing Di Mountain's territory. In case of danger, Qing Di Mountain was in charge of protecting the area. Tiantai hadn't only humiliated the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, they had also humiliated Qing Di Mountain! Qing Di Mountain couldn't accept such humiliation.

Many people were watching them. Qing Di Mountain had already given the order to kill all the cultivators from Tiantai. However, apart from the people who were already fighting, nobody else attacked. The other members of the nine great celestial castles just watched. Tiantai's cultivators were crazy, why would they want to face them?

"An order from Qing Di Mountain?" When Lin Feng heard that, he said coldly, "From now on, this territory is beyond the control of Qing Di Mountain."

Then, he put his foot on the white-bearded emperor's face again and stomped on him, crushing his bones. The old man fell back to the ground. He was lying on the ground and staring up at Lin Feng, his eyes filled with painful memories.

He remembered back then, when Emperor Yu was carrying Lin Feng on his back and begging him. He had humiliated Emperor Yu and made him kneel down. He had even stolen his treasures without giving him anything in return, telling them to leave. He hadn't even looked at the young man Emperor Yu was carrying on his back. However, that young man was now in front of him, stomping on his face. He had never thought such a thing would ever happen, especially this quickly.

"Back then, you humiliated my teacher, you have to pay for that," said Lin Feng, putting his foot on the other man's face again. The white-bearded old man was wailing mournfully, and tears appeared in his eyes. He had practiced cultivation for such a long

time, and now he was being humiliated, he was scared and sad.

He looked miserable. Emperor Yu had knelt down in front of him as if Emperor Yu had been a dog, and now this had happened.

Many medium-level emperors who were watching the scene felt sad for him. What a nightmare, it was better to be dead than having to go through that! The people from Celestial Qi Castle; Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi and so on, were dumbstruck, they couldn't believe it. Only a few years had passed, and the young man they used to chase everywhere had become so strong!...

Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi were also incredible cultivators. Tiantai's direct disciples were extremely strong. They hadn't only amazed the small world, they were amazing in the great world too!

Hou Qing Lin released reincarnation energies, Tian Chi released dazzling Buddha lights, Qing Feng released several sorts of cosmic energies, Wu was a strong beast releasing burning sun cosmic energies, Tantai and Qin Wu looked crazy, lions kept roaring, an ancient cauldron oppressed heaven and earth, Jun Mo Xi used Hell skills! These cultivators were amazing!

"Where are they from?" wondered many people. These people were incredible fighters!

Lin Feng raised his hand, a purple tank appeared and started vibrating. It contained seemingly endless immortal strength. However, it didn't fall down, Lin Feng continued waving his hand, and holy dazzling lights winked on. The energies became even more oppressive!

"Brothers!" shouted Lin Feng. Everybody looked at him, they understood what he meant. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi turned into a million illusions, they were everywhere in the sky. Tantai and Jun Mo Xi protected the area, lions and gloomy strength warding them. Qing Feng and Wu were there too, who would dare attack?

"Go!" shouted a strong cultivator from Qing Di Mountain. When

the others heard him shout, they took action too.

Dong!

Lin Feng's purple tank turned into a millions tanks, their aura pressing down on everyone. Immortal energy floated in the air as he released his wind power, further powering up his tanks.

At the same time, Tiantai's people also released powerful energies. The scene was incredible. A river of reincarnation energies flowed through the air, millions of hands streaked across the sky, a bunch of lions ran in the sky.

It's apocalyptic! The crowd was astonished, their hearts pounding at the sight. The immortal tanks looked terrifying, all sorts of strength was condensing in the air. A strong wind was brushing against those strong cultivators' bodies and corroding them.

Cosmic strength dispersed, a soul shouted furiously. Surprisingly, many souls started leaving their bodies, but Tiantai's people wouldn't let them off. Hou Qing Lin's sword energies invaded the atmosphere and the souls fell down into reincarnation vortexes.

Winning meant nothing anymore, this was a war. The white-bearded old man was even more desperate. The strong cultivators of Qing Di Mountain and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were getting crushed. Tiantai's people wanted to change everything in the nine great celestial castles.

"Call all the leaders!", the white-bearded old man tried to shout, but his voice wasn't loud at all. He hoped people would come and help. They couldn't do anything against Tiantai anymore.

Tiantai's people are really strong. If the leaders of the nine great celestial castles don't show up, they'll destroy the nine great celestial castles, thought the watchers. However, they were still wondering why Tiantai's people dared act like this. Even though

they were really strong, they couldn't possibly take over the territory. After all, they couldn't fight against high-level emperors. And now they had even offended Qing Di Mountain!

By the time Emperor Ni Chen and Wen Ao Feng finally arrived, the battle was already over. The strong cultivators of Qing Di Mountain and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were either dead or badly injured. Tiantai could kill them all if they wanted.

At that moment, the people from Tiantai were on the ground. The white-bearded old man of the Palace of the Medicinal Kings was on his knees again. That humiliation was horrible, being dead would have been better. He now understood what he had made Emperor Yu go through.

“Asshole.” When Ni Chen landed, the strong cultivators of Qing Di Mountain who were still alive gathered next to him.

Ye Sheng said, “Teacher, we have to kill them! They killed almost all of our friends!”

Ni Chen was furious. He hadn't thought that the situation would be so tragic. Qing Di Mountain had lost many people!

Of the nine great celestial castles, Qing Di Mountain was the leader. For them, a bunch of young low-level emperors was important to their future.

“Where are the cultivators of Yao Ye Island?” asked Emperor Ni Chen icily.

“Yao Ye Island? You want to be like last time, when you looked as scared as a stray cur?” mocked Lin Feng.

Ni Chen released his godly awareness. Indeed, there was nobody from Yao Ye Island present. He was surprised.

“You're self-confident because of your deployment spells, it seems. I'll give you a chance though, fight against Ao Feng. If you

win, I'll let you live. If you lose, everyone who contributed to killing the members of Qing Di Mountain will die."

Ni Chen was in the sky, looking quite dignified. Of course, he thought Lin Feng had relied on deployment spells. Otherwise, how could a low-level emperor have killed so many strong cultivators? He was very strong, but his strength was limited.

The opportunity Ni Chen gave to Lin Feng referred to his agreement with Emperor Shen Yu. He knew perfectly well how strong Wen Ao Feng was, he could easily defeat medium-level emperors.

"We will all die?" Wu looked at him icily. A trivial high-level emperor dared talk to him like that? "That old dude is acting recklessly." Wu was furious.

Ni Chen looked at him icily, "You're from Yao Ye Island?"

"Yao Ye Island?" Flames of fury burned in his eyes. He said icily, "Who do you think you are to talk to me, piss off!"

Ni Chen was astonished. He was a high-level emperor of Qing Di Mountain, and a low-level emperor dared talk to him like this? He had never met a low-level emperor like this before!

Lin Feng was just smiling and watching him. Ni Chen didn't know where Wu was from. A trivial high-level emperor dared talk to him like that? Even in Vast Celestial Ancient City, great emperors didn't necessarily talk to Wu that way.

Lin Feng walked forwards and slowly rose up in the air, he said to Ni Chen, "You little dog, you want me to fight against your disciple, you're really funny."

The crowd didn't understand why Lin Feng acted that crazy. And Wu? How come he dared tell Ni Chen to piss off? Lin Feng even dared call Ni Chen a little dog, these young people were truly strange...

"When I came here, Uncle Shen Yu reminded me of the

agreement, I don't mind helping your disciple become stronger!" said Lin Feng with a dark smile. Ni Chen and Wen Ao Feng were furious. Wen Ao Feng had the same level as Lin Feng, and Lin Feng dared say he was going to "help" him!?

Chapter 1823: Armies

Emperor Ni Chen is going to come a cropper, thought the crowd. They had seen how strong Lin Feng was. Even though Wen Ao Feng was Emperor Ni Chen's direct disciple, he couldn't compete with Lin Feng.

The most surprising thing was that nobody warned Emperor Ni Chen. Even Ye Sheng and the strong cultivators from Qing Di Mountain who had been injured didn't warn Emperor Ni Chen.

They are doing it on purpose because they want Emperor Ni Chen to hate Lin Feng, thought the crowd in the distance. If Lin Feng killed Wen Ao Feng, Ni Chen would be furious and kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Wen Ao Feng calmly, his robe fluttering in the wind.

Wen Ao Feng released his strength, moving forwards and watching Lin Feng closely. He felt humiliated by what Lin Feng had said. Help him become stronger?!

"Wen Ao Feng, Ni Chen is a little dog, and you're his direct disciple, our battle has been planned for a long time. However, I don't want to humiliate you. If you want to give up, then just forget about it," Lin Feng said to Wen Ao Feng calmly.

Wen Ao Feng looked at him coldly and said, "Empty words! You don't respect my teacher, I have to teach you a good lesson."

Emperor Ni Chen was furious, Lin Feng kept calling him a little dog. No matter what, Lin Feng had to die today!

Terrifying cosmic energies surrounded Wen Ao Feng. He jumped forwards and turned into many illusions. Many Wen Ao Feng's illusions charged towards Lin Feng. A powerful vortex appeared. The watchers frowned, Wen Ao Feng was indeed extremely strong. His efforts were futile, however.

Lin Feng released cosmic energies, and quickly formed two layers of armor, one of demon strength and one made of earth energy.

Space distorted around him, and he vanished into the wind. Fists raced towards Lin Feng. Explosive impacts rang out, his armors broke apart, and Wen Ao Feng appeared in front of Lin Feng. His fist shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng groaned, he sensed empty space and destructive cosmic energies penetrated into his body. However, he quickly blocked them, looked at Wen Ao Feng and smiled widely. Wen Ao Feng looked back at him icily.

He condensed more cosmic energies, about to use a spell. How could Lin Feng be smiling? Wen Ao Feng was furious.

“Not bad!” said Lin Feng, smiling indifferently, “Unfortunately, your teacher is a little dog and because of him, you’re not enjoying your capacities to the fullest.”

Lin Feng raised his hand. Wen Ao Feng was surrounded by cosmic energies and retreated quickly. However, a hand caught up with him and slammed into him. He was flung away helplessly.

Lin Feng had just used a little bit of strength.

When Emperor Ni Chen saw that, he was stupefied.

The agreement was a joke, ridiculous. His disciple hadn’t even withstood a single attack. Lin Feng’s physical strength was monstrous!

“Ni Chen, little doggie, you should come and fight instead,” said Lin Feng sharply. Ni Chen frowned. The crowd was shaking with excitement. Was Lin Feng actually challenging Ni Chen?

“Since you want to die, I don’t mind. You disrespectful little kid, I’ll kill you!” shouted Ni Chen, releasing ice-cold wind cosmic energy.

“Since I told you you could come and fight, there’s no need to

find excuses! Back then, when I was in Celestial Qi Castle, you, as a high-level emperor, blocked my way, you wanted me to cripple my own cultivation. How majestic! Back then, I was only a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer. A high-level emperor against a Zun cultivator? Pfff!” Lin Feng smiled mockingly. If Muyi hadn’t helped him, Ni Chen would have killed him!

Ni Chen said to the crowd icily, “Everyone, attack the assholes of Tiantai and kill them all. Don’t let a single one escape.”

When the crowd heard Emperor Ni Chen, they all shivered. Ni Chen was furious. He wanted to kill all the members of Tiantai without exception.

“From now on, Tiantai controls the nine great celestial castles. If anyone dares touch the disciples of Tiantai, I can guarantee you that I will destroy them,” rebutted Lin Feng aggressively. The crowd was frozen with indecision. Would they dare attack?

Those who had recently joined Tiantai looked angry, they felt like chess pieces.

“Those who recently joined Tiantai can leave now and Qing Di Mountain will consider they had nothing to do with that and we won’t kill them,” said Ni Chen, glancing at Tiantai’s members. There were more than a hundred people. They had to make a decision, to become Qing Di Mountain’s enemies or not?

But Lin Feng had proven that he was really strong. It made them feel even more motivated. Lin Feng was an inspiration for them. Someday, they’d be able to fight on his side! The problem was, what would happen if they became the enemies of Qing Di Mountain?

“Tiantai doesn’t force anyone to stay. You can leave Tiantai if you wish. I don’t mind,” said Lin Feng calmly. Tiantai didn’t imprison people. However, Lin Feng wouldn’t let them come back if they left Tiantai. Lin Feng would even be merciless with them.

Some people who weren't motivated and determined left the group. When some people saw that, they followed. After a short time, half of the would-be followers had left. After all, Qing Di Mountain controlled the region, and it had been that way for a very, very long time. They simply didn't dare go against them.

Tiantai's people are strong, they have Ancient scriptures, including great imperial scriptures. They also have incredible skills and techniques. If Tiantai manages to compete with Qing Di Mountain and I leave, I won't have the opportunity to come back, thought the ones who had remained behind bravely. They were gambling with their lives, but they trusted that young man in the sky. He was heroic and strong. They were convinced Tiantai wasn't going to be destroyed.

Finally, after half of the new members of Tiantai left, Lin Feng glanced at the ones remaining calmly. He saw that nobody else and said, "Those who left today won't have the opportunity to come back. People who stayed will all obtain ancient high-level imperial weapons and imperial scriptures."

The people who stayed looked delighted. Even Qing Di Mountain didn't offer high-level imperial weapons and scriptures to their people!

The people who had just left Tiantai immediately regretted it. Had they just missed an incredible opportunity?

Lin Feng had lots of imperial weapons and ancient scriptures. He had spent lots of time in Vast Celestial Ancient City and the Holy City. He had killed many people, and each time, he took their treasures. Concerning Ancient scriptures, some people didn't need them, some people also just needed parts of them.

"Are you deaf, people of the nine great celestial castles?" shouted Ni Chen, icily glancing over the crowd. The last time Yao Ye Island's cultivators had come, they had humiliated him. Now, Lin Feng had built Tiantai in their territory and surprisingly, they

weren't there.

“Celestial Wen Castle will help Emperor Ni Chen!” said someone in the distance. A group of strong cultivators from Celestial Wen Castle arrived.

Lin Feng watched them arrive icily.

Celestial Wen Castle used to control the Wen Clan in the central part of Ba Huang. Celestial Wen Castle and the Wen Clan always tried to be friends with everyone. However, Wen Ao Xue was a member of the assassin union, and Celestial Wen Castle now controlled the small world. Besides, Lin Feng had lived in Celestial Qi Castle and someone had tried to kill him there. Lin Feng had always had doubts and thought that it might be someone from Celestial Wen Castle. Lin Feng didn't understand them.

Now, they were coming to help Qing Di Mountain. They were the first ones to help, they definitely gave Emperor Ni Chen face.

The leader of Celestial Wen Castle had a reason to come out. A short time before, Wen Ao Feng had told him something important. The former Great Emperor of Qing Di Mountain had come back and was in Qing Di Mountain. According to Wen Ao Feng, he had already become a Celestial Emperor. Even if Yao Ye Island helped Lin Feng, he was still in danger.

Two great emperors, of two generations, a Great Emperor and a Celestial Emperor, those two cultivators could make things change as they wished!

Chapter 1824: Fighting Against Ni Chen

“Brother Wen, you’re really nice. I am touched by your kindness, Qing Di Mountain will remember it. Who else from the nine great celestial castles is willing to help?” asked Emperor Ni Chen icily. The other leaders didn’t know if Yao Ye Island was there or not. After all, they couldn’t really fight against Yao Ye Island. They still had to make a decision, however.

Now, what could they do? Who would control this place in the future?

The people of the nine great celestial castles noticed something, Emperor Ni Chen could perfectly deal with Lin Feng, but he hadn’t yet. He was waiting, waiting for them to make a decision.

In the distance, someone appeared. The members of Celestial Qi Castle looked at that person respectfully. Their leader was here!

“Celestial Qi Castle will help Qing Di Mountain, of course! Let’s destroy Tiantai,” said the leader of Celestial Qi Castle icily. Celestial Qi Castle hated Lin Feng, they had to destroy him and his friends. On top of that, if they didn’t kill Lin Feng, maybe he would wipe them out someday. Besides, by helping Qing Di Mountain, they would earn a better position in the region and more influence. Back then, Lin Feng had caused trouble in Celestial Qi Castle and they had also lost control over the small world. Now, it was time for them to rise again.

“The cultivators of Tiantai will die here today.” said the sect leader of the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. The crowd was shaking. Three leaders and Ni Chen were joining hands to deal with Tiantai, four high-level emperors. Tiantai was in danger. They were probably going to be annihilated!

Those who had chosen to stay in Tiantai started shaking. How dangerous!...

“Very good,” Ni Chen smiled. He then said, “Since the six other leaders don’t want to help, I’m not going to force them, either.”

When the three leaders heard Ni Chen, they smiled coldly. After that battle, Qing Di Mountain was going to favor them.

“Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings are going to be wiped off the map of the nine great celestial castles,” retorted Lin Feng icily.

“You are really impatient, but don’t worry, you’re going to die very soon,” rebutted Emperor Ni Chen loftily. He waved his hand and cosmic energies condensed around Lin Feng. A gigantic hand appeared, blotting out the sky.

“Oppress!” shouted Ni Chen icily. It was as if the sky were collapsing, the gigantic hand descended on Lin Feng. Lin Feng sensed the oppressive energies, high-level emperors could easily condense cosmic energies to carry out attacks. The difference between high-level emperors and low-level emperors was gigantic.

Dazzling lights appeared, and scorching hot sun started shining. A sun disc appeared in Lin Feng’s hand and suns started rotating around him.

He waved his hand and a gigantic sun moved towards the gigantic hand which was descending from the sky. Thunderous explosions erupted above them as the gigantic hand exploded. Lin Feng rose up into the air holding his sun disc, looking like a sun god.

“Great Imperial Weapon?” Ni Chen frowned, staring at Lin Feng’s weapon. Was that Lin Feng’s trump card? A Great Imperial Weapon?

The three leaders of the castles were staring at Lin Feng, too. Great Imperial Weapons were extremely rare. They rarely had the opportunity to see such weapons, and surprisingly, Lin Feng had one.

“Indeed, a Great Imperial Weapon. You want it?” Lin Feng smiled coldly. Dazzling lights lit up, and a gigantic chessboard appeared: Celestial Evolution Chessboard! As it floated in the air, Lin Feng jumped on it and it lit up dazzlingly as the pieces on it started moving around.

Is that a Great Imperial Weapon as well?, Ni Chen wondered, staring at the chessboard. The Qi of Celestial Evolution Chessboard wasn't so dominating, so he couldn't see what level it was.

“That Great Imperial Weapon is mine!” said Ni Chen icily. Lin Feng had Great Imperial Weapons, so what? Ni Chen had a high cultivation level, he could steal them from Lin Feng!

“Die!” Ni Chen gestured, a gigantic mountain appeared in the sky above Lin Feng. It started falling from the sky. Lin Feng condensed fire cosmic energies in his sun disc, nine dazzling suns appeared.

“Piss off!” Lin Feng gestured, thunder rolled, and the gigantic mountain broke apart. Ni Chen started forwards as the energy in the air grew thicker Dong! Ni Chen raced towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the impression he had a mountain riding on his back, high-level emperors could easily pressure him. They were much, much stronger than medium-level emperors.

Dong!

Ni Chen jumped again, Lin Feng sensed his blood had started boiling everywhere in his body, as if he were going to explode.

“This is good for my physical body!” Lin Feng relaxed, and let the strength press down on him.

Finally, Ni Chen jumped forward again, the energy he was exuding was terrifying. His hand struck at Lin Feng. Lin Feng might explode if the hand reached him!

“Illusion!” Lin Feng jumped away, Celestial Evolution Chessboard became even more dazzling as space bent. An illusion deployment spell appeared, surrounding Ni Chen within. Inside

the illusion, Ni Chen was surrounded by millions of Lin Feng's.

This chessboard can help him cast deployment spells?, thought Ni Chen. He released his strength again and attacked the illusion. However, nothing happened and on top of that, he saw a gigantic sun moving towards him, preceded by rolling thunder. At the same time, under Ni Chen's feet, marks appeared and a mighty strength rose up and surrounded him. Ni Chen immediately started moving away, but an earth cage appeared under his feet.

Boom!

Endless purple lights appeared in the sky: lightning! Millions of bolts had appeared in the sky and Lin Feng's face appeared among them.

Ni Chen looked at the sky, releasing earth energy to block the lightning. Thunder kept exploding around him. Suddenly, Ni Chen saw another Lin Feng appear, nine suns charging him, so dazzling that he could barely see.

"Why are there two Lin Feng's?" wondered Ni Chen, calmly releasing his strength again. As Ni Chen stared at the new Lin Feng, a third one appeared. Ni Chen pulled a long face. A third Lin Feng had appeared?!

Ni Chen was annoyed. Unfortunately, he didn't have a powerful imperial weapon. He had a few level six and seven imperial weapons, but against Lin Feng's weapons, they were useless.

The three Lin Feng's surrounded him inside the illusion. Ni Chen couldn't really attack while inside the illusion, and started crazily attacking in all directions.

"Die!" Suddenly, a gigantic ancient stone emerged from Ni Chen's third eye and moved towards Lin Feng's silhouettes. Lin Feng's soul shook violently. He knew that Ni Chen could destroy his godly awareness, he was a high-level emperor. His godly awareness was far more powerful than Lin Feng's.

“Hide!” Lin Feng’s three clones hid in the illusion. Ni Chen grimaced. Fighting inside a deployment spell wasn’t easy.

“Ni Chen, back then, you wanted me to cripple my own cultivation. Today, I will cripple your cultivation!” proclaimed Lin Feng. Ni Chen frowned. Then, he saw many of Lin Feng’s clones reappear.

“There.” Ni Chen picked out two clones, they had Great Imperial Weapons in their hands, he had to attack those two.

As expected, the two clones attacked and charged at Ni Chen. At the same time, a third Lin Feng was carving more deployment marks.

“Hmph!” Ni Chen smiled coldly. An armor made of earth energy appeared around him, and he raced ahead. He had to kill Lin Feng, who was carving deployment marks, but he couldn’t forget about the two others, either.

“Imprison!” shouted Ni Chen icily. The Lin Feng who was carving marks appeared in a cage, earth strength surrounded him and constricted him. That clone pulled a long face.

“Die!” shouted Ni Chen furiously. A gigantic hand thrust at Lin Feng.

“Argh!” Energies rose to the skies. A purple tank appeared and streaked across the sky. However, at that moment, Ni Chen was determined to kill Lin Feng. The problem was that Lin Feng’s clones were all around him.

“Die!” Ni Chen was fearless. A Lin Feng in the air released cosmic energies and attacked. It had to be his real body.

“Die!” However, at that moment, another Lin Feng appeared on Ni Chen’s left, and Ni Chen’s expression shifted. How could this happen?

“Piss off!” shouted Ni Chen furiously. At the same time, another Lin Feng appeared on Ni Chen’s right. Suddenly, Ni Chen had a

bad premonition.

“Oh no!” Ni Chen suddenly turned around and saw Kalpa lights move towards him at full speed. His armor broke apart, he was shocked. And a fist of pure physical strength attacked him directly. His heart started pounding violently.

Chapter 1825: Death Better Than Life

“How could that happen? Are the clones with the Great Imperial Weapons not real? Is the third one real?” Ni Chen’s face turned deathly pale as the fist landed. Destructive Deva-Mara Kalpa strength blew throughout his body.

Ni Chen didn’t have the strength to strike back. His body turned grey.

“Die!” Ni Chen had the sensation that his body was going to explode. He shouted furiously and released all his strength towards Lin Feng.

However, at that moment, bolts of lightning assaulted him. Cosmic strength started condensing as if were about to tear him apart.

“I can easily kill you,” Lin Feng stated icily. He condensed physical strength and punched Ni Chen again. Ni Chen coughed up blood.

“Die, die, die!” Ni Chen was going crazy. He condensed soul strength, trying to attack Lin Feng’s godly awareness.

“You want to die!” Lin Feng punched Ni Chen’s head, and Ni Chen’s soul shook violently. He had the feeling he was really going mad. Lin Feng only stared at him icily.

Ni Chen wanted to leave his physical body. “If you dare leave your body, I’ll crush it and you won’t have one anymore,” Lin Feng said instantly, and Ni Chen immediately returned his body. His physical body was badly injured, he was very weak, and if he left his body, Lin Feng could crush it. His soul would be without a body and he would become weaker and weaker and would then disperse. He might be able to use the Body Capture technique, but that was easier said than done.

“Don’t worry, I won’t kill you, I’ll just cripple your cultivation. If

I wanted to kill you, I wouldn't have made such efforts!" said Lin Feng emotionlessly. He kept punching Ni Chen, whose veins exploded one after another. Indeed, Lin Feng also wanted to practice and battle. Otherwise, he could have brought Ni Chen into his soul world. There Ni Chen wouldn't have been able to use cosmic energies properly, and Lin Feng would have easily killed him.

At that moment, outside of the illusion, the crowd was staring at Celestial Evolution Chessboard. They were wondering how the battle was going. Why hadn't the fighters coming back yet?

At that moment, the illusion gradually dispersed. Finally, the two silhouettes appeared in the people's field of vision. Their hearts started pounding violently.

At that moment, Ni Chen was softly lying on the ground, as if he had had no bones. He looked furious and desperate. Nobody dared say anything.

"Emperor Ni Chen lost. What a tragedy for him!" The crowd was astonished and staring at Lin Feng. A Zun cultivator who had the strength of a low-level emperor had defeated Ni Chen, a high-level emperor of Qing Di Mountain?

Tiantai's people clenched their fists. They had made the right decision! They had decided to stay in Tiantai, and Lin Feng had defeated a high-level emperor! He had won! It was an incredible achievement!

The members of the nine great celestial castles looked furious. Lin Feng's words weren't empty words. He could really pose a threat to them!

Lin Feng had defeated Ni Chen, which meant that he could also fight against the leaders of the nine great celestial castles.

"He dared make his disciple fight against Lin Feng? That moronic old dude is ridiculous!" Tantai said heartily at that moment. Lin

Feng had defeated a high-level emperor, that was an unbelievable feat, even if high-level emperors here weren't as strong as the high-level emperors in the Holy City. There was a huge difference between Lin Feng and him, such achievements were rare.

Yuan Fei, Ban Ruo, and the others were astonished, their mouths gaping. They had never thought that Lin Feng could be so scary.

“Let Emperor Ni Chen off!” shouted the leader of Celestial Wen Castle icily. The three sect leaders walked forwards and released their energies, staring at Lin Feng. They had to kill him!

They had chosen the other side, they were Lin Feng's enemies!

Bzzz!

A strong wind started blowing. Jun Mo Xi, Qing Feng, and Wu moved quickly and landed next to Lin Feng. They wanted to get involved? They wanted to fight against high-level emperors? The crowd was stunned at the implications.

A piercing whistle rose. A supernatural bird appeared in the crowd's field of vision.

“Three-legged Golden Crow, a supernatural bird!” The crowd was stupefied. The bird next to Lin Feng was dazzling and gigantic, and wearing a sun helm. Sunlight surrounded his body, and his strength was oppressive. Wu looked at the three leaders icily, making them pause.

“A Great Imperial Weapon again! It's much more powerful than Lin Feng's sun disc. Such weapons are perfect for sun supernatural birds!”

Jun Mo Xi started releasing Hell energies too. His Qi rose to the skies, and a spear appeared in his hand, a Hell spear containing the strength of the King of Hell.

Qing Feng also released energies, she was surrounded by black lights and bestial Qi dashed to the skies. She was wearing a terrifying black Taoist robe made of feathers. Even though she

didn't condense energies in it, the crowd guessed that it was a weapon.

All those young people had terrifying Great Imperial Weapons. Who could compete with them?

"Who are you? Lin Feng, which group did you join?" cried out Ni Chen. They all had Great Imperial Weapons. A group couldn't have so many Great Imperial Weapons without a Celestial Emperor backing them. And all those people had special bodies too, their Qi was terrifying. The Three-legged Golden Crow was a supernatural bird, Qing Feng controlled several sorts of cosmic energies, Jun Mo Xi had a monarchic Hell Qi, such people couldn't belong to the same group.

"You are not qualified to speak with me," spat Wu sharply. It was the second time that he talked down to Ni Chen, and the second time that he humiliated him. The first time, the crowd wondered, but now nobody dared underestimate Wu. Even the leaders of Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings didn't dare say anything.

The Golden Crows were known to be unruly and obstinate. Was he from Yao Ye Island?

"Now, piss off and go back. Wait for me, I'll come to destroy your groups," Lin Feng said to the three leaders icily.

Destroy their groups?

They were three high-level emperors, but Lin Feng had already destroyed Emperor Ni Chen. His strength was unfathomable and enigmatic. He could probably compete with those three people. Wu and the two others were also very strong. Those three emperors had to be careful. Even if they managed to defeat Lin Feng, killing him wouldn't be easy.

Qing Di Mountain has two great emperors. This battle is not worth it. Qing Di Mountain can take care of themselves, thought

the leader of Celestial Wen Castle, before saying to Lin Feng icily, “Let Emperor Ni Chen go.”

“I don’t need that piece of trash. You can take him back. From now on, Tiantai determines the laws and rules of the region. Qing Di Mountain has nothing to say anymore,” Lin Feng snarled back, before throwing Emperor Ni Chen away. The leader of Celestial Wen Castle jumped up and caught him.

Emperor Ni Chen was very weak and seriously injured. He had wanted to kill Lin Feng, but he had failed. Now, the great emperors would deal with Lin Feng. Even if he had Great Imperial Weapons, they were useless against such powerful folk. Besides, the great emperors of Qing Di Mountain would love those weapons!

“Aren’t you leaving? Are you waiting for death?” Lin Feng asked the three leaders icily.

The three leaders departed quickly, but the crowd was still there. They all watched those incredible young people.

“Why didn’t we kill them?” Wu asked Lin Feng. He had been ready to fight. Surprisingly, Lin Feng hadn’t killed them.

“We’re not in a rush. We’ll have opportunities to fight against them. They can wait for us,” replied Lin Feng. Then, his silhouette flickered before he landed in front of the white-bearded old man of the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. He said, “Look, the people of the Palace of the Medicinal Kings abandoned you. You’re pathetic.”

The white-bearded old man looked extremely miserable. Lin Feng had defeated Ni Chen, he understood that he was a piece of trash in comparison with Lin Feng and his friends. Death was better than such a life!

Chapter 1826: No Choice

The white-bearded old man looked extremely weak as he said, “I’m going to die now, I guess. Please, before I die, could you please tell me where you are from? I really want to know.”

The old man had seen Lin Feng defeat Ni Chen. These young people had Great Imperial Weapons. He knew that Lin Feng and those people had to belong to some incredible and powerful group. Yao Ye Island’s Great Emperor was enigmatic and unfathomable, but he was only a Great Emperor. From what he knew, there was no Celestial Emperor in Yao Ye Island, so they couldn’t have Great Imperial Weapons. Even if they did, they wouldn’t have given them to these young people.

“Do you know anything about the central part of the Dark Night Region?” asked Lin Feng, lowering his eyes to look at the weak old man on the ground.

“I’ve heard of the Dark Night Region. I know that there are eighteen main cities there and that among those, three of them are major cities. There are incredible strong cultivators there. Emperors there are common, and there are even many great emperors, Celestial Emperors... I also know that there are universities in those cities which accept only incredible geniuses. I also know that some people who amazed the whole world live there. Initially, I wanted to stay here for another ten years and go on a trip. I wanted to do some sightseeing, explore the world, and become stronger. Unfortunately, I’m doomed now...”

The old man looked miserable and extremely sad. He had lived for a thousand years, spending most of his life in region of the nine great celestial castles. He had traveled a bit, but he had always come back quickly because he was notorious in the nine great celestial castles, but in the outside world, people didn’t even know of him. He had been a medium-level emperor for a very long time, so initially, he wanted to go and travel, maybe that he would have

had the opportunity to become a high-level emperor in the outside world.

“We come from those central places in the Dark Night Region. You can die content,” said Lin Feng in a low voice.

The white-bearded old man’s eyes glittered. He looked at Lin Feng deeply, and then he at Wu and the others. Then, he smiled indifferently, “I see. Indeed, I can die content.”

“Go back to Tiantai,” said Lin Feng suddenly. In a flash, everybody left. The crowd watched Tiantai’s people go, their expressions were strange. They weren’t going to forget this day for a very long time. They had seen a low-level emperor defeat a high-level emperor, they had seen Great Imperial Weapons... And it wasn’t over. If Qing Di Mountain didn’t manage to destroy Tiantai, Tiantai would rise and they would take control of the region.

The white-bearded old man closed his eyes. Without wasting time, he killed himself. The Palace of the Medicinal Kings had abandoned him, he had become useless, a piece of trash, living had already become pointless for him.

However, someone didn’t leave: Tantai! He stayed in the air, glaring at those who had abandoned Tiantai icily, and declared, “Lin Feng said he forgave you. However, I am not as nice. You came to Tiantai to obtain precious treasures, and when we were in danger, you betrayed Tiantai? Do you think such things are possible?”

Those people suddenly looked petrified. Crackling and shattering sounds spread in the air as if all his bones were about to explode.

A lion roared and the sky appeared to start breaking. The atmosphere became eerily silent.

Qi rolled in waves, and endless lions emerged. Thunder shook, and people started exploding one after another.

“Hmph! Those who didn’t die are lucky,” said Tantai icily, before

his mountainous figure blurred and was gone. The survivor's hearts were pounding. Even though he was young, he was very aggressive and very strong!

Lin Feng and the others headed back to Tiantai. However, the atmosphere was lively in the nine great celestial castles, especially in the buffer zone. People were all talking about the same thing: Tiantai!

Tiantai remained discreet on the next day. Emperor Ni Chen had already informed the great emperors of Qing Di Mountain about Tiantai. He had told them everything, including the Great Imperial Weapons. The two emperors didn't really care about what happened in that region, but Great Imperial Weapons were interesting to them. Besides, Qing Di Mountain had also been humiliated!

Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings joined hands. Many strong cultivators from the two groups began gathering. People kept traveling and back and forth between the two groups. Lin Feng could attack anytime, so they were waiting for the great emperors of Qing Di Mountain to go and destroy Tiantai.

In Tiantai, a new group of people appeared. This time, their target wasn't Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, or the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, but the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

Back then, Lin Feng had landed in the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and had caused trouble. Therefore, the crowd there was worried. Nobody could stop Lin Feng and his friends, that was plain after he defeated Ni Chen. Apart from the leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, nobody could compete with Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng wants to see the sect leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. Everybody there heard him. Very quickly, a group of people came out of a palace and rose up into the air. Lin Feng was standing in the air a thousand meters away from them.

The leader of the group was wearing a golden robe. He smiled in careful greeting at Lin Feng, “Brother Lin Feng, you’re a hero. Why have you come to the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?”

“I said it for everyone to hear. I’m going to destroy Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. From now on, Tiantai determines the laws and rules of the region. Qing Di Mountain has nothing to say anymore. Does the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness accept that?” Lin Feng asked clearly. He sounded calm and serene, but at the same time, deadly aggressive. The members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness pulled a long face.

Lin Feng had defeated Ni Chen. His friends and he had also killed many people from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. Now he was at the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and straightforwardly told them that they were now the rulers of the region. How arrogant!

“We don’t want to get involved,” said the sect leader with a bland smile. He didn’t agree, but he didn’t refuse either. Qing Di Mountain and Lin Feng were now competing for the leadership of the region. Expressing an opinion wasn’t wise in such times.

“You don’t want to get involved?” repeated Lin Feng, smiling coldly. Was that possible?

“Back then, when I left, you wanted to kill me. Today, I’m here and I didn’t come for revenge, I’m giving you an opportunity. And now you’re telling me you don’t want to get involved? Ridiculous,” said Lin Feng coldly. “I’m asking you one more time, do you accept

these words or not?”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he took out his Celestial Evolution Chessboard, the pieces started moving, and fell lights glittered. The members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness shivered. They had to make a decision, otherwise Lin Feng would attack them!

The leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness grimaced. Lin Feng posed a threat to them. If they went against Tiantai, then Tiantai would destroy them!

“If you use strength to take over the region, then of course we agree. We have no choice,” replied the leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Tiantai was dangerous!

“Ok, great. You don’t need to worry about anything then. Now, let’s get ready, gather the strong cultivators of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, we’re going to Celestial Qi Castle. You have ten minutes!” said Lin Feng. The members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness were astonished. As expected, Lin Feng wanted them to fight against Celestial Qi Castle on their side. They had no choice in the matter.

“Sect Leader, did you hear me? You have ten minutes,” Lin Feng said impatiently.

“Alright, we’re coming,” sighed the leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Then he waved his hand, and strong cultivators from his sect gathered around him. Lin Feng noticed Zhou Tian Xiao in the crowd.

Lin Feng looked at him on purpose. Zhou Tian Xiao noticed that Lin Feng was looking at him, but didn’t dare look him in the eyes. He remembered what had happened in the small world, he had told Lin Feng he didn’t deserve being called a cultivator, and now he was terrified when Lin Feng looked at him.

Lin Feng smiled mockingly and turned his head. Zhou Tian Xiao

clenched his fists, but he couldn't do anything. Lin Feng and Zhou Tian Xiao weren't part of the same world anymore. In front of Lin Feng, it was Zhou Tian Xiao who didn't deserve being called a cultivator anymore. Lin Feng despised him.

“Let's go then!” Lin Feng ordered the strong cultivators of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and led them away.

At that moment, the members of Celestial Qi Castle were under great pressure. Lin Feng had shocked everyone with his strength, they were worried. Maybe he would come after them? What would they do in that case?

In a palace of Celestial Qi Castle, the leader asked someone, “Did Emperor Wen say when the great emperors were going to come?”

“He told me that Emperor Ni Chen had already informed them and that they were on the way. Don't worry, we can stay with our allies, and nobody will harm us. When the great emperors come, no problem,” replied that person. The three groups were going to gather to deal with the Tiantai and destroy them!

Chapter 1827: Easy Targets

When the leader of Celestial Wen Castle heard that, he remained silent. Lin Feng was terrifying. If he came to Celestial Wen Castle, the situation was bad for them. He could really destroy Celestial Wen Castle. Gathering with their allies was the best thing to do. However, Celestial Qi Castle was gigantic. They certainly couldn't bring all of their cultivators over to Celestial Wen Castle. And even if they did, the two great emperors would then get rid of Tiantai and after that, what? Everybody would make fun of Celestial Qi Castle in the region. Everybody would laugh if Celestial Qi Castle was so scared of Lin Feng that they had to escape.

“Leader, even if Tiantai and his friends come here, he won't do anything if you and the others are not here,” said that cultivator of Celestial Wen Castle. The leader's eyes twinkled. This guy would help him find an excuse to leave.

“You're right. Help me call the most outstanding cultivators of Celestial Qi Castle and tell them to gather, we're going to Celestial Wen Castle,” said the leader. His interlocutor quickly went out and called all the direct descendants of Celestial Qi Castle.

After a short time, they had gathered in the palace, and the leader of Celestial Qi Castle led them away.

—

After they left, Lin Feng and the others arrived in Celestial Qi Castle and released Qi.

Lin Feng and the others directly landed in the central part of Celestial Qi Castle and shouted, “People from Tiantai and the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness have come to visit you!”

Nobody replied to him though. Only one person appeared and looked at Lin Feng and the others. He shouted, “The leader was invited over by Celestial Wen Castle. They're in Celestial Wen

Castle now. You can go there if you want to see them.”

“They ran away?” Tantai looked surprised and shouted, “They’re hiding. Why say they were invited by Celestial Wen Castle? Ridiculous.”

Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling. He fixedly stared at that guy. The man was terrified. Death energies penetrated into his eyes. His life was being corroded.

“Die,” Lin Feng ordered coldly. That person turned grey and collapsed. How weak!

“Lin Feng, you are so mean!” sneered someone at that moment, and some other people appeared.

“Mean? When Celestial Qi Castle humiliated people in the small world, nobody said they were mean. Now, your leader has run away and abandoned you, does he think that Celestial Qi Castle will not be destroyed because he ran away?” said Lin Feng icily. In the past, they were prey for Celestial Qi Castle, but now Celestial Qi Castle was too weak to deal with Lin Feng and his friends. That was the law of the jungle. Strong cultivators could kill weak cultivators. Many people had died because of them, and many people had become slaves. If Lin Feng hadn’t saved Yuan Fei and the others, they would have perished at Celestial Qi Castle.

“Leader, I think you can take care of Celestial Qi Castle,” said Lin Feng to the leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. He glanced at Lin Feng coldly, but he had no choice.

“Alright,” said the leader. He waved and said to his people, “Kill everyone who has broken through to the Huang Qi layer and cripple the cultivation of everyone of the Zun Qi layer and under.”

He’s quite cruel, thought Lin Feng. He was surprised. Celestial Qi Castle was going to be annihilated!

“Lin Feng, I’m sorry, but it seems that the core members of Celestial Qi Castle are not here anymore, we have to do things

quickly and then go to Celestial Wen Castle to kill the rest,” said the leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness emotionlessly. Since they had agreed to help Lin Feng, they did their best. Celestial Qi Castle could threaten the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, so they had to kill everyone.

“No rush,” said Lin Feng with an agreeable smile. He understood what the other meant.

At the same time, in the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, other events were taking place. Some people had gone to kill them, but this time, the killers weren’t people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and they weren’t from Tiantai, either. They were from Celestial Si Kong Castle!

How could Lin Feng forget Celestial Si Kong Castle? He hadn’t. As he was on his way to the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, he had sent Hu Yue, Jun Mo Xi, and some others to Celestial Si Kong Castle. He had told them to give them a choice just like he had done with the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Initially, Celestial Si Kong Castle wanted to go and hide in the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, but in the end, they had had no choice since the heroic cultivators of Tiantai had arrived. Tiantai had forced them to come with them to the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. Lin Feng’s enemies were slowly being annihilated.

Finally, Celestial Wen Castle was the last one remaining. Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were already depopulated. Soon, Tiantai’s cultivators would head to Celestial Wen Castle. The situation looked bad for them.

Many people rushed over to Celestial Wen Castle to watch. Tiantai, Celestial Si Kong Castle, and the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness were all heading to Celestial Wen Castle.

When everybody landed, the emperors of both sides faced one

another. The members of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were furious, their eyes all bloodshot and staring at their enemies icily. They already knew that the territories and people of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings had been annihilated.

“Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, Celestial Si Kong Castle, very good!” shouted someone icily. The strong cultivators of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were devastated. They didn’t know how Tiantai had destroyed their people and territories, but the result was obvious.

“A wise man understands and submits to circumstances. Since Tiantai now reigns over the region, they decided to join us, that’s logical,” said Lin Feng calmly. The members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle were furious, but didn’t show it. They initially didn’t intend to follow Lin Feng, but he had threatened and forced them. They had had no choice in the matter.

“Lin Feng, the great emperors of Qing Di Mountain are coming, you will die soon!” shouted the sect leader of Celestial Qi Castle.

Lin Feng looked at him disdainfully, “Since it’s that way, I’ll destroy you before they come. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle listen to my orders.”

Lin Feng released a terrifying Qi. Six extremely strong groups were facing off against one another.

“Kill them!” ordered Lin Feng, pointing at those people. The strong cultivators of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle rushed forward and threw themselves at the enemies. Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings’s people also ran towards their enemies. The cultivators of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the the Celestial Kings of Medicine seemed to be the strongest, fury gave them wings.

What a terrifying battle!, thought some people in the distance.

When the battle started, the cultivators of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle were furious. Lin Feng was releasing a powerful Qi, but he remained motionless. All the members of Tiantai actually remained motionless.

Bastards!, thought those people, but it was useless, they couldn't do anything. The members of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings had already gone crazy. After realizing that Tiantai wasn't participating, they fought even harder. They wanted to destroy the cultivators of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle as fast as possible.

Tiantai was making all those people fight, the battle was tragic. After that battle, they'd become the only winners, they weren't losing anyone. The other forces were weakening, however. Those who didn't participate in the battles were those who had never had any problem with Lin Feng.

Emperors fell from the sky, cosmic energies kept dispersing as great cultivators died. The watchers were astonished at the sight.

Lin Feng finally moved, his Celestial Evolution Chessboard appeared and became gigantic. He also took out his sun disc.

Jun Mo Xi took out his Hell spear. Wu turned into a bird, his sun helm dazzling. Qing Feng was wearing her Taoist robe made of feathers.

Hu Yue was smiling as she watched all this. That little boy was impressive, she was pleasantly surprised. She wasn't worried at all, she could just watch. She didn't need to help them.

Hou Qing Lin and the others were also on the side, they sealed off the area.

Lin Feng dashed ahead, dazzling lights shining about him. His chess pieces kept moving. He also started fighting. It was an incredible sight to see.

“Die!” Lin Feng jumped forwards, deployment lights all around him. The lights touched a strong Celestial Qi Castle cultivator, who was reduced to ashes in the blink of an eye. He was an easy target, like a turtle in a jar. From now on, Tiantai controlled the region!

Chapter 1828: Strong Cultivators Landing

The crowd was astounded. This time, the situation of the nine great celestial castles was truly going to change drastically.

Many people fought. Five of the nine great celestial castles were here, and so was Tiantai. There were many strong cultivators. The members of Celestial Wen Castle were getting crushed, injured or killed one after another. This battle was shocking.

Tiantai's people finally started fighting. Lin Feng was holding a Great Imperial Weapon, and was continually killing people. Each time he moved, he killed someone, and another strong cultivator fell from the sky.

Jun Mo Xi and the others were merciless. Jun Mo Xi's Hell spear turned into a million gloomy spears. Each time someone tried to pass him, he killed them.

The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle couldn't do much; they had to fight, they had to kill. Tiantai's people were just killing easy targets, the people who tried to escape. They were there to kill. Lin Feng and the others had Great Imperial Weapons, nobody could compete with them. The leaders of the opposite side were fighting against the leaders of Celestial Si Kong Castle and the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. They were also trying to buy time, hoping the great emperors of Qing Di Mountain would arrive.

—

Ni Chen was standing at the top of a castle in Celestial Wen Castle, watching the great war. He was astonished. Tiantai was truly cruel the way there were taking over the nine great celestial castles.

The great emperors of Qing Di Mountain are going to arrive soon, you will die when they arrive!, thought Ni Chen. His cultivation

had been crippled, but he still looked furious, hoping Lin Feng and his friends would be killed quickly.

Emperors kept falling from the sky one after another. Emperor Ni Chen's heart was pounding. So many strong cultivators were dying, what a tragedy, they were dying so quickly...

—

At that moment, a strong wind started whistling. A terrifying and oppressive energy invaded the atmosphere. All the fighters started trembling.

“Stop!” shouted a very loud voice. Someone new appeared and descended from the sky. That person looked calm and serene, majestic and dignified. People who were fighting like madmen stopped and raised their heads to watch. The cultivators of Celestial Wen Castle were ecstatic. Finally, the great emperor of Qing Di Mountain, it had to be!

“Great Emperor Qing!” Ni Chen looked crazy with joy. Finally, Great Emperor Qing had arrived! Emperor Ni Chen started crying, his heart was pounding, and his cheeks were flushed. Great Emperor Qing was going to avenge him, he was going to kill Lin Feng and destroy Tiantai!

The silhouette in the sky became more and more distinct. The crowd had thought they'd see an old man, but instead, a young man appeared. He was remarkably young, but his expression was sharp and fearsome. Great Emperor Qing was old, but his cultivation level was so high that he had rejuvenated.

It's a soul, thought Lin Feng, watching the silhouette in the sky. The Great Emperor glanced at Lin Feng and the other, and at their Great Imperial Weapons. He said coldly, “Tiantai, come and talk!”

Lin Feng rose up into the air. He was on his Celestial Evolution Chessboard and he holding his sun disc. He looked remarkably calm. Suddenly, a terrifying and oppressive energy surrounded

him. His soul was shaking, as if the great emperor could kill him anytime.

Lin Feng just frowned and glanced at him coldly.

“You insolent little boy, be polite and respectful when you see a great emperor!” said Great Emperor Qing coldly, and the pressure on Lin Feng’s body became more intense.

“You’re just a soul,” retorted Lin Feng coldly. Great Emperor Qing grunted icily and released even more strength.

“You insolent little bastard!” said Great Emperor Qing. Lin Feng groaned icily, the oppressive strength was painful. His sun disc became even more dazzling as it released more energies. Lin Feng rose higher up in the air and stared at Great Emperor Qing. They were at the same level in the air, which was a sign of disrespect. Lin Feng should have been lower than him.

“Since you’re here, I wanted to tell you something. From now on, Tiantai rules over the region. Qing Di Mountain has nothing to say here anymore. We determine the rules here now!” Lin Feng stated clearly and distinctly.

People’s hearts were pounding. Was Lin Feng insane? He dared talk to Great Emperor Qing that way?

“You want to die!” Ni Chen blurted out eagerly, staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was going to bring about his own destruction.

Great Emperor Qing hadn’t expected that Lin Feng would dare talk to him like that. He frowned and said, “Do you know who I am?”

“If you come with your real body, we’ll talk!” shouted Lin Feng icily. Then, he slashed away, his Celestial Evolution Chessboard streaked across the sky. At the same time, his sun disc moved towards Great Emperor Qing. Great Emperor Qing’s soul was suddenly surrounded by lights, it was as if a sun had fallen on him, completely warping the space.

“Lin Feng is acting recklessly!”

Thunder rang out, and Great Emperor Qing’s soul was destroyed. People’s hearts were pounding violently. Lin Feng dared humiliate Great Emperor Qing?

Dong!

In the distance, a strong wind started blowing and clouds appeared as a mighty wind swept across everyone. People’s faces changed. Great Emperor Qing was arriving physically!

As expected, everybody remained silent as Great Emperor Qing appeared. He flashed and landed in front of Lin Feng, releasing a monstrous Qi.

At that moment, Wu and the others rushed over and came up next to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was strong, but he couldn’t compete with a great emperor.

“I am here. What do you want to talk about?” demanded Great Emperor Qing icily. He gestured and a mountain appeared to loom over Lin Feng. He could make cosmic energies appear in the blink of an eye, already in perfect symbiosis with the earth and the sky. He was a great emperor, he didn’t need to do anything to condense cosmic energies.

“You’re here? Well, piss off!” said Wu when he saw that Great Emperor Qing was attacking Lin Feng, “If Qing Di Mountain dares get involved, they will be annihilated.”

“Are you threatening me?” Great Emperor Qing asked Wu icily.

“Indeed. I am threatening you!” retorted Wu aggressively. Then, he took out a talisman and broke it. In a flash, an explosion rang out as a bestial Qi rose to the skies, the atmosphere turning into an ocean of flames. A gigantic supernatural bird appeared, its burning eyes massive.

“Wu, who’s bullying you?” asked the older Golden Crow. Flames were still burning, and the shaken crowd couldn’t see clearly.

What or who was that supernatural bird?

Great Emperor Qing's contemptuous expression changed drastically. What a pressure! His eyes were nearly popping out. He looked at Wu and the others with new eyes. Who were these people?

"Qing Di Mountain, Great Emperor Qing, nice to meet you, Master," said Great Emperor Qing, bowing before the gigantic bird. He was afraid, he didn't want to offend someone like that.

The bird looked at Great Emperor Qing emotionlessly, but at that moment, more overwhelming energies swept past them, and another cloud appeared.

The crowd was shaken even more. Another terrifying cultivator was coming?

Ni Chen was stupefied, but there was hope. This time, Great Emperor Qing Senior was there!

Ni Chen hadn't thought that Wu had such an incredible background. But Great Emperor Qing Senior could probably do something.

"Celestial Emperor." Great Emperor Qing bowed before Celestial Emperor Qing Senior. A Celestial Emperor was there, even Great Emperor Qing had to bow before him. The crowd couldn't imagine how strong a Celestial Emperor was. Was a great war going to start?

The leader of Celestial Wen Castle was astonished. The situation kept evolving. Who was going to win?

"I finally arrived." The newcomer smiled at the silhouette, he knew how strong the supernatural bird was. "Master, children are just fighting, we are sorry for the inconvenience."

When the crowd heard that, they were completely astonished. How strong was that bird?

“Little Qing, apologize! That’s an incredible cultivator from the Animal World in Vast Celestial Ancient City,” shouted Great Emperor Qing Senior to Great Emperor Qing furiously. Great Emperor Qing was petrified. The Animal World in Vast Celestial Ancient City, he had obviously heard about them before. His expression twisted in shock before recovering.

“I am sorry, Great Master!” apologized Great Emperor Qing, bowing deeply.

Ni Chen’s face turned deathly pale. He looked hopeless. The two great emperors were bowing before these people. Who were these people?

The Celestial Emperor looked at Great Emperor Qing and said, “Why didn’t you call me first?”

“Celestial Emperor, this is the territory of the nine great celestial castles, I didn’t want to disturb you,” admitted Great Emperor Qing. He didn’t know what to say. He didn’t understand either. The nine great celestial castles were a trivial and insignificant territory, what was going on? Why had strong people from the Animal World come there?

“Hmph!” The Celestial Emperor groaned icily. He looked at Lin Feng and his friends and smiled wryly, “I’ve heard about what happened. I knew it was you. Luckily, I didn’t waste time and hurried over.”

“Little Qing, come here,” ordered Celestial Emperor tightly. He pointed at Lin Feng and the others and said, “These are incredible students from Champion University in the Holy City. The Golden Crow is from the Animal World, there’s also the heir of the King of Hell Palace! After what happened, I think you should apologize!”

Great Emperor Qing’s heart was pounding. He hoped that damn Ni Chen would die! What a bastard!

Chapter 1829: Leaving Sorrowfully

Great Emperor Qing traveled a lot. He was bored in Qing Di Mountain, he had nothing to do there and he couldn't progress if he stayed there. He just practiced in Qing Di Mountain when he returned there. Most of the time, he was out traveling. He knew about Champion University and the other universities in the Holy City.

These young people were from Vast Celestial Ancient City, the Animal World, the King of Hell Palace, Champion University... no wonder that they had Great Imperial Weapons. Even though they weren't very strong yet, at least compared to him, they had terrifying backgrounds. Besides, Great Emperor Qing Senior seemed to know them.

Now he had to apologize before these young people. That was difficult as a Great Emperor, but he had no choice. He lowered his head.

"I made a mistake. Please forgive me," said Great Emperor Qing to Lin Feng and the others.

Lin Feng just looked at him and repeated, "From now on, this place belongs to Tiantai, and Tiantai determines the rules from now on. Qing Di Mountain probably doesn't mind, right?"

"We understand," said Great Emperor Qing calmly. Tiantai had all the advantages now. They couldn't infuriate them.

"Thank you, Great Emperor Qing," Lin Feng said indifferently.

At that moment, bestial Qi rose to the skies. The old Golden Crow released a burning hot Qi and said, "Since it's that way, I'm off!"

The bestial Qi dispersed, and the bird disappeared.

Lin Feng slowly turned to Great Emperor Qing Senior and smiled. "Master Duan Mu, how come you're Celestial Emperor Qing?"

Celestial Emperor Qing was actually Duan Mu Celestial Emperor!

“Why couldn’t I be?” asked Duan Mu Celestial Emperor, grinning. “When I broke through to the Huang Qi layer, I realized I had several talents. I understood weapons, and I was good at proper cultivation, too. Why couldn’t I use two social statuses in such conditions?”

Lin Feng was surprised, but laughed. Indeed, Duan Mu could use two social statuses. He had practiced cultivation really hard in Qing Di Mountain, and then he had gone to the Gold Fire Tower and become a Great Scholastic Master of Weapon Manufacturing Arts. Then, he had become a great emperor and had taken control of Qing Di Mountain. At the same time, he also had a particular social status in the Gold Fire Tower.

“I understand!” said Lin Feng.

Duan Mu smiled wryly, “Luckily, I guessed that it was you guys. Otherwise, the situation could have been different. Little Qing is my heir. Don’t be mad at him. Qing Di Mountain is still Qing Di Mountain, but don’t worry, we won’t get involved in your things.”

The crowd was astonished and speechless. Duan Mu and Lin Feng knew each other! Besides, he was asking Lin Feng not to be mad at Great Emperor Qing, the opposite would have been more appropriate. He should have asked Great Emperor Qing not to be mad at those young people!

“Master Duan Mu, we are not planning anything, and all this has nothing to do with Qing Di Mountain. The problem was Ni Chen that little dog, as well as a few despicable people. They tarnished Qing Di Mountain’s reputation,” said Lin Feng.

Duan Mu Celestial Emperor laughed and said, “From now on, Ni Chen is not a member of Qing Di Mountain anymore. You can deal with him as you wish. And Qing Di Mountain’s people won’t get involved in your things. Remember to come and visit me when you have time.”

“I will!” nodded Lin Feng. Then, Duan Mu looked at Great Emperor Qing and said, “Little Qing, let’s go.”

Great Emperor Qing was speechless as he left with Duan Mu. When he had arrived, he was loud, and now he was leaving silently. Tiantai could deal with those people by themselves....

The crowd understood that the nine great celestial castles were going to change, and things were going to be better for Celestial Summer Castle and the others. Luckily, they hadn’t helped Tiantai’s enemies. The leader of Celestial Wen Castle was impotently furious. Great Emperor Qing Senior knew Lin Feng!

The members of Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings were crushed. They had been waiting for the great emperors the whole time, they had thought the great emperors would save them. In the end, Duan Mu hadn’t helped them, and they could consider themselves lucky that Duan Mu hadn’t attacked them. Regarding Ni Chen, he had been abandoned by everyone.

Ni Chen was almost dead, he looked desperate. He was so happy to see the great emperors arrive, he had thought Lin Feng would die quickly. In the end, he had been abandoned. That was a true descent into hell for him. He was doomed!

“From now on, Tiantai is the governing party of the region. Now, I give you the order to destroy Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. Everyone can attack.” said Lin Feng calmly.

Suddenly, Qi rose to the skies. The members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Celestial Si Kong Castle didn’t hesitate at all, they started attacking at full strength. They couldn’t infuriate Lin Feng anymore. He had friends who were Celestial Emperors!

Lin Feng and his friends watched the massacre. Strong cultivators were destroying Celestial Wen Castle, and more and

more strong cultivators appeared. Celestial Wen Castle's cultivators were furious.

Tiantai was rising. Now, Tiantai ruled over the region, and nobody could change that!

Seven days later, many things had changed in the region. The atmosphere was very lively in Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. People were constructing new buildings.

Of course, those three cities weren't called Celestial Wen Castle, Celestial Qi Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings anymore. They had only one name: Tiantai!

At the same time, Tiantai continued recruiting people. Many young people from the nine great celestial castles wanted to join Tiantai. For them, joining Tiantai was an honor. Those who had joined before and hadn't betrayed Tiantai were extremely happy. Those who had betrayed Tiantai and were still alive couldn't join Tiantai anymore and regretted everything.

The situation wasn't as tragic as seven days before anymore, the battles were over. The landscape gradually changed. Apart from a few people, all the members of Celestial Qi Castle, Celestial Wen Castle, and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings had died. The sect leader of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness was almost dead, severely injured. The sect leader of Celestial Si Kong Castle was also badly injured. Their groups had also lost many strong cultivators. But they still had their cities, that was already worthy of celebrating.

However, it was as if Lin Feng didn't know about those things. He was supervising the renovation and construction of new buildings in the former territory of Celestial Qi Castle. Mu Yun was there. Lin Feng was at the foot of the ancient tree and looked at the thatched hut, but Mu Yun didn't come out.

“Little boy, come,” Hu Yue smiled. Lin Feng nodded, turned around, and departed. They flew at full speed to the entrance of the small world.

After Lin Feng left, Mu Yun came out and looked at the sky. The sun was red. She smiled widely, but sadly. Tears flowed down her cheeks. Lin Feng and her were from different worlds. Many things were probably going to happen in Lin Feng’s world, but the world she wanted was a world of peace and tranquility.

——

In the Ba Huang small world, in the central part of Ba Huang, in the Ancient Sun Castle, someone was seated cross-legged, his eyes closed. However, he suddenly opened his eyes. Some people wanted to come to the small world?

His silhouette flickered, he put his hands on a symbol and quickly appeared outside as some people appeared in front of him. He knew some of them...!

Chapter 1830: Ba Huang Nowadays

The strong cultivator of the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders remembered back then, when Emperor Wu Tian Jian had threatened him. Later on, things had changed, and another group had taken control over the small world. However, people had continued consulting him concerning issues in the small world, so he was still the manager of the small world. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would come back after so many years.

"You surprisingly dared come back," said the strong cultivator, smiling coldly. Lin Feng hadn't leveled up it seemed, but the people around him were quite strong. They were all low-level emperors. He was a bit surprised.

"Let us go into the small world," ordered Lin Feng calmly. The strong cultivator of Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders frowned and looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was provoking him?

Lin Feng had no time to talk nonsense. He immediately broke a talisman, lights and then a silhouette appeared. The strong cultivator of Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders was stupefied, he bowed and said, "Master!"

"From now on, there is no entry and exit restriction. Open the passage and apologize to Lin Feng for what you did in the past. If Lin Feng forgives you, come back to Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders. If he doesn't, then you will never come back," said the leader of Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders icily. The strong cultivator was in charge of protecting the passage. Back then, he had joined hands with Celestial Qi Castle and Celestial Si Kong Castle, and had offended Lin Feng. However, now things had changed.

Now, the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders, the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and Celestial Si Kong Castle respected Tiantai. After all, they couldn't change anything, and

Lin Feng had taken control over the region. He had also destroyed his enemies, such as Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. Regarding Celestial Wen Castle, they had chosen the wrong allies, but Lin Feng wasn't as cruel to them as he had been Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings.

The strong cultivator of Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders pulled a long face and lowered his head before he moved aside, not daring to look at Lin Feng.

“Haven't you heard me? Apologize! Apologize to Tiantai's heroic cultivators. Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings have been destroyed. Do you want to die too?” asked the leader of Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders. When the strong cultivator heard that, he was astonished and his heart twitched. Lin Feng and his friends had destroyed Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of the Medicinal Kings? What was going on?

“Hmph!” the leader of the castle groaned icily and then he disappeared.

The strong cultivator's heart was pounding violently. He didn't know what to think, but all in all, he bowed before Lin Feng and his friends and said, “I offended you. I'm infinitely sorry. I hope you can forgive me.”

Lin Feng looked at him icily and said, “After we pass, you'll leave the passage open forever. If we need a guard, then you'll be the guard forever.”

Lin Feng didn't intend to kill him. Even though that guy was a moron, he was also the guard of the passage. Changing the guard wouldn't have any impact, guards always enjoyed doing things their own way. Back then, he had received orders from the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders. But from now on, he couldn't close the passage anymore.

“Yes, sir!” said the guard, nodding before he went and opened the passage. Lin Feng and the others passed and landed in the Sun

Castle. They walked along a long corridor and appeared outside. They all took a deep breath.

“Ba Huang.” Lin Feng closed his eyes and enjoyed the fresh air of the small world. Finally. Lin Feng had the sensation he hadn’t been back in forever.

“Lin Feng, we’re back!” said Jun Mo Xi, walking up next to Lin Feng. His eyes were twinkling. Back then, when they had left, he hadn’t taken Xiao Die with him. They hadn’t seen each other for years. He was wondering how she was doing.

Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi walked forwards. Unfortunately, their teacher wasn’t here with them. Some other fellow disciples weren’t there, either. How were they all doing?

They had built Tiantai in the region of the nine great celestial castles for several reasons. The first was to control the region, including the small world. Then, people from the small world would be able to come in and out freely, and practice cultivation in the great world. Nobody would treat them as slaves anymore. The second reason was that if their teachers and fellow disciples heard of Tiantai, they’d know where to find them.

“Let’s go,” whispered Lin Feng. Then, he walked forwards. They were going back to Ba Huang, the place where they had risen. Lin Feng’s cultivation had changed drastically since back then, when he had come to Ba Huang.

——

Ten years had passed, that was a long time. Two powerful groups controlled Ba Huang now, one of them being the Wen Clan. Many years before, there was the Si Kong Clan in the central part of Ba Huang, and the Qi Clan and Celestial Palace of the Immortals were in the eastern part of Ba Huang. After all the emperors had left, people had heard of the great world. The Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan had then started declining. However, the Wen Clan had continued rising. They had become quite strong and had taken

control over the central part of Ba Huang. The Magic World Heavenly Palace had disappeared, only the Si Kong Clan had remained. Jiange still existed, but they were weaker than the Wen Clan. However, according to legends, there was a strange old man who never came out in Jiange.

Apart from the Wen Clan, there was another strong group, the Palace of the Medicinal Kings. The Palace of the Medicinal Kings had occupied the territory of Celestial Place of the Alchemists back then, in the southern part of Ba Huang. They ruled over the southern part of Ba Huang now. Many groups which existed back then had declined or even been destroyed.

For example, Tiantai had disappeared from the northern part of Ba Huang. Their territory had been maintained temporarily, but now they had completely disappeared. Sometimes, some old people talked about them, but most people were gradually forgetting about it.

Apart from that, many groups had disappeared and were part of history.

However, some new groups had also started rising. Some people also tried to resurrect some groups which had been destroyed.

For example, in the southern part of Ba Huang, a celestial being had appeared and wanted to resurrect the Celestial Place of the Alchemists. Unfortunately, even though she had broken through to the Huang Qi layer, the Palace of the Medicinal Kings kept humiliating her. Everybody called her Empress Xue, or Xue Celestial Being. She had become even more beautiful. She was one of the legendary four most beautiful women of Ba Huang, Xue Baguio!

There were many legends about Xue Baguio and the Celestial Palace of the Alchemists. Some people said that Emperor Dan had used her back then, and that she had followed people from Tiantai. Some rumors also said that she had fallen in love with Lin Feng,

but that his wife was already a celestial being: Meng Qing! Therefore, he had refused Xue Baguio, and Xue Baguio had remained in the small world. Back then, she hadn't followed the others into the great world.

Of course, those were just rumors, but in the southern part of Ba Huang, there was another group. They were called Qi Feng Mountain. Back then, they had dispersed and then someone had restored the group, two beautiful sisters... Feng Ling and Feng Xuan! Back then, Feng Xuan was also one of the four most beautiful women. However, Feng Ling had become just as beautiful, if not moreso. Besides, Feng Ling had broken through to the Huang Qi layer before Feng Xuan.

Some people said that they had gone to the outer world and had come back. Nobody could check whether the information was true or not. Only those who had gone to the great world could know.

Regarding the last of the four most beautiful women, apparently she was from the Wen Clan. Some people said that she pretended to be a man. Now, she didn't hide anymore, and she had become one of the four most beautiful women. Her name was Wen Ao Xue. She was the pride of the Wen Clan.

In the northern part of Ba Huang, some funny things happened too. For example, a young man had started rising. He was extremely strong, and people found him extraordinary, as he was extremely talented. That guy wanted to recreate Tiantai. He traveled a lot, trying to recreate Tiantai.

Lin Feng knew nothing about those things. Now, he was going to Jiange alone. He was flying on his gigantic sword, it reminded him of so many things. Without Jiange, everything in his life would have been different. Emperor Wu Tian Jian had helped him so much in life.

Bzzz!

Some silhouettes flickered and people appeared in front of him, they all looked as sharp as swords. Young Master, their Young Master was back!

“If I become an emperor someday, Jiange will rule over the central part of Ba Huang!” That was what Lin Feng had said back then. They all remembered that, he did too. Now, he was back, but he was still a Zun cultivator. Would he make them proud?

Chapter 1831: Godly Wood's Sap

“Jiange is a powerful group in the central part of Ba Huang!”

The Wen Clan ruled over the central part of Ba Huang. Even though Jiange had Emperor Wu Tian Jian, they didn't rule over the region because the old emperor was detached from worldly affairs. Jiange thus preferred staying in the shadows. Besides, Jiange probably couldn't rule over the region anymore, as Wen Ao Xue had already become a low-level emperor. She was a genius.

Many people in Ba Huang thought that the geniuses of the previous generations were amazing, especially those who had disappeared. Those who had risen a bit later, such as Xue Baguio, Feng Ling, Wen Ao Xue, and so on, had already broken through to the Huang Qi layer, but those. The geniuses who had disappeared were even more powerful. Tiantai's disciples had amazed the whole region during the meeting of the emperors. Wen Ao Xue, Xue Baguio, and the others couldn't compete with them back then. Even fools could imagine that those people had probably become powerful emperors already.

Unfortunately, people had been able to leave the small world for a while before the passage had been closed again. The geniuses who had disappeared hadn't come back for quite some time.

However, at this moment, Lin Feng was right there, outside of Jiange!

“Young Master!” The crowd remained silent for a time, staring at Lin Feng, before bowing before him. Even if Lin Feng hadn't become an emperor yet, he had probably become even more powerful than before. Unfortunately, Wen Ao Xue and all the others had already broken through to the Huang Qi layer. Why hadn't Lin Feng broken through to the Huang Qi layer? Did he have a problem?

“Jian Mu, is the emperor here?” Lin Feng asked Jian Mu.

Jian Mu nodded, “Young Master, the emperor is in the sword grave. After you left, nobody dared go inside anymore, we don’t want to disturb him. I think he should still be in there, but I’m not sure.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng with a nod, before starting to walk through Jiange.

“Young Master!” shouted Jian Mu. Lin Feng stopped, turned around, and looked at Jian Mu.

“I hope you can cheer him up,” said Jian Mu, bowing before Lin Feng. The ancestor was here and he didn’t do anything for Jiange, that made Jian Mu feel very sad. Lin Feng had come back, but he hadn’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer, so their last hope was their ancestor. Jian Wu Bei was now a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer, so hopefully the old man would help him a little.

Lin Feng understood what Jian Mu meant, his eyes twinkling and he said, “From now on, Jiange will rule over Ba Huang.”

Then, he continued on. Jian Mu and the others were surprised. Jiange was going to rule over Ba Huang? Was that possible?

Did Lin Feng have a solution?

Lin Feng walked straight to the Sword Grave. It was currently sealed by sword energies. Lin Feng looked at that curtain made of sword lights. Even sounds couldn’t get through. How was Emperor Wu Tian Jian doing?

Lin Feng punched the curtain of sword Qi, which instantly broke apart and dispersed, allowing him to enter.

In the Sword Grave, the old man was seated cross-legged. He looked extremely old and had many wrinkles, his hair had become completely white. Lin Feng was stupefied, what was going on? What had happened?

The old man slowly opened his eyes. He looked very sick. It was hard to imagine that that old man was Emperor Wu Tian Jian, the

one who had forced the medium-level emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders to open the passage to the great world.

“You’re here!” exclaimed the old man, smiling at Lin Feng. He looked so sick though...

“Master, what’s wrong?” asked Lin Feng. He didn’t understand why the old man looked so bad. Had his injury worsened?

“I will die soon,” said the old man calmly. “Long ago, I was injured, so I hid in here. I went out a few times because of you. To be honest, I also hoped you would be able to help me someday. However, while I was waiting, a few years ago, the enemy came here and I had to use all my strength to scare him away. It worked, but now I’m going to die.”

The old man looked extremely sad, “I’m going to die soon, and you haven’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet. The gods hate me. Lin Feng, have a seat. I will transmit everything I have learned in this life to you.”

Lin Feng sighed. Emperor Wu Tian Jian didn’t care about Jiange?

He had founded Jiange, and Jiange’s people were his people, his descendants. He had sealed the tomb and he didn’t give any news to his people. He could have died in the tomb and nobody would have known about it. That was sad, considering that he was a public figure in the small world.

“Master, how could you say such a thing?” said Lin Feng calmly. Then, he walked to the old man, and slowly crouched down. He took the old man’s hands in his hands and started releasing life cosmic energies, which raced throughout the old man’s body. Emperor Wu Tian Jian instantly started looking more alive. His eyes started twinkling. This was cosmic energy? And this cosmic energy was intense, thick, and rich! A Zun cultivator couldn’t possibly control such cosmic energies!

“You’ve already broken through to the Huang Qi layer?” Emperor Wu Tian Jian asked Lin Feng.

“Master, do you think I am that bad at cultivation?” smiled Lin Feng. He didn’t stop releasing life cosmic energy.

“I am old and tired. I just realized that if you hadn’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer, you wouldn’t have been able to break the sword energy curtain I created to seal the grave. It seems like you studied an incredible technique to hide your cultivation level! Surprisingly, I didn’t even notice. But your life cosmic energies still can’t heal me. They can help me live a bit longer at best. All in all, my injuries are too severe, and I will die soon.” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian, sighing. His hair had started turning black again.

“Not necessarily!” replied Lin Feng. Lin Feng walked out of the grave and released immortal sword energies to seal the grave, then came back into the Sword Grave. A pitch-black tree appeared before them. The tree turned into black wood, and powerful cosmic energies invaded the atmosphere.

“An ancient tree, black wood, powerful cosmic energies, several sorts of cosmic energies.” Emperor Wu Tian Jian was staring at the wood floating in midair. He was stunned as he looked at Lin Feng. “What is this?”

“Heavenly Grace Godly Wood!” Lin Feng said calmly.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian’s heart suddenly twitched in astonishment. “The legendary wood with different sorts of strength, the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood that is alive?”

“The sap of the Godly Wood can heal your injuries,” explained Lin Feng. He waved his hand and the tree moved over to the old man and floated above his head. The old man didn’t look so sad anymore, he looked astonished, and sharp lights were glittering in his eyes. Was he going to become as strong as he used to be when he was younger? Lin Feng had surprisingly obtained Heavenly

Grace Godly Wood!...

“Master, use the sap of the wood to cleanse your body, it will heal you,” instructed Lin Feng. Emperor Wu Tian Jian nodded as Lin Feng started talking to the Godly Wood. The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood started releasing powerful lights, and drops of sap started falling from it, penetrating into the old man’s body.

A powerful strength started flowing throughout the old man’s flesh and muscles, and auspicious lights started flashing around him. The whole Sword Grave started trembling. Emperor Wu Tian Jian was dumbstruck.

Another drop of sap fell onto his body, and the old man started releasing powerful energies. He shouted loudly, “Lin Feng, take the Godly Wood away, don’t waste its priceless sap!”

Emperor Wu Tian Jian wasn’t selfish. He knew that the sap of this wood was priceless. Two drops were enough for him to cleanse the toxins in his body. Lin Feng had come back from the great world with this tree, he didn’t mind the cost, he just wanted to heal the old man.

“Another drop is fine,” said Lin Feng as he sensed the powerful sword energies in the air. Lin Feng thought that that sap might make Emperor Wu Tian Jian even stronger than he used to be. The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood had a hundred drops. Each drop required hundreds of years to condense. Its sap was priceless indeed, and Lin Feng gave Emperor Wu Tian Jian three drops.

After that, Lin Feng walked away from the emperor, sealing the area away. Jiange’s people started rushing over there. They all looked at Lin Feng, sensing some powerful cosmic energies. Why had Lin Feng sealed the grave? What had happened to the old man?

“Young Master!” called out Jian Mu.

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at Jian Mu and the

others. He shouted, “Everybody leave, I know what’s good for Jiange!”

“Yes, Young Master!” replied Jian Mu. He could see Lin Feng’s sharp expression, and didn’t want to disobey. He waved at the others, and they all left.

Chapter 1832: The Sword Emperor Rises!

Jiange's people departed. Lin Feng turned around and looked at the sword intent he had used to seal the Sword Grave. The energies within the Grave seemed like they could explode out at anytime.

The Heavenly Grace Godly Wood's sap is powerful, as expected. If I used it to cleanse my body, perhaps my cosmic energies and my comprehensive abilities would improve, thought Lin Feng. No wonder a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree was so difficult to obtain, and the tree had to agree to follow a cultivator.

Unfortunately, there were only a hundred drops. Each drop was priceless, taking a century to form. If the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood had no more sap, it would turn into an ordinary tree.

However, it would take time for Emperor Wu Tian Jian to recover.

Jian Mu and the others had gathered in a courtyard. Even though they were some distance away, they continued staring at the Sword Grave nervously.

"Young Master!" Lin Feng came over to them. Jian Mu was visibly anxious about what was going on.

"Emperor Wu Tian Jian needs time, he's meditating in seclusion. His strength and cultivation level are not only coming back to normal, he's going to improve," Lin Feng explained calmly. Everybody was astonished. The old man was going to become stronger?!

"Jian Mu, what's the situation like in Ba Huang these days?" Lin Feng asked him. He had just come back to Ba Huang, and his friends were busy doing their own things. Lin Feng wanted to know more about the situation in Ba Huang.

"The Wen Clan suddenly became much stronger. The Qi Clan gradually declined. The Si Kong Clan is strong, but in comparison

to the Wen Clan, they are still weak. I've also heard that the medium-level emperors have all left. A new group appeared in Ba Huang, the Palace of Medicinal Kings. They're the only group who can compete with the Wen Clan," explained Jian Mu briefly. In short, the Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings were the strongest groups of Ba Huang those days.

As expected, thought Lin Feng. The Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings controlled the small world, so they were the strongest in it. They could steal resources to raise their own people. They also paid attention to rising geniuses in the small world. What they couldn't imagine was that they couldn't do much against truly strong people. The Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings were already doomed.

"What emperors are there in this world nowadays? And among my enemies of the same generation as me, who is left?" asked Lin Feng.

"There aren't many emperors these days in Ba Huang. The Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings have emperors. The Si Kong Clan probably has two emperors: Emperor Si Kong from back then, and Si Kong Xiao. The Xiao Yao Sect should have one emperor. There is also Emperor Lei and Emperor Niu Mo in the brutal part of Ba Huang. Emperor Peng left with the Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc. They probably went to the great world like you. Also, the Celestial Thunder Temple now has an emperor, too. Xue Baguio from the Celestial Place of the Alchemists has broken through to the Huang Qi layer. Feng Ling has also broken through to the Huang Qi layer. Feng Xuan will soon break through to the Huang Qi layer. Xue Baguio, Feng Xuan, Feng Ling, and Wen Ao Xue are the new four most beautiful women of Ba Huang," continued Jian Mu slowly. Lin Feng was astonished and frowned.

"Wen Ao Xue, one of the four most beautiful women of Ba Huang?"

"Indeed, she's a woman," nodded Jian Mu. Lin Feng was

stupefied. Wen Ao Xue, the young man who used to be as beautiful as a woman, actually was one, and she was even so beautiful that men were attracted to her. It wasn't too surprising, though. Lin Feng was surprised because Wen Tian Ge had gone to the great world, and Wen Ao Xue had come back to the small world.

“Young Master, that's basically all. All the others left when the passage to the great world was opened. I don't know what the geniuses are doing in the great world,” finished Jian Mu. Lin Feng nodded. Xue Baguio had lost her memories back then, she had almost gotten married to Emperor Dong's son. Surprisingly, Feng Ling had broken through to the Huang Qi layer before Feng Xuan. The Diviner was knowledgeable!

“Do you have news from Tiantai?” asked Lin Feng.

“A mysterious young man nobody knows wants to recreate Tiantai. He is very talented, but he is only a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer, and apart from emperors, I don't think anyone can recreate Tiantai. You probably think the same. Some people from the Qi Clan and Tian Long Divine Castle are looking for him everywhere, they want to kill him.”

Even though the Qi Clan had already fallen and Tian Long Divine Castle had been destroyed, there were still some of their former members who were still alive. It was impossible to kill every single person in such a big group.

“A young man wants to recreate Tiantai?” Lin Feng was surprised. “What's his name?”

“He's less than twenty years old. He appeared in Ba Huang and said he wanted to go and see Tiantai, but then he realized that Tiantai didn't exist anymore so rumors started spreading, he apparently wanted to recreate Tiantai. His name is Ye Chen. There was a beautiful woman with him, her name was Ye Xue, but her cultivation level was mediocre.”

“Ye Chen, Ye Xue!” Lin Feng frowned. He remembered back

then, he had spent some time in a small village. He hadn't practiced cultivation, merely resting there. Ye Chen must be Xiao Chen! The baby had already grown up! Time passed so quickly...

Lin Feng wasn't surprised that the baby had grown up, he was surprised that the young man had gone to Tiantai to find him. Unfortunately, Tiantai had disappeared, so he wanted to recreate it. He had retained the heart of a child.

At that moment, a powerful explosive energy pierced through Lin Feng's sword energy curtain like a crack of thunder. He turned around and sensed a powerful sword energy shooting up into the sky. A powerful Qi filled the air and turned into an ocean of energies. Everybody was astonished.

"That's..." Lin Feng frowned. The Qi kept rising to the skies. Emperor Wu Tian Jian was shouting vigorously. He was getting stronger!

"Everybody, leave the small world!" shouted Lin Feng urgently.

Jian Mu promptly rose up in the air and shouted, "Jiange's people, leave Jiange!"

Everybody within Jiange heard him, and started running away as fast as they could. Emperor Wu Tian Jian's sword energies were whistling and expanding around him.

"Did the three drops of blood help him break through to the next cultivation layer because his cultivation was restrained for such a long time?" murmured Lin Feng. In a very short time, all of Jiange's members had left. Crackling sounds kept rising from the Grave. A gigantic sword appeared, cutting fissures in space, creating more thunderclaps. Powerful sword energies kept exploding and forcing people away.

"The small world is going to explode!" The crowd was astonished, they saw powerful sword lights dashing to the skies and disappearing.

Lin Feng frowned and looked at the light beam. It was clearly Emperor Wu Tian Jian!

At that moment, a hole appeared in the sky. It was visible from everywhere in the central part of Ba Huang. People there raised their heads and looked at the hole in the sky above Sword City.

Only people who are high-level emperors and higher can leave this small world, and Emperor Wu Tian Jian was initially a high-level emperor. He has probably exceeded his past limit, thought Lin Feng. He was stunned. Emperor Wu Tian Jian had grown, and his energies were too powerful for the small world!

People from the central part of Ba Huang were staring at the hole in the sky. What had happened? Had someone broken through to the Huang Qi layer? Was someone attacking the small world?

“Maybe that it’s the legendary Emperor Wu Tian Jian from Sword City?” whispered some people. They had heard many legends about Emperor Wu Tian Jian. Apparently, he could pierce through the sky of the small world.

“Young Master, what is that?” Jian Mu asked Lin Feng. Jian Mu and the others all had dry tongues and mouths at that moment. Why had their ancestor turned into a light beam and shot up into the sky?

“I think that Master Wu Tian Jian has broken through. He will probably come back as a Great Emperor!” Lin Feng smiled. The hearts of the people of Jiange started pounding violently. They were happy, but they couldn’t imagine what it meant at the same time. Great Emperor? What kind of cultivation level was that?

Had he broken through to a cultivation layer higher than the Huang Qi layer?

“Young Master, what is the cultivation level of a Great Emperor?” asked one of the young people of Jiange. He didn’t know what a Great Emperor was!

“A Great Emperor’s cultivation level is higher than the Huang Qi layer. In the great world, they are considered as very strong cultivators, too!” replied Lin Feng cheerfully. The young man clenched his fists, looking extremely motivated. Would he ever become a Great Emperor?

Lin Feng and the members of Jiange raised their heads and waited for the emperor to return.

After an hour, another hole appeared in the sky, and a beam of light descended. Lin Feng’s heart started racing. The light beam turned into a person: Emperor Wu Tian Jian!

Emperor Wu Tian Jian looked incredible and alive, not injured at all, and had regained his youth. He was surrounded by powerful sword energies. He had started rejuvenating! It was incredible to see.

Chapter 1833: Emperor Wen's Investigation

“Ancestor!” shouted the members of Jiange respectfully when they saw their ancestor come back. Had he really become a Great Emperor?!

Emperor Wu Tian Jian looked at Lin Feng and smiled quietly, “It’s crazy how things can change so quickly. Lin Feng, I would have never thought I’d ever heal. Thank you very much!”

Emperor Wu Tian Jian had spent so many years with his disease, his enemies had already become Great Emperors, and he had finally started dying. He had never thought he’d heal and become a Great Emperor, all thanks to Lin Feng.

“You made it happen,” Lin Feng replied humbly. “You became a Great Emperor on your own.”

“I never thought I’d become a Great Emperor after a thousand years. That tree sap helped me immensely,” sighed Emperor Wu Tian Jian. He had never thought that the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood’s sap would help him so much. Not only did it heal him, but he had broken through!

Emperor Wu Tian Jian’s eyes were twinkling with strange lights from the strength of his new cultivation level. His world strength was becoming more real. He could now create small worlds easily. He waved his hands and swiftly reformed Jiange.

“Let’s go in!” Emperor Wu Tian Jian and Lin Feng entered Jiange again, it was the same as before. Emperor Wu Tian Jian didn’t go back to the Sword Grave this time. He walked over to a sword mountain with Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, do you know why I was injured?” Emperor Wu Tian Jian asked him.

Lin Feng shook his head and replied, “I know that it has something to do with Sword Mountain.”

“So you really went to Sword Mountain!” murmured Emperor Wu Tian Jian. Lin Feng looked at him strangely as the emperor said, “Nobody knew that I was hiding in the small world. However, a thousand years ago, my enemy found me, and that enemy is the current leader of Sword Mountain. He’s probably seen you and your swordsmanship.”

Lin Feng was surprised and answered, “Indeed, I’ve been to Sword Mountain. I released Wu Tian Jian’s sword intent, and then they started plotting against me. I didn’t know why, and then I learned that it was because you were enemies. Emperor Tie Jian, the leader of Sword Mountain, probably spied on me.”

“He’s not the only one. A few senior officials from Sword Mountain probably thought about me when they saw your sword energies. They immediately informed Tie Jian,” Emperor Wu Tian Jian said, then added, “The leader of Sword Mountain, Emperor Tie Jian, is my fellow disciple.”

“Fellow disciple!” Lin Feng frowned. So Emperor Wu Tian Jian had studied at Sword Mountain?!

“Back then, the leader of Sword Mountain transmitted his knowledge to me, but not to my fellow disciple. Therefore, he got angry and wanted revenge. We had a great battle, and I lost. Back then, he was ready to become a Great Emperor. Even though my cultivation level was high, I was still injured, and my injury only worsened with time. My fellow disciple also continued chasing me. In the end, I had no choice but to come back to this small world,” Emperor Wu Tian Jian told him calmly, “However, I never thought that things would get better, and that I would become a Great Emperor. Lin Feng, thank you very much. It’s all thanks to you.”

“Master, I am also grateful. You taught me so much about sword cultivation, and you took us out of the small world. I had to help you. Besides, I also have some Ancient scriptures which I can give to you. That way, if you go back to Sword Mountain, you’ll be able

to take your revenge!” Lin Feng smiled.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian didn't think much of the offer, Lin Feng's Ancient scriptures couldn't possibly be suitable for him, but it was nice of Lin Feng to offer him scriptures. Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiled and said, “Great, I also have some Sword Scriptures for you.”

They both laughed and exchanged scriptures.

“Nihility Sword Scriptures, they can help you improve your sword intent, your sword can then fuse together with the sky!” Lin Feng checked the scriptures he had obtained and was delighted, they were very strange. The way cultivators used them was different from other ancient scriptures, and they had an explosive power.

“The Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures!” At that moment, Emperor Wu Tian Jian looked dumbstruck, his heart was pounding, and he was staring at Lin Feng. He didn't really want the ancient scriptures from Lin Feng, but now he was completely stunned. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had transmitted the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to him!

“Master, have you heard of the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures before?” asked Lin Feng.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiled wryly and said, “Lin Feng, I initially wanted to give you something incredible to thank you, I wouldn't have thought you'd give me the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. I owe you even more now!”

“What are you talking about, Master?” answered Lin Feng, shaking his head.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian laughed wholeheartedly and stopped being emotional. He said, “Lin Feng, I have the Nihility Sword Scriptures and now you gave me the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. I will go to Sword Mountain sooner or later!”

“Of course!” Lin Feng smiled back. Emperor Wu Tian Jian was a genius. Five thousand years ago, he had amazed everyone in the small world, and created his own way of practicing sword cultivation. He was extremely talented. Now that he had the Nihility Sword Scriptures and the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, he would be able to surpass Emperor Tie Jian sooner or later.

“Master, I’m off. I’ll come back to see you at some point!” said Lin Feng. He was done here. Emperor Wu Tian Jian had become a Great Emperor, things had turned out even better than he had thought. Emperor Wu Tian Jian would go to Sword Mountain sooner or later and deal with them. Emperor Wu Tian Jian would probably also take over Sword Mountain, as he was, after all, the real descendant of Sword Mountain.

“Alright,” agreed Emperor Wu Tian Jian with a nod. Lin Feng stood up and headed out.

“Young Master!” Jian Mu came up to Lin Feng before he departed.

“What’s wrong?” asked Lin Feng.

“In the central part of Ba Huang, some people from the Wen Clan and the Si Kong Clan are here, and want to know what’s going on with our ancestor!” said Jian Mu.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled as he asked, “Where are they?”

“Outside. I came to ask you whether we could let them come in to Jiange?” wondered Jian Mu. He didn’t dare offend those people, there were two emperors there. And even though Emperor Wu Tian Jian had become a Great Emperor, he hadn’t taken care of Jiange for such a long time, maybe he didn’t care about them, either.

“No need. Unless you agree, nobody can come into Jiange anymore. Jiange doesn’t need to care about giving people face

anymore,” Lin Feng said sharply. He understood how Jian Mu felt. He continued indifferently, “I was going to see them anyway.”

Lin Feng and the members of Jiange headed outside.

—

There were many people gathered there. One of them looked dignified and majestic, and even stronger than before: Emperor Wen. Emperor Si Kong was there too, but it wasn't the same as before.

They watched Jiange's people come out. The leader of the group was a young man, incredibly strong and handsome. When the members of the Si Kong Clan and the Wen Clan saw that young man, they were stupefied, especially Emperor Wen. His eyes glittered. Back then, he had also taken Lin Feng and the others out of the small world, and then his father and he had come back.

“Lin Feng!” Emperor Wen's eyes were filled with dazzling lights. He was staring at that young man. Lin Feng had surprisingly come back to Ba Huang!

“Emperor Wen, I trust you have been doing well since we last met!” Lin Feng smiled winningly. Emperor Wen looked at Lin Feng... Zun Qi layer? Lin Feng surprisingly still has the strength of the Zun Qi layer, he hadn't broken through to the Huang Qi layer, interesting. Wen Ao Xue had already broken through to the Huang Qi layer, Lin Feng hadn't...

“Lin Feng, we haven't seen each other for so many years and you have become impolite. You should call me Master now,” Emperor Wen smiled.

Lin Feng was surprised and angered when he heard Emperor Wen say that.

Chapter 1834: Come to Jiange Tomorrow

Lin Feng looked back at Emperor Wen calmly. Back then, Lin Feng's teachers and Emperor Wen had joined hands. Back then, Emperor Wen was warm and friendly. Now, he had power in the central part of Ba Huang and sounded different. Lin Feng was surprised. Back then, had the Wen Clan just used Tiantai?

The Wen Clan used to be similar to the Si Kong Clan and the Qi Clan. They also depended on the nine great celestial castles of Qing Di Mountain. Lin Feng was convinced that back then, the Wen Clan knew about the Qi Clan's situation. Lin Feng had many doubts when it came to the Celestial Wen Castle and the Wen Clan, especially when the leader of the Celestial Wen Castle had chosen to join hands with Qing Di Mountain to fight against Tiantai. Lin Feng had then decided to destroy the Celestial Wen Castle.

"I would, but I don't think you deserve it," Lin Feng smiled indifferently.

Emperor Wen's smile became a little forced as he said, "Lin Feng, bring me to the Sword Emperor. The Wen Clan admires him. We want to go and greet him."

"The Si Kong Clan also wants to greet the Sword Emperor," said the emperor of the Si Kong Clan coldly. Lin Feng didn't like the Si Kong Clan. But now they had seen that something had broken through the small world, so they wanted to see Emperor Wu Tian Jian. What had happened to him?

Lin Feng looked at them, his eyes glittering, and said, "Piss off!"

When Emperor Si Kong and Emperor Wen heard Lin Feng, they were stupefied. Emperor Wen said icily, "Lin Feng, the Wen Clan has always been polite to you, and now you dare insult elders? It seems that your two teachers have failed in your education."

Emperor Wen released ice-cold cosmic energies, making the air

whistle. He said icily, “After so many years, you haven’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer. If your teachers were here, what would they think of you? You’re a disgrace.”

Emperor Wen waved his hands and cosmic energies surrounded his body. A cage of empty space energies surrounded him. If he attacked Lin Feng, perhaps Emperor Wu Tian Jian would come out?

Empty space strength surrounded Lin Feng. Emperor Wen waved his hands again and the energies became even more oppressive. However, Lin Feng’s expression didn’t change at all. He just looked at Emperor Wen icily, his eyes filled with death Qi. Emperor Wen was surprised.

“You want to die!” Lin Feng spat icily. Emperor Wen dared criticize his teachers!? Lin Feng was furious. He jumped forwards and released powerful energies which crushed down on Emperor Wen. Emperor Wen’s expression changed drastically. Those energies were truly frightening!

“You...” Emperor Wen was completely astonished.

“Who said I hadn’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer?” continued Lin Feng icily. Emperor Wen’s heart twitched. Death cosmic energy pierced through his body and he turned grey, his life was being drained out.

Empty space cosmic energies surrounded Emperor Wen, space around him bent and twisted. He wanted to retreat, but he saw that Lin Feng was moving faster than him.

Lin Feng waved his hands.

A gigantic hand came out of nowhere and slapped Emperor Wen’s cheeks. The slap was so hard that Emperor Wen fell down on his knees, completely humiliated.

Everybody around them was astonished. Emperor Wen hadn’t withstood a single attack!

“He must be an emperor!” The members of the Si Kong Clan and the Wen Clan were astonished humiliated too!

“Young Master!” The members of Jiange were also amazed. Their Young Master had broken through to the Huang Qi layer! Lin Feng the genius had come back!

Emperor Wen hadn’t withstood a single attack. Who could compete with him in Ba Huang those days?

“Young Master was just hiding his cultivation level,” whispered Jian Mu. Jiange’s people clenched their fists. They remembered what Lin Feng had told them, Jiange was going to rule over Ba Huang! Lin Feng sounded very self-confident for a reason. He didn’t need their ancestor’s help for this!

Emperor Wen wanted to stand up, but Lin Feng jumped and landed on him, like a mountain coming down. A powerful strength flew throughout his body.

“Die!” Emperor Wen’s face turned deathly pale. Thunder shook the air as a gigantic hand appeared in the sky and crashed into Lin Feng. However, nothing happened, Lin Feng remained motionless. Emperor Wen’s stomach kept twitching as he started shaking violently. His cosmic energies were ineffective against Lin Feng!?

The others were stupefied too. Cosmic energy attacks were useless against Lin Feng? How strong had Lin Feng become?

“You want my teachers to educate me?” Lin Feng stated icily. His voice made Emperor Wen’s heart beat even faster.

Emperor Wen’s eyes were twinkling before he smiled and said, “Lin Feng, my boy, I had thought that you had stopped practicing cultivation, so I had to be strict with you. Don’t be angry.”

“Ah...!” Emperor Wen gave out a horrible shriek, crackling sounds spread in the air. Lin Feng had stomped on his body and broken many of his bones.

“Lin Feng, my boy? Who do you think you are?” swore Lin Feng

icily. He said indifferently, “Tomorrow, all the cultivators of the Zun Qi layer and above from the Wen Clan and the Si Kong Clan, come to Jiange! If you dare to disobey, you will have to bear the responsibilities!”

Following which, Lin Feng kicked Emperor Wen again, and broke more of his bones. Emperor Wen, an emperor all people admired in the small world, was being humiliated like an insect by Lin Feng.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng, glancing at the people from the Wen and Si Kong Clans. The emperor of the Si Kong Clan didn’t even dare look Lin Feng in the eyes. His heart was pounding in fear. In the Si Kong Clan, apart from him, only Si Kong Xiao had broken through to the Huang Qi layer. Emperor Wen couldn’t even withstand a single attack anymore against Lin Feng! No wonder he had amazed the whole region of Ba Huang. He was too strong!

“Let’s go.” The members of the Si Kong Clan and the Wen Clan didn’t waste any time. Emperor Wen was injured, so some people had to help him walk and fly. They kept thinking about what Lin Feng had said, that they had to come back to Jiange tomorrow with all their cultivators of the Zun Qi layer and higher.

Jiange’s people were stunned. Lin Feng had become so strong! No wonder that he had just told them that Jiange was the new ruler of Ba Huang!

“Young Master, the Wen Clan also has a medium-level emperor,” Jian Mu warned Lin Feng. After all, there was a huge difference between low-level emperors and medium-level emperors.

“I understand,” Lin Feng replied calmly, his face indifferent. “We’ll see them tomorrow.”

Lin Feng walked away. Jiange’s people looked after him, even more surprised. Their Young Master didn’t fear medium-level emperors?

Was he strong enough to defeat such cultivators, too?

After Lin Feng left Jiange. He went to a restaurant in Sword City. That was also the first place he had ever been to in Sword City before heading to Fortune City. Back then, the Imperial Assassin Union's members had broken it, but it had been rebuilt.

In the restaurant, Hu Yue, Mu Lin Xue, Qing Feng, and Wu were waiting. They were just waiting for Lin Feng, unlike Jun Mo Xi and the others, who actually had things to do there. Qin Wu, Tantai, and the others guarded their base back in the nine great celestial castles.

When Lin Feng arrived, he sat down at the table and said to Wu, "Wu, you'll be coming with me."

Wu looked back at Lin Feng angrily, but didn't refuse.

"We're going to the Xiao Yao Sect in the central part of Ba Huang. We'll tell their patriarch about tomorrow, and make them come to Jiange," Lin Feng told him. When they heard that, the clients of the restaurant all glanced at Lin Feng. They looked amused. Was that guy joking? He wanted to make the patriarch come to Jiange?

Even though those young people looked extremely strong, they probably couldn't compete with the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect. What was their social status?

"Hmph!" Wu groaned, but still stood up and left the restaurant with Lin Feng. Lin Feng was convinced that Wu could help him sort this out.

People in the restaurant were surprised when they saw Wu follow Lin Feng. One of them asked Lin Feng, "Your Excellency, you seem incredibly strong for your age. Where do you come from?"

Lin Feng smiled at him and said, "I'm a nobody."

"A nobody? Someone who dares give orders to the patriarch of

the Xiao Yao Sect? In Ba Huang, there are very strong young people too: Xue Baguio, Feng Ling, Si Kong Xiao. As I see it, you must be Lin Feng who left Ba Huang back then, especially since you want to make those people come to Jiange.”

“Lin Feng!” The crowd was stunned, and frowned as they recalled those events. Even though Lin Feng had left for many years, they still remembered Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked surprised. Some people still remembered him?

Chapter 1835: Destruction

Lin Feng smiled and said, "If you think so, maybe."

Lin Feng didn't admit he was Lin Feng, nor did he deny it. The atmosphere became silent in the restaurant. That young man was maybe Lin Feng?

"Teacher, who's Lin Feng?" a young man asked his teacher. Lin Feng had disappeared from the small world for many years. People who were around twenty years old didn't know about Lin Feng. People who were thirty and older all knew him, though.

"One of the eleven disciples of Tiantai, a powerful genius. He had crushed many people during the meeting of the emperors. He had also killed the princes of Tian Long Divine Castle. He also slaughtered many people from the Qi Clan. Ten years ago, he amazed the whole region. He was also one of the ten strongest young cultivators of Ba Huang!" explained the elder to the young man staring at Lin Feng.

"Teacher, there were many geniuses in the previous generation, Lin Feng was that strong?" The young man was stupefied. He didn't even dare look at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was wearing clean white clothes, there was no Qi around him. However, he did look enigmatic and unfathomable. They couldn't see how strong he was.

They couldn't see how strong the two women next to him were, either.

"If he's really Lin Feng, he must have come back from the great world and he must be incredibly strong. No wonder he dares say he wants to make the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect come to Jiange!" mused the elder. They would know if they were right tomorrow. Would the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect come to Jiange?

In the restaurant, people kept talking about him. Lin Feng just

left.

On the day after, at the same time, many people came to watch. The fact that Lin Feng wanted some people to come to Jiange had already spread everywhere.

At that moment, in the distance, a group of people arrived. They weren't from the Xiao Yao Sect, however.

Emperor Si Kong, Emperor Wen, as well as people from their respective clans, thought the crowd. Those people all landed in front of Jiange together.

The medium-level emperor of the Wen Clan is there, too. Does it have anything to do with the beam of light we saw yesterday? Maybe Emperor Wu Tian Jian has come back!, thought the crowd.

The patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect is coming too, but he's alone, thought the crowd after they saw someone in the distance. That person seemed very agile, as he was using the Xiao Yao agility technique.

Some other people appeared in Jiange too, Jian Mu and the others. They looked at the crowd: Wen Clan, Si Kong Clan, Xiao Yao Sect, three powerful groups from the central part of Ba Huang. Because Emperor Wu Tian Jian had stopped caring about Jiange, Jiange hadn't been able to oppress and compete with them.

"Lin Feng, my boy. We're here, you can come out!" said the medium-level emperor of the Wen Clan firmly. Making them come to Jiange, Lin Feng was quite audacious. But he had spent time in the great world, so he probably knew that behind the Wen Clan, there was the Celestial Wen Castle. Lin Feng couldn't compete with such people, unless Emperor Wu Tian Jian appeared.

A gigantic sword appeared, Lin Feng and Wu were standing upon it. When the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect saw Wu, his mouth twitched. That bastard was an unruly and obstinate animal. On the

day before, he had been humiliated by Wu.

“Is everybody here?” Lin Feng asked calmly.

“We’re all here. Lin Feng, my boy, why did you make us come?” asked Emperor Wen’s father coldly. There were two other emperors next to him, one of them was Emperor Wen, and the other one was a stunningly beautiful woman.

Wen Ao Xue wasn’t pretending to be a man anymore. She still enjoyed wearing clean white clothes though, as she was quite seductive in a beautiful white skirt.

“When you pretended to be a man, you were already more beautiful than women. Now, you’re still more beautiful than most women!” complimented Lin Feng, smiling at Wen Ao Xue, and ignoring Emperor Wen’s father.

“You preferred me when I was wearing men’s clothes?” Wen Ao Xue asked cutely.

“I prefer you as a woman, of course!” replied Lin Feng calmly.

Wen Ao Xue giggled and said, “I’m happy if you like me this way.”

However, Lin Feng shook his head and said, “At least now, you’re showing your true colors.”

Wen Ao Xue’s smile stiffened. Lin Feng asked her, “You’re the second assassin of the Imperial Assassin Union, aren’t you?”

Wen Ao Xue was rendered speechly and looked at Lin Feng strangely. Lin Feng already knew the answer.

“Wen Ao Xue is a member of the Imperial Assassin Union?” Many people were shocked and frowned, especially people who were older.

“You deceived me a few times back then.” said Lin Feng, closing his eyes and sighing. They had studied together. Wen Ao Xue hadn’t helped when Duan Wu Ya and the others had attacked him

and his friends, but it didn't matter, as, after all, Wen Ao Xue and Lin Feng weren't related by blood. However, Yan Yu Ping Sheng was her teacher, and even though Wen Ao Xue regretted it, she was a member of the Wen Clan. Everything about the Wen Clan seemed fake now.

Wen Ao Xue looked petrified, Lin Feng sighed again. She could sense that Lin Feng was sad and said, "Lin Feng, even now, I am still your friend. Nothing can ruin our friendship."

"Impossible!" shouted someone icily at that moment. An ice-cold energy rose as someone in a golden robe appeared. That person's voice sounded like the voice of a demon.

"Jun Mo Xi!" Wen Ao Xue was stupefied, Jun Mo Xi had come back to Ba Huang too!?

"Mo Xi, what's wrong?" Lin Feng asked Jun Mo Xi. There was a beautiful woman next to Jun Mo Xi: Xiao Die! She looked wan and sallow, even as she stared at the members of the Wen Clan icily.

"The Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings destroyed the Celestial Palace of the Immortals!" said Jun Mo Xi icily.

Lin Feng shivered and closed his eyes, "The Wen Clan is going to disappear from Ba Huang!"

Wen Ao Xue started shaking, Emperor Wen's father looked at Lin Feng icily, "Ridiculous, Lin Feng. Even if you were strong enough to destroy the Wen Clan, you probably understand that you can't offend the Celestial Wen Castle."

"The Celestial Wen Castle ceased existing a while ago now," spat Wu icily.

Emperor Wen's father was stupefied, he could only look back at Wu and say, "Who do you think you are? Empty words! You're ridiculous!"

Wu raised his hands and threw himself at Emperor Wen's father as blinding suns burned into existence!

Emperor Wen's father frowned and released empty space cosmic energies, his robe fluttering in the wind, throwing himself at Wu.

Their energies collided with a crash, sun cosmic energies penetrated into Emperor Wen's father's hands and corroded his body, driving him backwards. His expression had changed completely. Wu's physical strength and cosmic energies were powerful!

"He can resist a medium-level emperor!" The crowd was stunned.

Jun Mo Xi released powerful Hell strength which descended from the sky. Then, he jumped forwards looking like a demon.

He punched out, and the air started shaking. The members of the Wen Clan were all surrounded by ice-cold strength, and started freezing.

"Die!" said Jun Mo Xi icily. All the members of the Wen Clan started dying one after another. People's expressions changed drastically. How come these people were so strong?

Wen Ao Xue was astonished, she looked at Lin Feng and asked, "Has the Celestial Wen Castle really been destroyed?"

"I rebuilt Tiantai in the nine great celestial castles, the Celestial Wen Castle was the first group who tried to fight against us. I took some people there and killed the rest. The Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of Medicinal Kings don't exist anymore, either," Lin Feng replied calmly. Wen Ao Xue's face turned deathly pale. Wu and Jun Mo Xi dared kill people from the Wen Clan, they didn't fear them at all. They could even defeat medium-level emperors!

Wen Ao Xue looked desperate. She had never thought that Lin Feng and his friends would rise so quickly.

The crowd didn't understand what was happening, it was like a dream. The Wen Clan was a powerful group in the central part of Ba Huang and now, those young people were crushing them?

A powerful strength bombarded Wen Ao Xue. She coughed up

blood, and was driven backwards in Lin Feng's direction. Lin Feng was startled, as Wen Ao Xue didn't try to fight back.

“Since you're telling me that the Celestial Wen Castle has been destroyed, I believe you. I just have one last request, I want you to kill me!” said Wen Ao Xue, smiling desperately.

Lin Feng glanced at Jun Mo Xi, who lowered his hands and released a destructive strength which corroded Wen Ao Xue's body. She was still smiling as she softly collapsed into Lin Feng's arms.

Lin Feng caught her. Wen Ao Xue smiled and said, “My life was miserable, but the most beautiful thing that could ever happen was to die in your arms,” as she closed her eyes.

Chapter 1836: Tian Long's Tenth Prince

Lin Feng looked at the beautiful woman in his arms, her eyes now closed. She was dead. Lin Feng wasn't happy at all, he felt extremely saddened by this turn of events.

They had known each other in Xue Yue. Back then, they were very young. They had chosen different paths.

He knew that Wen Ao Xue wasn't sorry, she hadn't helped him. She was just heartless, but sometimes heartless people also had feelings and emotions, and her final wish was to die in his arms.

At least, they didn't crush her, her corpse was intact.

This was her fate.

The battle continued. Jun Mo Xi and Wu were astonishingly strong. They could easily kill Zun cultivators. Even Emperor Wen had died, his father was badly injured and probably wouldn't be able to resist much longer. The powerful Wen Clan was being destroyed.

The Si Kong Clan's strong cultivators looked furious. Si Kong Xiao among them. When he saw all this, he was astonished. He had come thinking he would show how strong he was, but Jun Mo Xi was immensely strong, and so was that young man named Wu. Wu even obeyed Lin Feng, so how strong was Lin Feng?

Very quickly, the members of the Wen Clan were all slaughtered. Jun Mo Xi's Hell Qi was powerful. He turned around to look at Lin Feng, who was still holding Wen Ao Xue. Jun Mo Xi's icy energies suddenly disappeared. He sighed and said to Lin Feng, "Lin Feng, take her body back to the Wen Clan."

"Alright," Lin Feng nodded. He turned around and looked at the leaders of the Si Kong Clan and the Xiao Yao Sect, saying, "The Celestial Si Kong Castle is now Tiantai's. Even though we used to be enemies, since the Celestial Si Kong Castle is now under the

jurisdiction of Tiantai, I'm not going to destroy you."

Lin Feng looked at Wen Ao Xue in his arms while talking. He looked depressed and dispirited. He didn't care about the Si Kong Clan.

"Kneel down and make a vow. From now on, you will obey Jiange," said Lin Feng indifferently. The members of the Si Kong Clan frowned. Kneel down? Make a vow? Obey Jiange? Was that the price they had to pay for Lin Feng to forgive them?

"They have five seconds. Wu, if they refuse, kill them all," said Lin Feng. Then, he turned around and looked at the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect, "You don't need to kneel down. Just make a vow."

Lin Feng rose up into the air and said, "From now on, Jiange rules over the region. After making a vow, Wu will take the leaders of the Si Kong Clan and the Xiao Yao Sect to the Palace of Medicinal Kings. You're going to destroy the Palace of Medicinal Kings."

Then, Lin Feng disappeared.

In one sentence, Lin Feng changed the situation of the whole territory.

The Si Kong Clan and the Xiao Yao Sect had to obey Jiange and destroy the Palace of Medicinal Kings. Jiange now ruled over the region.

—

Lin Feng left, and so did Jun Mo Xi. Wu was in charge of the Si Kong Clan, they had to make a vow, and so did the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect.

Finally, Jiange's people started feeling powerful. Jiange was rising again! Even though they were now the rulers of the region, at least of the central part of Ba Huang, Lin Feng couldn't stay there all the time.

The two emperors and the Zun cultivators of the Wen Clan were dead. That was enough. At least, Lin Feng didn't want to kill more people. If Jun Mo Xi wanted to, he was free to kill more people, but Jun Mo Xi wasn't a mad murderer, either. Killing the Wen Clan was enough to avenge the Celestial Palace of the Immortals. Besides, he had told Lin Feng himself to take Wen Ao Xue's body back to the Wen Clan.

After bringing her body back to the Wen Clan, Lin Feng didn't head back to Jiange. He took out his boat and headed to the northern part of Ba Huang.

He didn't need to worry about Jiange anymore. The Sword Emperor had recovered. Wu was going to take care of the Palace of Medicinal Kings. Lin Feng didn't have many things to sort out anymore in Ba Huang Province. That little boy had left his village and wanted to recreate Tiantai, so Lin Feng had to do something. He was going to find him.

In the northern part of Ba Huang, in Tianjing City, the city where Tiantai used to be, Lin Feng went to a restaurant. That restaurant was called Tianjing Restaurant, it had existed for a long time. It was one of the most famous restaurants in town. Lin Feng hoped to find some pieces of information there.

Lin Feng couldn't find Xiao Chen in the northern part of Ba Huang. Therefore, he could only try to find some information about him in this restaurant.

At that moment, he had already been sitting in that restaurant for four hours and finally, he heard some people talk about Ye Chen.

"Tian Long's tenth prince is really strong indeed. I heard that when he was a cultivator of the very top of the Zun Qi layer, at the Zun level, nobody could compete with him anymore. Now, Tian Long Divine Castle's people are looking for Ye Chen, he's going to

die.”

“Indeed. The tenth prince is really strong. He will soon break through to the Huang Qi layer. Maybe then he will manage to make Tian Long Divine Castle come back to life. And since Ye Chen wants to rebuild Tiantai, the tenth prince can’t possibly forgive him.”

The people in the bar were talking. Lin Feng looked at them and asked, “Everybody, back then, didn’t Lin Feng kill all the princes of Tian Long Divine Castle? Where does that tenth prince come from?”

“Are you a foreigner?” asked those people.

Lin Feng smiled and nodded back, “Indeed, I just arrived in the northern part of Ba Huang.”

“Nobody knows who the tenth prince is, but he’s always had a high social status in Tian Long Divine Castle. People just call him the tenth prince. Now he wants to resurrect Tian Long Divine Castle, so some former members of Tian Long Divine Castle gathered to recreate their group. Even though they’re not emperors, they’re really strong, especially the tenth prince who acts as their leader!” smiled the speaker.

Lin Feng nodded and said, “I see. And how strong is Ye Chen?”

“Ye Chen is young. He’s a sword cultivator. He’s quite strong and is already a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer. However, he probably can’t compete with the tenth prince. If he encounters Tian Long’s tenth prince, he’s definitely going to die,” replied the speaker.

Lin Feng frowned and said, “Your Excellency, you said they were going to kill him, do you know where they all are?”

“I’ve heard that Tian Long Divine Castle had investigated and had found his village. Now, they’re in his village, it seems. Apparently, if Ye Chen doesn’t show up, they’ll destroy the

village.”

Lin Feng looked furious. He stood up and left. The one who had just spoken gulped down his beer and watched him go.

“Who is he?” The people in the restaurant were surprised at his reaction and stared after Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had known Ye Chen when he was a baby. He had grown up and still remembered Lin Feng. He had even gone to Tiantai to find him. Now, he wanted to rebuild Tiantai! And now Tian Long Divine Castle’s people had surrounded his village and were threatening the people there.

At the border between the western part of Ba Huang and the northern part of Ba Huang...

In the village, people had stopped what they were doing, as many strong cultivators had appeared in the small village and made everyone gather by the waterfall.

At the waterfall, there was a gigantic stone. Tian Long’s tenth prince stood atop it wearing a dragon robe, looking majestic and dignified as he gazed into the distance. Two people had appeared at that moment, and one of them was Ye Chen.

“You silly little boy, why did you come back! Leave now!” said someone on the ground.

Ye Chen shouted, “Master!”

“Go away, you don’t belong here anymore!” said his Master at that moment. However, someone punched him violently and he coughed up blood.

“Stop shouting, moron,” swore the member of Tian Long Divine Castle icily.

“Stop!” shouted Ye Chen furiously. The Master had a very important position in the village. He was everybody’s teacher in

the village.

“You should worry about your own life!” sneered the tenth prince, as dragon energies invaded the atmosphere. “You’re so weak, and you think you can make Tiantai come back to life? Now, Tian Long Divine Castle rules over the western part of Ba Huang, and the northern part of Ba Huang!”

“Ridiculous, Tiantai destroyed Tian Long Divine Castle a long time ago. If Uncle Lin Feng were here, he would crush you, you wouldn’t even dare stay here,” retorted Ye Chen icily.

“Uncle Lin Feng? Ridiculous. Since when do you know Lin Feng? Unfortunately, I was born too late, if I had been born a few years before, Lin Feng would have never dared act that arrogantly in Ba Huang!” retorted the tenth prince, releasing a powerful bestial Qi. Dragon scales appeared around his body. He had the dragon transformation ability of Tian Long Divine Castle!

“Uncle Lin Feng killed the nine other princes. If he were here, you wouldn’t dare act that arrogantly,” laughed Ye Chen, smiling coldly.

“Even if he were here now, I’d kill him!” swore the tenth prince furiously and loudly. His bestial Qi had surrounded Ye Chen.

“Is that so?” said another voice at that moment.

The tenth prince frowned and glanced around. Who was talking to him?

Chapter 1837: First Disciple

“Who’s that arrogant?” The tenth prince glanced around, but didn’t see anyone.

There was a swirl of wind, and someone appeared in front of the tenth prince.

When Ye Chen and Ye Xue saw him, they were stupefied.

“Uncle Lin Feng!” shouted Ye Chen, smiling widely. He could remember when he was still a child and Lin Feng came to visit. He didn’t remember everything, but he remembered Lin Feng had changed his life. Uncle Lin Feng hadn’t changed at all.

“Lin Feng!” exclaimed Ye Xue. Surprisingly, he showed up at the perfect moment, just like last time.

When the Master saw Lin Feng, he was stupefied. They had hope again!

“Who are you?” asked the tenth prince, eyes narrowed. It was a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer, just like him.

“You said that if I showed up, you’d kill me,” said Lin Feng calmly. The tenth prince looked at Lin Feng strangely.

The tenth prince stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng used to be very famous in the region, and now he was here?

He’s only a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, like me? What could he do against me?, thought the tenth prince. He looked at Lin Feng icily and shouted, “Even if you’re really Lin Feng, I’ll kill you!”

The tenth prince started running towards Lin Feng, releasing power to surround Lin Feng. Some cosmic energies appeared indistinctly. He had reached the very top of the Zun Qi layer!

“Die!” shouted the tenth prince, and punched Lin Feng with all his strength. He had a ferocious smile on his face. However, his smile disappeared when his fist crashed against Lin Feng. It was as

if he had punched a stone. Lin Feng remained completely motionless.

The tenth prince used both fists and started madly punching Lin Feng over and over again. He even punched Lin Feng's face crazily, but nothing happened. Instead, death energy emerged from Lin Feng's eyes and the tenth prince gave out a horrible shriek. He was hurled away, shaking violently.

Lin Feng didn't even look at the tenth prince, he looked at the remaining members of Tian Long Divine Castle and said indifferently, "You have ten seconds to leave."

Someone rose up into the air and shouted, "Let's go, we can't offend Lin Feng."

People rose up in the air one after the other. They didn't care about the villagers anymore. Lin Feng had killed many people from Tian Long Divine Castle back then. The tenth prince's attacks were also ineffective against Lin Feng. If they stayed there, they would just die.

Lin Feng watched them go. He could have easily killed them, but he didn't. He hoped that the villagers would be able to continue having a peaceful life. If he killed people here, more people might come back to avenge their friends. If he let them leave safely, they would have no reason to come back.

The tenth prince looked at Lin Feng and asked shakily, "What's your cultivation level?"

"Die!" responded Lin Feng, releasing death energy to pierce through his eyes. The tenth prince limply fell down from the sky and crashed to the ground before the eyes of the villagers. The tenth prince was so strong, and Lin Feng had killed him by simple looking at him? And the tenth prince had dared say he could easily kill Lin Feng?

To Lin Feng, the tenth prince was just a buffoon. He didn't care

about him at all. And he didn't need to tell him about his cultivation level, they weren't friends.

"Uncle Lin Feng!" said Ye Chen.

Lin Feng turned around and smiled at that young man, "You were just a boy and now you're almost a grown up."

When Ye Chen heard Lin Feng, he smiled widely and scratched his head. "Uncle Lin Feng, I've heard that you left the small world and that you went to the great world, is that true?"

"Indeed," Lin Feng nodded.

"So, are you going to leave again?" asked Ye Chen. He still sounded like a child in front of Lin Feng, but not in front of his teacher.

"Of course!" Lin Feng smiled. Ye Chen wanted to say something, but the words didn't come out. Finally, he managed to say, "Uncle Lin Feng, I want to come with you to the great world!"

"Xiao Chen, the great world is even more dangerous than the small world. There are too many strong cultivators there. There are millions, if not billions of people who are stronger than me in the great world. It's very dangerous. And also, if you leave, what will happen to your family in the village?" said Lin Feng put his hand on Xiao Chen's shoulders and smiled.

"I'm not afraid!" declared Ye Chen. He looked at the crowd and smiled, "Teacher, Grandpa Wang, Grandma Gao, uncles and aunties, you support me, you want me to go to the great world, right?"

"Xiao Chen, you can go. You're the strongest cultivator of the village. We obviously don't hope that you'll stay in the village forever. You can come back sometimes. That's enough. Don't be like me, who stayed here to teach cultivation to children," said the Master.

"You can go, kiddo!" the old people of the village all spoke up.

“Go and explore the great world! When you have time, come back and tell us about it.”

“Alright!” agreed Xiao Chen, nodding happily. Then he promised, “When I become strong, I will come back and help you have long and happy lives.”

Lin Feng watched him calmly and sighed. In the cultivation world, people like Xiao Chen were rare. He was a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer and he had retained the heart of a child. That was probably why he had become so strong.

“I will take care of Xiao Chen!” Ye Xue promised the crowd. At that moment, the three of them were already in front of the villagers.

“Auntie, I should take care of you!” laughed Ye Chen.

“Alright, it’s all good!” said the Master, before turning to Lin Feng and saying, “Lin Feng, Xiao Chen knows everything about you, and has told us everything about you. Nobody is as strong as you in Ba Huang. Please take care of them in the great world.”

Then, the Master knelt down before the astonished Lin Feng, and all the villagers knelt down before Lin Feng a heartbeat later.

“Master, what are you doing? I am not a god,” declared Lin Feng, pulling on the Master’s arm to make him stand up.

The Master replied, “Lin Feng, you saved our village twice, kneeling down before you is the least we can do, and we also do it for our children.”

“I will do my best to take care of them,” promised Lin Feng. At the same time, a powerful strength made everyone stand up. Lin Feng hadn’t had such a feeling for a very long time, he felt even more motivated. Xiao Chen even had tears in his eyes. Lin Feng asked, “Xiao Chen, are you willing to have me as a teacher, though?”

When Xiao Chen heard Lin Feng, he was astonished, and felt like

he was dreaming. The Master was extremely happy too, and shouted at Ye Chen, “Xiao Chen, pay respects to your teacher!”

As if Xiao Chen had realized something, he smiled, knelt down and said to Lin Feng, “Uncle Lin Feng... no... I, your new disciple, am honored to have you as a teacher.”

“Stand up, little boy!” Lin Feng smiled and pulled on Ye Chen’s arm, then tapped his shoulders. If Ye Chen hadn’t retained the heart of a child, Lin Feng wouldn’t have had this idea.

“From now on, you’re my first disciple!” smiled Lin Feng. Xiao Chen smiled in a silly way, he couldn’t believe this was happening!

“Alright, you can stay here in the village for a few days. When I come back, we’ll leave,” Lin Feng said to him. He wanted Ye Chen to spend more time with his friends and family before leaving.

“Alright!” replied Ye Chen, nodding very seriously.

Lin Feng told him, “Don’t practice cultivation too much, stay with your friends and family and enjoy your time with them.”

Lin Feng turned around and left. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared over the horizon. Ye Chen clenched his fists as he watched his teacher go. He felt extremely excited as he thought, Uncle Lin Feng, you will always be like a uncle to me, I will never disappoint you!

Chapter 1838: Worried About Them

Ba Huang Province, which had been quiet for a long time after the Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings had taken control over the region, suddenly stirred up.

Those two groups, the Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings, had been wiped off the map of the region, and all their strong cultivators had been killed. It was said that it was because they had joined hands to destroy the Celestial Palace of the Immortals, Jun Mo Xi had come back and avenged them. The strong cultivators of the Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings had been killed outside of Jiange.

The Wen Clan and the Palace of Medicinal Kings had been destroyed by two young people who weren't even famous in the small world.

At the same time, the news spread that the reason why the Wen Clan had been destroyed outside of Jiange was that someone had ordered them, as well as the patriarch of the Xiao Yao Sect, to go there. Many people were wondering who that could be, but at the same time, they already knew it was: Jiange's Young Master, Lin Feng!

Jun Mo Xi and Lin Feng were good friends, and now they had come back together. Nobody could compete with them.

Very quickly, more news spread in the northern part of Ba Huang. Some people saw two of Tiantai's former direct disciples at the former site of Tiantai: Hou Qing Lin who controlled reincarnation energy, and Tian Chi the Sadhu. They had become extremely strong. Some people pretended that they had seen how strong Hou Qing Lin had become, that one glance at him and he gave you the impression that you could fall in the abysses of reincarnation.

The crowd understood that Tiantai's disciples had gone to the

great world, and now they had come back.

However, Lin Feng had suddenly left Ba Huang. He was in his boat and flying at full speed. He had never traveled that fast in the small world, so he had the impression that it had become a lot smaller.

The small world was the same though, it hadn't become smaller. Lin Feng was just too fast now, and his cultivation level was powerful.

Things appeared and disappeared from his field of vision in the blink of an eye.

Tian Chi hadn't changed. Back then, their two teachers hadn't followed them when they had decided to go to the great world, they had decided to stay in the small world and practice there. Lin Feng didn't know where they were, but Tian Chi Empire hadn't changed and they still ruled over Gan Yu.

Lin Feng slowed down when he arrived there, landing on the ground and walking in the snow, leaving footprints behind him. Some of Tian Chi's disciples glanced at him. Lin Feng was wearing white clothes, he looked calm, serene, and friendly, but at the same time he looked extraordinary even though one couldn't see how strong he was.

"I don't know where he's from, but he looks really strong," said some people after passing next to Lin Feng. They didn't stop, however.

Lin Feng continued walking. Sometimes, he saw people practicing cultivation in the mountains. Other times, he saw people sparring. He was just passing through.

Lin Feng soon arrived at the top of the mountain. He saw a beautiful woman there, snowflakes kept falling all around her. She was smiling and looked graceful, as if she had been dancing.

A beautiful woman dancing alone in snowy mountains...

At that moment, a young man was slowly walking towards her, he looked handsome and quite strong. He sat down cross-legged in the snow and watched her dancing.

The beautiful woman stopped and looked at the young man. The young man stood up, smiled and said, "Shi Yun, you're really beautiful."

"Thank you," Huo Shi Yun smiled and nodded at him. "I'm going back."

The young man looked at her and called out, "Shi Yun!..."

Huo Shi Yun looked back at him and smiled, "What's wrong?"

"Shi Yun, why don't you like me? Why am I not good enough for you?" asked that young man, his face sad. Huo Shi Yun was polite... too polite. She kept some distance.

"It's not that, you're a good person, but we're not a good match," Huo Shi Yun answered calmly. She gazed into the distance, looking sad.

At that moment, she saw another beautiful woman, looking pure and noble.

"Master!" greeted a young man, bowing before the woman. Tian Chi Xue nodded at the young man and looked at Huo Shi Yun. "Shi Yun, why do you do that? Why did you go to Ba Huang? You knew that he had already left. He went to that mysterious world. He's extraordinary and talented. He will maybe become our leader someday. And he's just making you wait, why can't you forget about him?"

Huo Shi Yun smiled, but didn't reply. Some things couldn't be explained.

"Shi Yun, you must understand something, maybe he will never come back," Tian Chi Xue said when she saw that Huo Shi Yun

remained silent.

“Even if he doesn’t come back, I will always miss him, forever. And I will always hope,” smiled Huo Shi Yun.

Tian Chi Xue smiled wryly and shook her head, “Poor you.”

She couldn’t understand why Huo Shi Yun kept waiting for someone who would probably never come back, and who wasn’t even interested in her. Was he that outstanding?

“I’m going back.” said Huo Shi Yun, nodding to Tian Chi Xue.

“Tiantai has been reconstructed in the boundless world.” At that moment, Huo Shi Yun heard a voice, and her heart started pounding. She glanced around, but saw nothing.

A brilliant light appeared with a hum, and some scriptures appeared in front of Huo Shi Yun. The scriptures floated in the air in front of her. They were dazzling to behold.

Tian Chi Xue was astonished too. Ancient scriptures!

She looked around, but saw nothing.

At that moment, another brilliant light appeared in front of Huo Shi Yun. Some cosmic energies condensed in front of her.

Huo Shi Yun couldn’t see anyone. She looked at the two things, then she raised her head and cried out, “Lin Feng, I know it’s you! Why don’t you want to see me?”

Nobody replied to her. Huo Shi Yun shouted for a long time, but nobody appeared. She started crying, hot tears spilling down her cheeks. Finally, she gave up, taking the scriptures and the seven-colored Taoist robe made of feathers and whispered, “Lin Feng, I know you’re here.”

“Is it him?” shouted Tian Chi extremely loudly, her voice spreading everywhere. Indeed, Ancient scriptures and imperial weapons, that could only be Lin Feng, otherwise he wouldn’t have offered them to Huo Shi Yun. However, he hadn’t even showed

himself, it seemed that he had left.

Tiantai has been reborn in the boundless world. Huo Shi Yun could almost hear that voice in her brain. She put the scriptures and the imperial weapon away and left. She didn't continue looking for Lin Feng. She knew that if Lin Feng had wanted to see her, he would have come. If he didn't want to see her, she couldn't force him. She was stunned, but elated: Tiantai had been reborn in the great world!

Tian Chi Xue looked around, but also saw nothing. Lin Feng simply flew away. He had come back to the small world, he wanted to see the people who really mattered to him; his family, his close friends. He hoped they were all fine. If Huo Shi Yun wanted to find Tiantai, she could try and find Tiantai. With the ancient scriptures and the imperial weapon, she could protect herself.

After leaving the snowy mountains, Lin Feng crossed Dragon Mountain. He went to the Tang Clan, but Tang Yi Yi and Tang Rui had already left. The elders were still there, however. The tree was still there in the garden, where Lin Feng remembered You You. He didn't know where she was.

Mister Tang told Lin Feng that You You had never come back since the last time. Lin Feng was very worried, maybe she hadn't come back because she had gone to the great world. It had been ten years, she would have had no reason not to come back.

Lin Feng didn't spend too much time at the Tang's. He gave some presents to her parents and left. He didn't go to the imperial palace this time. He didn't need to go, Jun Mo Xi had come back to the small world and would be able to go himself. He had to get back to Xue Yue. He hadn't been back for ten years. Wu Shang had probably grown up!

Chapter 1839: Small King of the Underworld

Xue Yue had changed a lot. After all the emperors had come to Xue Yue, the Netherworld Demon Emperor and Empress Xi's small worlds had appeared, and their Qi covered the whole country. Xue Yue had become a paradise for cultivators, and many people came to Xue Yue to practice cultivation. The country had been developing for ten years already, and it wasn't a country anymore, it was now an empire, the Empire of Xue Yue. It had also become much bigger. Some neighboring countries had been absorbed by the Empire of Xue Yue.

Xue Yue now ruled over the whole Xue Yu Region. Dragon Mountain, Black Feather, and so on were low-level empires. the Empire of Xue Yue had already surpassed them. There were many geniuses in the Empire of Xue Yue. There were millions and millions of Tian level cultivators there and sometimes, one could see Zun cultivators too. In a place like Xue Yue, Tian and Zun level cultivators were considered extremely strong.

Yangzhou City was the capital of the empire, and was developing very quickly. Living conditions were better there than anywhere else in the country. Everybody wanted to move to Yangzhou City, where there were many strong cultivators and many cultivation resources. People were rich there!

Lin Feng would find it difficult to recognize Yangzhou City this time. Everything had changed. There were lofty buildings and skyscrapers everywhere. There were also gigantic parks, luxury restaurants, and hotels.

The Lovesickness Forest Restaurant was a famous restaurant there, and was known for having the best alcohol in the country. It was said that the Lovesickness Forest was a place in the former capital where the first lady of the empire had lived for a long time. Back then, the imperial city of Xue Yue wasn't Yangzhou City.

No other restaurant had liquors quite as good as theirs.

In the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant, there were the most beautiful women and the best liquors.

Everybody said that when traveling to Yangzhou City, you had to go to the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant and drink their strongest liquor. That way, you could see the most beautiful women.

The Lovesickness Forest Restaurant was an open-air restaurant. It was neither luxuriant nor extravagant, but the decorations were tasteful and the place was quite spacious. There were many pavilions of people who were drinking all sorts of strong alcohol. Beautiful women were dancing here and there. There were many young men who had the strength of the Zun Qi layer, but when they drank the specialty of the restaurant, their cheeks still turned red.

The woman who were dancing were half naked and looked extremely beautiful. Men loved that kind of place, even fifteen-year old teenage boys loved the place. Besides, not only did those women look seductive, they also knew how to dance properly.

“Brilliant!” shouted a teenaged boy, drinking a sip of alcohol and watching the beautiful women. He didn’t hide the fact that he was aroused. It wasn’t his first time there. Besides, he was sitting at the best table of the restaurant. His social status was probably very high. He also looked strong.

A loud sound spread in the air as someone slapped the young man. The young man’s guard didn’t even dare say anything. He just lowered his head, and continued looking at the beautiful women. They were all pretty and charming.

The young man’s social status was extraordinary and someone dared slap him, that person had a high social status too. The young man smiled and said, “Sister, please sit.”

“You little bastard. You want to die!” said the beautiful woman. She looked young, but nobody really knew how old she was.

The young man smiled and giggled helplessly. He was afraid of that woman.

They were hardly alone in the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant, as there were many other people around. There were two young men as well, looking perverted and staring at the women. They hoped the women would strip.

“Brother, I’ve heard that the wildest women of Yangzhou City were in the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant. It’s not a false rumor it seems,” said one of the young men, smiling evilly.

The one he called brother down his glass and smiled, “Well, I’ve heard the exact opposite. I’ve heard that they never sleep with men.”

“I’ve heard that as well, but I don’t believe it,” said the other one, smiling indifferently.

“Why don’t you believe it?” asked his big brother.

“Because after I sleep with them, then the rumor will just be a rumor!” said the young man, smiling even more.

His brother laughed, “Give it a try then.”

The young man stood up and walked up to the dancing stage.

“Young Master, please stop,” said a beautiful woman who was performing a sword dance. She pointed at the young man with her sword.

“I don’t want to stop, what if I continue?” said the smiling young man. At that moment, dazzling lights appeared and all the other women looked at him furiously.

“You can watch from ten meters away, not closer,” said one of the women calmly. However, the young man didn’t listen and continued walking.

Ice-cold lights appeared, one of the woman released sword Qi to surround him.

Many people gasped with amazement when they saw that incredible sword attack. Few people knew that the dancers of the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant were sword cultivators.

But when the sword moved towards the young man, it didn't pierce through his skin, he just grabbed it with his hands.

The sword broke and the young man forced the woman into his arms. The other women surrounded them and released powerful energies. The atmosphere became oppressive.

His big brother was still sitting there, drinking alcohol and smiling. It was a small place, his little brother was safe.

As expected, the sword lights around him broke apart and the women's expressions changed drastically. That young man was strong, and could easily defeat them. He had broken through to the Zun Qi layer.

"Hmph!" The teenager stood up, looking furious as he said, "Stop!"

When the young man saw the speaker who was even younger than him, he smiled coldly and put his hand on the woman's face. He smiled and said, "Who are you?"

The furious young man was even more furious, some people surprisingly didn't recognize him? In Yangzhou City, everybody knew him because he was famous.

"Lin Wu Shang!" said the young man icily and walking forwards.

"Small King of the Underworld, Lin Wu Shang!" Even though the young man had never seen Wu Shang, he had heard about him. In Yangzhou City, everybody knew about Small King of the Underworld Wu Shang. He was very famous. He had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer when he was nine years old, and through to the Tian Qi layer when he was twelve and now, he was

fifteen and had broken through to the Zun Qi layer.

He was strong, but he also had an incredible social status because of his brother: Lin Feng.

Of course, the only woman who dared tease him was Xiao Ya, nicknamed the Evil Queen.

The Evil Queen had raised him with punches. She was very strict. Words were useless on him.

Lin Wu Shang already controlled earth abstruse energies. He started by throwing a fist out.

However, his punch ended up moving towards the woman, so he had no choice but to recall his energies. The young man had put the woman in front of him. At that moment, that young man punched out, using a golden punch which immediately crashed onto Wu Shang's body.

The young man's big brother was confident. The Small King of the Underworld? They were in a tiny little empire!

Xiao Ya didn't move either. She was also confident that the Small King of the Underworld would solve the problem. She would just watch, even if Lin Wu Shang got injured!

Chapter 1840: Deadly Injuries

Some of Lin Wu Shang's bones broke. He looked furious. He suddenly looked like a demon and started absorbing endless strength.

He condensed abstruse energies and broke his opponent's golden punch.

Another punch arrived. He didn't flinch, he continued meeting his opponent's attacks.

"You want to die!" said the young man icily. His golden abstruse energies turned into a sharp sword which moved towards Lin Wu Shang's punch. However, gauntlets appeared on Lin Wu Shang's hands. His earth armor broke and the golden lights pierced through his skin. He started bleeding.

There was a metallic ringing as the earth punch broke the golden punch apart and then moved towards his opponent's head.

"How cruel!" thought the crowd when they saw that. The Small King of the Underworld was cruel and fearless.

The young man's expression changed drastically. He released even more golden energies. His eyes turned golden, and golden strength emerged from them.

"Piss off, piss off!..." he shouted furiously. Lin Wu Shang had the sensation that his head was going to explode because of that loud voice – his opponent was also using soundwave strength! He knew that his attacks were powerful, but he should have known that people who dared act like this in the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant were really strong. There were only five young people who dared act like this in there, but he didn't mind because he knew that he was stronger than them.

In the whole Empire of Xue Yue, people who were that young and had already broken through to the Zun Qi layer were rare. Of

course, Lin Wu Shang was one of the exceptions.

“Argh!” A powerful strength emerged. Nine dragons appeared behind Lin Wu Shang. It was as if he had received all of Yue Meng He’s powers. The nine dragons were powerful, bestial Qi filled the air, and shot at his opponent.

His opponent raised his head and golden light beams shredded the air before moving towards Wu Shang’s head.

How strong, he must be from abroad, and not from Xue Yue, thought Xiao Ya when she saw the young man who was fighting against Wu Shang.

The nine-headed dragon roared as it charged towards the outsider. Wu Shang also immediately grabbed his opponent with two hands. Golden lights kept attacking him, blood splashed, but his spirit swallowed it.

“You’re insane!” said the young man, staring at Wu Shang. This kid was insane. People around were stupefied. No wonder that he was called the Small King of the Underworld!

The dragon’s heads started nibbling on the outsider’s body. Pieces of flesh were torn off. At that moment, a powerful force emerged, and a thunderclap rang out. Suddenly, Lin Wu Shang and his dragon were hurled away.

“Weapon!” Lin Wu Shang was stunned. A dazzling golden blade had appeared in his opponent’s hand, it contained cosmic energies.

“That’s...” many people in the restaurant were astonished. How incredible!

The young man looked furious. His brother’s face twitched. People from the small world dared attack his brother like that, they wanted to die!

“Brother, kill him!” said the older brother icily. He didn’t need to tell him, his younger brother already wanted to kill Wu Shang. He raised his golden blade and charged.

“Wu Shang, run!” shouted Xiao Ya. She also started moving. However, the gigantic blade was too fast. Blood splashed. Xiao Ya sensed that her heart was pounding, her eyes were bloodshot. Wu Shang was Lin Feng’s only brother!

“No...” shouted Xiao Ya furiously. She just saw an arm fly away. Blood splashed, and Wu Shang shouted, “Sister, run!”

Lin Wu Shang started running at the same time, fleeing the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant at full speed. Xiao Ya quickly caught up with him, she was faster than him.

Another blade reached them. Blood gushed out as two women were killed. Fissures appeared in the whole restaurant as it started to collapse. The young man looked insane and bloodthirsty. He stared at the two people who were escaping.

“You think you can escape! Where do you think you’re going? You dared touch me, you’re going to die!” screamed the young man, released even more Qi. People’s hearts were pounding. What a scary battle! Where was this person from? Why had he come to Xue Yue? He even had weapons! Nobody could compete with him!

Who’s that guy? He even dares try to kill Wu Shang!, thought the shaken crowd.

The young man’s older brother moved next to him and asked, “You’re not injured, are you?”

“I was just wounded,” replied the young man icily. He was bleeding, and looked ferocious. “Brother, I will definitely kill them!”

“Kill them, we came here because of the Netherworld Demon Emperor and Empress Xi’s historical vestiges. And coincidentally, we came across someone who works for the local government. We can kill him,” said the older brother indifferently. It sounded easy when he said that.

They both had imperial weapons and were in a small empire.

They felt like kings here!

Wu Shang and Xiao Ya went back to the imperial palace of Yangzhou City. They were bleeding. Everybody looked at Wu Shang's injuries. Their faces turned deathly pale.

“Who did that?”

“Xiao Ya, what's going on?”

Everyone was asking questions. Everybody loved Wu Shang in the imperial palace, and now someone had cut off one of his arms. They were furious!

“Everybody go into the deployment spell. We'll talk about it later,” said Xiao Ya. Everybody was stupefied. What had happened? Xiao Ya looked scared.

“Wu Shang, why don't you use your blood to recover?”

“I can't recover. Someone used a weapon with cosmic energies to cut it off. The injury is too severe,” Wu Shang said icily.

“A weapon with cosmic energies?” Everybody was stunned and pulled long faces. Who had imperial weapons?

“A very high-level imperial weapon. The opponent was powerful,” said Xiao Ya. She took Wu Shang into the small world. Those people had to be from the great world, they couldn't be from an ordinary group. People who had such weapons were from powerful families.

Xiao Ya wished Lin Feng had been there. Even though many strong cultivators protected the palace, they were just cultivators of the top of the Zun Qi layer. They couldn't fight against people who had imperial weapons. If their enemies followed them here, the situation could quickly deteriorate.

“Xiao Ya, what's going on?” asked Lin Hai. He arrived and saw that one of Wu Shang's arms had been cut off. He was astonished, and very sad. Who had cut off his son's arm?

“Uncle Lin, we came across some powerful people. Go and inform everyone please. We must get ready to escape,” Xiao Ya said to Lin Hai. Lin Hai was stupefied. Some people dared offend their family in the Empire of Xue Yue?

But since Xiao Ya talked that way, it was serious. They had to react quickly. Besides, Lin Wu Shang was badly injured, he might die from his injuries!

“Wu Shang, will you be alright?” Lin Hai asked Wu Shang.

“Uncle Lin, it’s nothing incurable,” spat Xiao Ya.

Lin Hai just replied, “Alright, let’s retreat for now. I’m going to inform the two strong cultivators of Jiange.”

Chapter 1841: Jiu You

In the small world, everybody used to think that their world was the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Now, everybody understood that it was only a subpart of it.

At the center of the small world was Ba Huang and Jiu You. Ba Huang was a place with a sea made of desolate Qi. When thinking about Jiu You, most people thought of the twelve empires, but they rarely thought of the origins of that place...

—

In the central part of Jiu You, in a remote and inhabited place, everything was black. There were gigantic rivers, and the waters of those rivers were black, too.

It was a forbidden area, the forbidden area of Jiu You.

According to legends, people who went there usually died, so nobody dared go there, creating one of the forbidden areas of the small world. This place couldn't be compared to the forbidden area of Gan Yu, the Death Valley. Even in the ancient times, emperors didn't dare go to the forbidden area of Jiu You.

However, this time, some people had broken the rules. There was a group of people flying above the black waters of Jiu You. They looked extraordinary, and all of them were staring at the water. A gigantic whirlpool hundreds of meters wide yawned beneath them, as big as a city, and looked incredible. It was impossible to know how deep it went.

Jiu You referred to the Nine Netherworlds, as opposed to the nine clouds. According to legends, this whirlpool led to Hell and contained evil palaces.

At least, in the small world, nobody dared go there. When people went there, they could die, and in any case, they ended up in the Nine Netherworlds, which was like taking a trip to Hell.

However, on that day, these people were an exception.

Someone turned black like the water of the Nine Netherworlds, looking like a living corpse from Hell.

That person jumped into the water. A powerful strength tried to corrode his body, but it didn't affect him. Surprisingly, he could stay in the Nine Netherworlds, in the forbidden area of Jiu You!

"Will the Nine Netherworlds explode?" asked someone at that moment.

The person in the black waters raised their head and looked up. He said, "The strength is fermenting. The eruption is imminent."

The other person nodded, their eyes twinkled. "The Demon-Sealing Sage sealed a great world in his small world, and hid it here. We've been looking for five thousand years and finally, we've found it. We'll obtain great things!"

"Indeed!" replied the person in the water. They looked a bit scared and asked, "Do you think he left an imprint in this small world?"

"The Nine Netherworlds are useless to him. Even if he left an imprint and knows we're here, I don't think he cares much," answered the person in the air. "By the way, did you do what I asked you?"

"I asked some young people to take care of it. They went to Xue Yue to check. Since Xue Yue is the Demon-Sealing Emperor's homeland, he sealed a world here for that reason. I've heard that the Netherworld Demon Emperor and Empress Xi had appeared in Xue Yue. I wonder if historical remains have appeared, too," said the person in the black waters. The other person nodded and continued looking around.

People from the small world knew nothing about what was happening there. After coming into this world, these people had remained very discreet and had directly gone here. Apart from the

Demon-Sealer's things, they weren't interested in anything else in this world except Xue Yue, because it was his homeland.

Lin Feng didn't know about them either, obviously. When those people had come into the small world, the strong cultivator of the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders hadn't dared say anything. He had held his tongue, and he didn't tell Lin Feng and the others about them, either. The Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders couldn't afford offending these people, who could kill their cultivators just by glancing at them. Even Qing Di Mountain didn't dare offend such people!

At that moment, Lin Feng was walking through Xue Yue, enjoying the landscapes. It felt good to be there, and he was smiling happily.

In the distance, he saw Yangzhou City.

Yangzhou City has become so big. It's much bigger than before, smiled Lin Feng. Finally, he was back! He had left his family and friends for such a long time. If they wanted to, he could take all the people from Yangzhou City back with him and nothing would happen to them.

"Dad, mom, I'm back!" proclaimed Lin Feng, smiling widely. And Xiao Ya, Xin Ye, and the others, how were they doing?

Little Wu Shang, you must have grown up. What do you look like now?, thought Lin Feng happily. How was everyone after ten years?

Lin Feng's godly awareness suddenly started shaking. He stopped smiling and frowned angrily.

The thread of godly awareness is broken!, thought Lin Feng suddenly. Back when he had left, he had given everyone a thread of godly awareness. Nothing had happened to those threads of energies in the last ten years. The only possibility was that

something serious had happened!

His smile disappeared and he started moving like lightning. His boat appeared and he turned into a light beam. In the blink of an eye, people in Yangzhou City sensed a powerful strength in the sky. Many vendor's booths were even blown away. They raised their heads and only saw a beam of light passing by.

Chapter 1842: Jiu You's Government

The two young men from the Lovesickness Forest Restaurant were already in the imperial palace of Yangzhou City. People around them were terrified. For them, this was a holy place, a symbol of the prosperity of Yangzhou City. There were many Zun cultivators in the imperial palace. Now, they were in danger.

An arrogant-looking young man was holding a gigantic golden blade. His blade contained a powerful strength which terrified people.

It seems to be an imperial weapon! Back then, when the Netherworld Demon Emperor's small world appeared, many strong cultivators there had imperial weapons. Thanks to their imperial weapons, they were extremely strong. With those people and their imperial weapons, Yangzhou City's imperial palace is in danger!, thought the crowd, shaking and staring at the guards of the imperial city. The strong cultivators from Jiange were all injured now.

"Come here and die! Maybe I will spare their lives if you do!" sneered the young man, smiling icily. He was looking for Lin Wu Shang.

"Young Master, go and hide in the deployment spell," said the strong cultivators of Jiange. Even though the opponent's cultivation level wasn't high, their imperial weapons were high-level ones. They were much more powerful than the imperial weapons the Qi Clan had used back then, and contained very hard gold cosmic energies. They had to be much stronger to fight against people who had such weapons.

"A man has to bear the consequences for his actions. Therefore, I have to bear the consequences of my actions!" said Lin Wu Shang, grinding his teeth.

"Wu Shang!" shouted Xiao Ya. "What could we tell your parents

if something happened, and your brother?”

Lin Wu Shang's eyes were bloodshot. He looked at Lin Hai and Yue Meng He, and said, “Dad, mom, I'm sorry. I won't regret anything if something happens. If something happens to me, it means I'm weak. Don't avenge me if I die. Let Lin Feng do it.”

“Wu Shang, you're not allowed to go!” cried Yue Meng He. She had only one son by her side. How could she let him die?

“This bunch of insects is really noisy!” said the young man, cutting the air. In a flash, fissures appeared in the sky. The small world couldn't handle such a powerful attack, as spatial tears appeared everywhere.

“Move away!” said Xiao Ya, throwing herself at the blade energies.

Thunder clapped, and Lin Wu Shang's face changed drastically as he shouted, “Sister Xiao Ya!”

There was another crack of thunder, and a bright light appeared. A curtain of lights surrounded Xiao Ya. The attack didn't kill her, but she had landed in a fissure.

“Xiao Ya!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He had arrived, and charged towards the fissure. Lin Feng landed in the fissure, his face like a madman. The fissures didn't affect him at all. He immediately jumped into the lights.

“Xiao Ya!” shouted Lin Feng. Lights appeared and surrounded her body, preventing her from dying. He drew a deep breath of relief. Mister Xiao had given her something to protect her. She hadn't died.

“Brother Lin Feng!” shouted Xiao Ya happily when she saw Lin Feng. Lin Feng took her in his arms and came out of the fissure. They appeared in another place in Yangzhou City. The two then went straight back to the imperial palace.

“Lin Feng!”

“Young Master!”

The people in the imperial palace were stupefied, Lin Feng was back!

Yue Meng He wiped off her tears. Lin Feng was back! In her eyes, Lin Feng was a god. Nothing was impossible for him!

“He’s Lin Feng!?” The distant crowd watched him. Was that Lin Feng, the legendary cultivator they had heard of? Surprisingly, he looked so young!

Lin Wu Shang stared at Lin Feng. The last time he had seen him, he was only two years old! He didn’t remember his older brother that well, he had only heard the adults talk about him.

“Is that my brother?!” Lin Wu Shang smiled happily. Surprisingly, in such circumstances, he managed to smile.

“Bro!” shouted Lin Wu Shang. Lin Feng looked at Lin Wu Shang. That was his biological brother, Wu Shang?

When he saw Lin Wu Shang smile even though one of his arms was missing, he was furious.

“Who are you?” he asked the two cultivators icily. How come people with such powerful imperial weapons had appeared in Xue Yue? This was strange.

“Those people look like their savior has come back, but to me, it’s just one more person who’s going to die!” sneered the young man, smiling icily. Lin Feng waved his hands and sword lights rose to the skies. A horrible shriek spread in the air. The young man’s arm fell down from the sky.

“No...” the young man’s face changed drastically, desperate and ferocious. He looked at Lin Feng with murder in his eyes, and pointed at Lin Feng with his golden blade.

However, suddenly, some death strength penetrated into his eyes, and had the sensation that he was going to die. He looked

even more furious.

“Bro, help me steal his imperial weapon, I will kill him myself!” said Lin Wu Shang. He looked insane as he rose up into the air. When Lin Feng heard his brother, he didn’t kill the man, instead landing next to Wu Shang. There was a glitter of light, and a powerful and heavy blade appeared in Lin Feng’s hands. That blade was a level-eight imperial weapon, and contained incredible earth cosmic energies. Lin Feng had found it in the ring of a strong cultivator he had killed in the Celestial Evolution Palace.

“Help yourself!” said Lin Feng, giving the blade to Lin Wu Shang. Wu Shang nodded and threw himself at the other cultivator with the blade. Those young men relied on their imperial weapons to be dangerous. Now, the tables were turned!

The young man’s face changed again. He could sense that the weapon Lin Feng had given to his brother was even scarier than their own. He realized that he had made a grave mistake.

“Die!” shouted Lin Wu Shang, furiously throwing himself at the young man. Lin Feng threw himself at the older one. That one was stupefied, he also took out an imperial weapon as he stared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng charged him fearlessly. That person sensed oppressive energies surround him and shouted, “Stop!”

“Where are you from?” asked Lin Feng icily.

That person was stupefied and couldn’t stop shaking. He closed his eyes and shouted, “Listen to me!”

“Speak!” said Lin Feng icily.

“I know that I can’t compete with you but you can’t kill me. If you kill me, it will activate the imprint I have. You can’t offend my group. Let’s forget about this!” said the young man hastily to Lin Feng.

He opened his eyes again and looked at Wu Shang, “Hurry up and

stop fighting! Otherwise, your entire clan will be destroyed!”

Lin Feng looked at him straight in the eyes. Nine Netherworlds water appeared and pierced through his eyes, corroding his will. Demonic will started flowing throughout his body.

“Where do you come from?” repeated Lin Feng icily. Lin Feng could sense something strange in that cultivator’s will. He released his godly awareness and attacked the man’s will further. His godly awareness shook violently. The older brother’s body became dazzling and suddenly a silhouette appeared.

It’s a godly awareness imprint, thought Lin Feng, shocked at the sight. He looked at the stronger cultivator’s shadow in the air. That person was wearing a dark robe and his eyes were dark. Dark lights twinkled in that person’s eyes, they looked like the six great divisions in the wheel of karma. They were powerful and could kill people easily.

A great emperor’s godly awareness strength, thought Lin Feng, stunned. How come there were such strong people in Xue Yue?

The great emperor looked at Lin Wu Shang and said icily, “Make him stop.”

Lin Wu Shang looked insane, he cut one of his opponent’s legs off with his blade before turning to look at Lin Feng.

“Kill him!” said Lin Feng to Wu Shang. Cultivators never flinched. Lin Wu Shang had lost an arm, he had to get his revenge and act with an indomitable will.

“Alright!” said Lin Wu Shang excitedly.

He threw himself at his opponent, as the young man shouted, “Ancestor, save me!”

“You want to kill him?!” shouted the silhouette furiously. However, at that moment, a powerful great imperial energy invaded the atmosphere. His eyes moved to Lin Feng. Lin Feng had a great sun disc which contained powerful energies.

“A thread of godly awareness dares act this arrogantly!” spat Lin Feng, constricting the godly awareness with his dazzling sun disc. The silhouette shouted furiously, but the atmosphere around it kept breaking apart.

“You’re insane!” shouted the thread, retreating quickly. However, the sun disc was a Great Imperial Weapon and constricted that thread of will. It surrounded him and he disappeared inside.

The crowd was trembling. A black hole appeared. The young man underneath it hadn’t died, surprisingly. Lin Feng had used his full strength to attack the silhouette instead.

At that moment, the young man’s face turned deathly pale as he trembled all over. Lin Feng and his brother were insane. They even dared destroy a great emperor’s godly awareness, and they had a Great Imperial Weapon!

“Don’t kill me!” pleaded that person, retreating as fast as he could.

Lin Feng just looked him straight in the eyes and said icily, “Tell me where you are from and why you came to this small world. Are there other strong cultivators in this small world?”

“We’re from Jiu You’s Government. We came to the small world because of the Demon-Sealing Sage’s forbidden area. Many people came, there are emperors and great emperors here!” said that person. He had no choice but to talk.

“Jiu You’s Government? Demon-Sealing Sage?” Lin Feng frowned. The Demon-Sealing Sage had to be the demon sealing great emperor, but few people knew about him. They didn’t know he was called the Demon-Sealing Sage.

It was like the Three Lives Great Emperor; people who didn’t know about him called him that. People who knew about him knew that he wasn’t a mere great emperor.

“Where in the Continent of the Nine Clouds is the Jiu You’s Government? How strong is the strongest cultivator who came with you?” asked Lin Feng.

“Jiu You’s Government is the main group in Long Night City in Purple Clouds. We’re looking for the forbidden area in Jiu You. It’s an order we received from the Nine Netherworlds’ Sage. We finally found it. The strongest cultivators with us are great emperors, we didn’t have time to call any stronger cultivators,” answered the young man.

Lin Feng was astonished. People from Purple Clouds had found a small world in the Dark Night region. That was incredible!

“Why are you looking for Jiu You’s forbidden area?” asked Lin Feng.

“According to legends, there is a secret palace in Jiu You’s forbidden area, but for us, people from Jiu You’s Government, practicing cultivation there is very useful. Back then, the Demon-Sealing Sage went crazy and sealed a gigantic area of the great world in his small world, including Jiu You’s forbidden area,”

the young man answered.

Lin Feng was shocked once again. The Demon-Sealing Sage was incredibly strong. He could seal entire areas of the great world inside his own small world!

“I’ve heard that the Demon-Sealer’s homeland was Xue Yue, but there are no historical remains here, what do you think?” asked Lin Feng. He thought of the Huang Sea and the small world which looked like Xue Yue within it.

“I noticed as well. The Demon-Sealing Sage may have sealed the historical remains somewhere else. Maybe he put them in the same small world as the one where he sealed the part of the great world,” answered the young man. Lin Feng understood that there were even more mysterious things about the small world he came

from!

The Xue Yue which was accessible by going through the coffin in the Huang Sea was the ancient country of Xue Yue. It was a place created by the Demon-Sealing Sage!

That small world really was the Demon-Sealer's small world. However, why didn't the demonic side of the Three Lives Great Emperor show up there? Why had it been sealed in the Death Valley?

"You can die now!" The darkness in Lin Feng's eyes slowly disappeared, and he stopped controlling the young man, who limply collapsed and died.

Wu Shang also killed the other young man. Surprisingly, these things were related to the Demon-Sealing Sage and Jiu You's Government.

Chapter 1843: Lin Feng's Wildness

I wonder when the Demon-Sealing Sage sealed a part of the great world into his own small world. The members of Jiu You's Government even have someone called Jiu You's Sage. They must be incredibly strong. The one who created this small world was powerful. Unfortunately, the Demon-Sealing Sage stopped taking care of this small world. Otherwise, this small world would have been incredibly powerful, thought Lin Feng. Perhaps the Demon-Sealer initially wanted to use this small world to relax and enjoy himself. Maybe he was happy as long as nobody destroyed it.

And there was Jiu You's Government's Jiu You's Sage. He was probably a peerless cultivator. It was going to be difficult to remain in Yangzhou City.

"Bro!" Lin Wu Shang walked over to Lin Feng and smiled.

Lin Feng was saddened to see that Wu Shang had lost an arm, and he was only fifteen years old. He was completely different from Xiao Chen in the small village, he had an indomitable will.

Lin Feng had always been worried about Wu Shang because he had had a great life, and was born in great circumstances with everything he needed. But in the end, he was still motivated and worked hard.

Lin Feng released life cosmic energies, which started flowing throughout Wu Shang's body. Lin Feng clapped Wu Shang's shoulders and said, "You're only fifteen and you're already so tough! Just be careful next time."

"Hehe!" Wu Shang just laughed. Lin Feng tousled his hair. Wu Shang laughed again and said, "Dad and mom said that when you were fifteen, you had started rising in the region and that you were traveling alone. They said you were fearless and had an indomitable will. People also admired you. I'm fifteen, I can't be much weaker than you!"

“But you should stay safe,” said Lin Feng. He wanted nobody to have the same life he did back when he was fifteen. Back then, he had no background, he was just traveling around alone. Wu Shang had a different life. He could stay safe. He had a choice!

Lin Feng and Wu Shang landed on the ground. Lin Feng looked around and warmth filled his heart.

“Dad, mom!” Lin Feng greeted his parents. Yue Meng He’s eyes were still filled with tears.

Lin Hai just nodded, “Little Lin Feng, what about Wu Shang’s arm?”

“I will heal him,” said Lin Feng, releasing both of them. Lin Feng also noticed Liu Fei, Yun Xi, Yi Xue and the others, but someone was missing... He inquired, “Where’s Xin Ye?”

When everybody heard him, they looked a bit strange. Lin Feng suddenly had a bad premonition, but he also understood what had happened after they told him. He had wondered about this a long time ago. She was already being controlled...

“I’m going to look for her!” said Lin Feng, smiling grimly. Then he added, “Dad, mom, I don’t have much time. I need to sort out some things.”

“Alright, you can go,” nodded Yue Meng He.

Lin Feng slowly rose up in the air and said, “Jiange’s people, attend me.”

There was a sound of swords cutting the air. The strong cultivators from Jiange appeared, their faces looked as sharp as swords.

“Young Master!” greeted the strong cultivators, bowing before him. Lin Feng made a cutting motion, and dazzling lights appeared, materializing many imperial weapons, all containing a powerful strength.

Jiange's cultivators were stupefied, and their hearts also started pounding.

"Imperial weapons, all these are imperial weapons." They had never seen so many imperial weapons!

To Lin Feng, these weren't important. He had killed so many strong people who came from powerful groups. They all had great items with them, and Lin Feng had taken them all after killing them.

"All of you, choose a weapon," said Lin Feng calmly. Jiange's people were overjoyed. Their silhouettes flickered and they all chose weapons they liked.

They had been protecting Xue Yue for ten years and as time passed, they had been complaining more and more. However, at that moment, they all had the feeling that it had been worth it. Their Young Master had come back, and Jiange had probably started rising in Ba Huang Province.

"Tell everyone what I'm going to tell you now. In around two months, there might be tremendous changes in Xue Yue. Maybe Xue Yue will have to stop communicating with the outside world, but your lives won't be in peril. People who want to stay can stay, those who want to leave can leave. However, those who want to leave will have to leave within two months!" said Lin Feng extremely loudly. Many people started shaking. Xue Yue was going to change?

What was going to happen in Xue Yue?

"Yes, Young Master!" said the two leaders of the group from Jiange. Then, the strong cultivators' silhouettes flickered. They went out in Xue Yue to inform the populace.

Lin Feng looked at the imperial palace. The Chi Xie soldiers were the guards of the imperial palace. Lin Feng had made them rise, they were legendary in Xue Yue.

“Chi Xie forces, listen to my orders!” shouted Lin Feng.

“Chi Xie Troops, present!” shouted the troops rising in the air.

“Same for you, go and inform the population that Xue Yue will change!” said Lin Feng.

“Chi Xie forces, yes, sir!” The soldiers also headed out.

On that day, they traveled all around the country with their beasts, from one city to another.

Of course, ordinary people couldn't leave Xue Yue within two months, maybe they wouldn't be able to leave Xue Yue in their entire life. Lin Feng mainly meant to inform cultivators.

The Empire of Xue Yue stirred. Lin Feng had come back and had told his people that some great changes were going to happen, that maybe they were going to be isolated from the outside world. How astonishing! Many people were startled, and had to choose; did they want to stay or did they want to leave?

They wanted to know what kind of changes Lin Feng was talking about. Did he mean good or bad changes?

Nobody told them anything, though. Lin Feng was giving them a simple decision: Xue Yue was going to change, did they want to leave or stay? That was their choice.

As the news spread, people from the imperial palace in Yangzhou City also had to come up with a decision. The majority of them decided to stay. Many people in the imperial palace were closely related to Lin Feng, and they trusted him. No matter what happened, Lin Feng was like a god to them, he cared about them and wouldn't let anything happen to them.

Of course, most people were determined, but still a minority of them decided to leave. Lin Feng didn't force them to stay. They were all free.

A few days later, people who passed through Yangzhou City's imperial palace realized that it was empty. Nobody was there anymore! Where were the members of the imperial palace of Xue Yue? Were they all in the mysterious deployment spell?

Everything was so mysterious. But like everyone else in Xue Yue, they had to decide what they wanted to do, did they want to stay or leave?

Lin Feng had given them two months. If they wanted to leave, they had to leave within two months. For them, the easiest choice was to move to countries and empires which weren't far from Xue Yue.

During those days, a powerful cultivator landed in Yangzhou City, and inspected Yangzhou City with his godly awareness. Many people sensed a powerful pressure. However, the strong cultivator didn't find anything. The young man who had killed his descendants was already gone. His family, his friends, and all the members of the imperial palace were gone.

The man was furious, but impotent. A gigantic hand descended from the sky and destroyed the imperial palace, which turned into a field of ruins.

Actually, he didn't know that Lin Feng was in Yangzhou City and was watching him. Lin Feng understood that the Demon-Sealer's seal restrictions didn't exist anymore. Maybe back then, his purpose was just to threaten all the emperors of Ba Huang.

After the strong cultivator left, Lin Feng also left Yangzhou City. He started inspecting all the areas of Xue Yue. At the same time, he started creating his own small world based on Xue Yue's shape.

At the top of a mountain, there was a young man seated cross-legged with his eyes closed. It was Lin Feng.

In Lin Feng's spirit small world, there was a group of people who were watching everything. They were stunned.

"Bro, are we really going to stay in your small world?" asked Lin Wu Shang, staring at Lin Feng. This place was just like Xue Yue. For Wu Shang, there was no difference between Yangzhou City and the place where he was at that moment, it's just that they were in another world!

Wu Shang, Yue Meng He, and the others were all astonished. This was the small world of a strong cultivator? Lin Feng had become so strong that he could already create a world which looked just like Xue Yue!

"Wu Shang, this is my small world, but it's also Xue Yue. In the future, this world will become very big," said Lin Feng, smiling.

Lin Hai frowned and walked over to Lin Feng, "Little Lin Feng, you really want to imitate Xue Yue in this world?"

"Dad, I gave everyone the option to stay or leave. Those who choose to stay want to stay in Xue Yue. I can't change their world, their everything. They want to keep their houses and everything," said Lin Feng. "I will constantly make this world better. I will make it become powerful. In a hundred years, you will maybe see the whole world, not just Xue Yue!"

Chapter 1844: Changes in the Empire

Lin Feng appeared in a forest in Xue Yue. He inspected each of its corners with his godly awareness. He memorized everything perfectly. Then, he continued traveling using his boat.

Soon, people who had decided to stay would have to be moved. Lin Feng wanted everything to stay the same because it was his homeland. He could change anything anytime, anyway.

After a short time, Lin Feng appeared in an ancient village. The people there were ordinary people. Even those who knew about cultivation and practiced it had low cultivation levels, the majority of them were cultivators of the Qi layer.

“Sister, did anyone tell you anything about moving?” asked Lin Feng, walking up to an older woman wearing clothes made of animal skins and smiling.

“I did. Troops riding beasts came to the village and told us about it,” said the woman. She smiled and stood up, “You must come from very far away. Have a seat. I’ll get you some water.”

Lin Feng didn’t refuse. He took the glass of water, it was fresh and cool. He smiled and said, “Do you know what the people in the village intend to do?”

The woman shook her head, “We’re in the cultivation world, nobody knows us. We don’t know about anything. We don’t need to worry. Why would we waste our energy to travel over hundreds of kilometers? We don’t want to leave Xue Yue, anyway.”

The woman kept smiling. In the distance, a group of strong men with spears arrived, they looked like hunters. There were animals at the top of those spears, showing a successful hunt.

“Miss, who’s that?” asked one of the young men.

The woman looked at him and smiled, “He’s passing through our village so I gave him a glass of water.”

“Brother, stay with us tonight, let’s get drunk and have a barbecue!” proposed the young man, smiling wholeheartedly at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn’t refuse. In the evening, the villagers gathered, grilled some meat and stuffed themselves. Everybody danced together, and was having fun. Lin Feng was in the crowd and enjoyed himself too. He loved it.

On that day, Lin Feng even slept around a fire, everybody slept next to one another. On the second day, he left the village. He continued traveling around the country.

—

The day arrived. Many people in the Empire of Xue Yue were afraid. Two months had passed. Some tremendous changes were going to happen in the country, but was going to happen?

Lin Feng, his family, many of his friends, the Chi Xie forces, and Jiange’s cultivators were all in the imperial palace of Yangzhou City in the Empire of Xue Yue.

“Are you all sure you want to stay? If you want to leave, it’s not too late. I don’t want you to feel pressured,” Lin Feng asked the crowd. He had warned everybody that some tremendous changes were going to happen in Xue Yue.

“We’re sure. We want to stay and protect Xue Yue forever!” said the Chi Xie forces. Xue Yue was their homeland. They had to protect it, they would never give up!

“Alright!” Lin Feng nodded and looked at the members of Jiange, “Jiange rules over Ba Huang now. You can leave and go back if you want.”

Jiange’s cultivators clenched their fists. What a difficult decision! Many people didn’t leave Xue Yue because they were from there, but Jiange’s people were from Jiange in Ba Huang. Something was going to happen, maybe they would be stuck in Xue Yue forever.

“Young Master, I have decided to stay!” declared someone. His voice sounded like a whistling sword. He knew that if he went back to Jiange, he would enjoy a high position and live in comfort, but it would be difficult to become stronger. If they stayed with Lin Feng, they would maybe have more opportunities, or maybe not, but they were willing to take that risk.

“Alright, I’m not asking you again then!” said Lin Feng. Suddenly, his spirit materialized in dazzling form, and a page of his spirit dashed to the sky.

“What’s that?” People raised their heads and stared at that one-paged golden scripture. There was a very detailed drawing on that page, it looked like an entire world...

Brilliant lights appeared. The book became gigantic and turned into a light curtain which blotted out the sky and the sun. People were astonished.

“Something is falling down on Yangzhou City!” shouted some people. It was an illusional world! That world was condensing, it almost looked real...

“That’s...” people in Yangzhou City were stupefied. It wasn’t a book, it was a world, but it looked like a mirage.

He’s condensing Qi into a small world! The strong cultivators of Jiange were staring at Lin Feng. They had heard that emperors could create small worlds but they had never seen it happen in front of their eyes. Qi was condensed and then turned into a solid world, the stability of the small world depended on the strength of the cultivator.

However, could Lin Feng really create a small world like those strong cultivators created? What did Lin Feng want to do?

Very quickly, people from the entire Empire of Xue Yue landed in the small world, without exception. Qi condensed and the most amazing part was that as the world expanded, they saw it for

themselves.

The two worlds were converging!

Was that the tremendous change they had heard of? Who would tell them what was going on?

“Yangzhou City, Imperial Palace!” People in the imperial palace of Yangzhou City were startled as they stared at the mirage. They could see Yangzhou City, the exact same Yangzhou City!

“Stabilize!” shouted Lin Feng. The Qi condensed even more and suddenly, people from the Empire of Xue Yue found themselves shaking violently. The illusion descended from the sky even faster. Was something good happening? Or bad?

Finally, the mirage descended from the sky and landed in the Empire of Xue Yue. The worlds completely fused together as the Qi condensed. The crowd realized they were still in the same place. Nothing had happened. However, they sensed a strange Qi all around them.

What happened?, thought many people. Their hearts were pounding. Not knowing what had happened terrified them.

They didn’t know that Lin Feng was the only one left in the world they were in before, he was watching a whole world emerging. Qi continued condensing. It wasn’t Qi anymore, it was a real world.

What a strange world. It’s my own world, smiled Lin Feng. That world looked tiny to him, but for the people inside, it looked normal. They were still in Xue Yue, the country they knew. They didn’t know they were in another small world.

—

Lin Feng appeared in his small world.

“Bro, why did you disappear all of a sudden?” Lin Wu Shang asked Lin Feng. He was astonished and so was everybody else, they

were all staring at him, waiting for him to reply.

However, Lin Feng just laughed. He didn't say anything. A strong cultivator from Jiange looked at him, his eyes were twinkling and he asked, "Young Master, that's... still the Empire of Xue Yue?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "It's still the Empire of Xue Yue and it will always be. You will also always stay in the Empire of Xue Yue, you understand?"

The strong cultivator looked at Lin Feng in a deep and meaningful way and then he nodded, "I understand. We're in the Empire of Xue Yue and it will always be."

At that moment, many people from Xue Yue looked at the sky and realized that the mirage had disappeared. Nothing had changed. Some people looked around and noticed that some details had changed, it was the same, but at the same time it looked different. Many people were scared, not knowing what had happened.

For example, some people were in front of a well, they were about to take out some water and suddenly, the well had disappeared. Some other people were in their houses, there was dust and spider webs in the corner of the rooms and at that moment, those things had disappeared. Things were the same, but at the same time they had changed, too.

Lin Feng's world couldn't be exactly the same. Many details were different because Lin Feng hadn't noticed them. He had done his best, however.

Many people also quickly forgot about those things because it was still as if nothing had changed. They were still in the Empire of Xue Yue, their friends and family members were still at their sides.

Chapter 1845: Nothing to Worry About

In Lin Feng's world, the deployment spell which protected the imperial city had already disappeared. He didn't need to protect the imperial city anymore. Many trees replaced the deployment spell. Many trees also appeared in Yangzhou City, containing an incredible strength.

That strength flew throughout the entire Empire of Xue Yue. Lin Feng was convinced that his small world would turn into a continent soon. It would be filled with cosmic energies and holy cultivation places.

—

At the foot of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree Lin Feng, his family and friends had gathered. They could all sense the incredible cosmic energies of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. Lin Wu Shang's eyes twinkled and he said, "Bro, that tree's cosmic energies are much stronger than the fate seed you gave me when I was a baby."

"Of course, that tree can make everything change in the Empire of Xue Yue!" smiled Lin Feng. "Don't waste natural resources. Wu Shang, that's a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, it can heal your arm, and it can cleanse your body. It can make you smarter and it can also help you practice cultivation even faster."

"Understood!" said Lin Wu Shang. Lin Hai and Yue Meng He didn't know what had happened, but they didn't ask much. They were still in Yangzhou City in Xue Yue. Everybody else was there, too. For them, nothing had changed, and everything was perfect.

The reason why Lin Feng built a small world was that he wanted to protect his family members. If Lin Feng had just made his family members move into a small world by themselves, they would have been bored quickly. He had made the entire population of an empire move into his small world. This way was much better,

there was life directly from the beginning. And his parents were able to have the same life as before.

“Dad, mom, I have things to do,” said Lin Feng nodding at everybody before leaving quickly. After a short time, he arrived at the border of the Empire of Xue Yue. He created some fences around his small world, so nobody would be able to leave that way. Even if people looked there, they wouldn’t know that another world was on the other side.

Lin Feng created a mountain range as a fence, with many trees and plants. At the same time, he also planted many Bodhi trees in the mountains. Valleys, lakes, rivers, and paths appeared.

After that, Lin Feng jumped to the top of a mountain and looked around. Everything looked real.

Then, Lin Feng flashed away again and continued creating other places. He could do what he wanted. He only stopped when he was too tired, and smiled happily. He had created his own world!

His world lacked people and history. Of course, people could also evolve with time, but Lin Feng thought that if all these people belonged to the same empire, that wasn’t enough. People would need hundreds of years to evolve that way.

Of course, Lin Feng could also establish rules. For example, he could forbid people from killing! That way, people would live in peace and stop fighting. However, if they stopped fighting, what would cultivation become? Therefore, he didn’t establish any rules.

Lin Feng sat down in the air and looked around, smiling widely. This world was his, he was a god here!

“I wonder if I can create things using strength that belongs to me only in my world, or cosmic energies!” murmured Lin Feng. For example, the planet Earth was a world of civilization, of science and technologies. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was a

cultivation world. Both worlds evolved differently, and people in those worlds were different and never met.

However, was the Continent of the Nine Clouds the ultimate version of the cultivation world?

All worlds worked according to the yin and the yang, they all had the earth and the sky, as well as the strength of the five elements. Lin Feng's small world was no exception. However, could he create new sorts of cosmic energies? And were the cosmic energies in his small world the same as in the outside world? In the outside world, could he use the same cosmic energies he could in his own small world?

After thinking for a long time, Lin Feng disappeared from there.

In the outside world, there was nobody left in the Empire of Xue Yue. It was unpopulated and looked abandoned. Human beings and animals had all disappeared in the blink of an eye.

In neighboring countries and regions, people said that they had seen Xue Yue's people rise to the skies and disappear. When people said that, their questioners said they were either insane or drunk.

However, the rumors spread around quickly and many people said that the Empire of Xue Yue was now unpopulated. People had all disappeared between one day and the next.

They were many rumors. Some people even started wondering if those people who were considered insane weren't right. More and more people came to Xue Yue to see if the rumors were true. Many people still didn't believe the rumors but many people also started having doubts, especially when they witnessed reality.

The rumors were not groundless.

The gigantic territory of the Empire of Xue Yue had become desolate. There was absolutely nobody there. Nobody knew what had happened to Xue Yue, and nobody would ever know. It was a

new mystery. People in the outside world started talking about Xue Yue all the time. Even many years later, people would continue wondering what had happened.

Lin Feng had already left Xue Yue. Even though he missed the actual place, he tried to forget about the past and move on. Now, he could focus solely on cultivation. He wanted to become a peerless cultivator!

In the Huang Sea, a place the strong cultivators of this small world didn't even dare visit, someone was waiting. His hair was fluttering in the wind as a powerful desolate Qi kept attacking his body.

“According to legends, the Huang Sea was an ancient battlefield, a symbol of destruction. The Huang Sea back then was the real Huang Sea. It has changed a lot since then. Now, the destructive energies have already faded, I guess,” whispered Lin Feng. He opened his third eye and started absorbing strength like a madman.

His dragons chanted, the nine heads of his dragon spirit all opened their mouths at the same time and started absorbing desolate strength at full speed. They converted the energy into physical strength.

Lin Feng walked through the Huang Sea, cleansing his body with its strength. He was becoming stronger as he understood the desolate energy better and better. Who said that desolate strength couldn't turn into cosmic strength?

Seven days later, in Jiu You's forbidden area, someone who looked like a scholar appeared, wearing white clothes. However, they looked sick and their face was yellow. Even though they looked handsome, they looked really ill. However, that person still

dared go into the forbidden area. That person was Lin Feng.

The young man he had killed had told him that people from Jiu You's Government had gone to the forbidden area of Jiu You. They had looked for the forbidden area for five thousand years, and were ecstatic that they had finally found it. But very few people knew about it.

It was Lin Feng's first time in the forbidden area of Jiu You. Nobody had dared go there in the past, as it was such a dangerous place. However, Lin Feng couldn't control himself, he really wanted to see it.

The ground was black, the sky was black, the lakes and rivers were black. It was like Hell.

Lin Feng saw some people on the periphery of the forbidden area, all of them very strong emperors. Those people were definitely the strong cultivators the young man had told him about, and from Jiu You's Government without a doubt.

Lin Feng didn't disturb them. He sat down in the distance and started moving his hands as if he were drawing. He was actually carving deployment spells.

Lin Feng had to be careful and prepared when bumping into great emperors. These deployment spells would help him escape if required.

Chapter 1846: Jiu You – Nine Netherworlds

When Lin Feng finished carving enough deployment spells, he walked over to a river. An emperor guarded the area and looked at Lin Feng. He said indifferently, “That black water is dangerous. Go away, you can die if you come too close.”

“The black water is the water of the Nine Netherworlds.” replied Lin Feng, raising his head and smiling.

“Indeed,” nodded the strong cultivator.

“So it’s the right place. I came here precisely because I wanted to see the water of the Nine Netherworlds. Can you really die if you get too close?” Lin Feng walked up to the edge of the river. The emperor groaned when he saw that Lin Feng refused to listen to him. If Lin Feng wanted to die, he couldn’t help it. Lin Feng was just a Zun cultivator, he would definitely die if he touched the water.

Lin Feng crouched and looked at the water. He slowly stretched out his hand. This place was the most famous forbidden area of Ba Huang and Jiu You, it was much more dangerous than the Huang Sea.

When Lin Feng put his hand in the water, he sensed some death Qi penetrate into his arm and flow throughout his entire body. He turned black as if he had been turned into a part of the water.

When the emperor saw that Lin Feng was becoming black, a contemptuous smile appeared at the corner of his mouth. Lin Feng hadn’t listened to him, and now he was going to die. It was a dangerous place!

At that moment, Lin Feng released some life energy and gradually became yellow again. He absorbed the death energy and became completely normal again.

“Life cosmic energy!” The emperor looked at Lin Feng strangely.

This young man could touch the black water!

“What a powerful black water,” muttered Lin Feng. He had just put his hand inside it, and death energy had invaded his body. No wonder it was the most famous forbidden area of the region. In the small world, nobody was strong enough to go here!

Lin Feng put his hand away and smiled, “Master, that black water looks like the water from Hell. Are the Nine Netherworlds under the water? Is it really Hell?”

“You can go inside and you’ll see!” replied the emperor, smiling icily.

“You’re funny, Master!” smiled Lin Feng widely. The emperor smiled indifferently too. However, at that moment, his smile suddenly disappeared. Lin Feng, who was smiling so widely, surprisingly... jumped into the black water!

Lin Feng sensed the death Qi invade his body, and turned completely black. The emperor was astonished, his mouth twitched. How was that possible? Lin Feng jumped into the water, wasn’t he going to die?

Lin Feng obviously didn’t die. He controlled death and life cosmic energies, how could he die in the black water? However, he couldn’t sense the powerful death Qi, it was as if the water was trying to make him turn into a corpse.

“Master, don’t you want to try? I don’t think the water is as scary as the legends say.” Lin Feng’s head popped up at the surface of the water and he looked at the emperor.

The man’s mouth twitched. Many other emperors’ silhouettes flickered as they arrive. They were stupefied when they saw him out there in the water.

“Why do I have the impression that this death strength is so special?” murmured Lin Feng. He glanced at the few emperors, the death strength in here was so pure, purer than the death strength

he understood. It was like pure death, the kind of death energy you'd only find in Hell.

Even though the cosmic energies he understood weren't those of the earth and the sky because the gods didn't allow him, the death cosmic energy he understood was much thicker. However, at that moment, the death strength he was sensing was much purer!

Lin Feng swam about in the black water, slowly and carefully. He calmly sensed the energy here, and a vortex started rotating around his body. He started absorb the strength rapidly.

The emperors were all staring at Lin Feng. They didn't understand, Lin Feng was a Zun cultivator, how could he be swimming around in the black water? There were two kinds of people; those who were incredibly strong and could swim in the black water, and everyone else, who died inside or even if they got close to it.

The river was quite long, and as Lin Feng swam along with the current, he could sense that the death energy was getting thicker and thicker. He had turned grey, as if his body had started decaying. He didn't even look alive anymore.

Where is he going?, wondered the emperors staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng finally stopped. If he continued swimming along the current, he might really die.

Lin Feng closed his eyes, floated on his back and relaxed in the black water. At that moment, he really looked dead.

The emperors of Jiu You's Government were astonished and glanced at one another.

Lin Feng floated on his back for a few days and let the current take him away.

He hasn't died!, thought the emperors of Jiu You's Government. They were all astonished. This guy was so strange...

At that moment, Lin Feng opened his eyes and frowned. He could

sense an incredible strength in the water, it was as if it were about to burst, like the lava of a volcano.

In the distance, more people appeared in the air, all wearing black robes. They looked enigmatic and unfathomable, especially the leader of the group. He had the eyes of a demon who had come straight from Hell. He could probably kill people in the blink of an eye just by glancing at them.

They saw Lin Feng and glanced over at him. Lin Feng sensed a powerful strength come down on him.

“Celestial Master of the Seven Nights!” The crowd bowed before the leader of the group respectfully. The leader nodded at them. He looked bestial and powerfully enigmatic. One couldn’t guess how old he was.

“Who is he?” asked the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, looking at Lin Feng indifferently.

“Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, he was just passing through. Surprisingly, he’s been swimming in the black water for three days and he hasn’t died,” replied one of the emperors. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights frowned in surprise. A cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had spent three days in the black water and wasn’t dead? Did he have a special body, such as the Nine Netherworlds body or the King of Hell body?

Many other people appeared in the sky, all great emperors, and they bowed before the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights and greeted him, “Celestial Master of the Seven Nights!”

“Thank you for your hard work,” said the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, “You made great efforts to find the Nine Netherworlds. Do you know when it will erupt?”

“We’ve been waiting for a few months already. Its strength is getting more and more intense. The explosion should be imminent!” reported one of the great emperors. Lin Feng

recognized him. It was the ancestor of the two young men he and his brother had killed!

“Alright,” said the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights. He shook his hand and a black gourd appeared. When the great emperors saw that gourd, they were startled. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights had brought the gourd, he was about to absorb the essence of the Nine Netherworlds.

What do the people of Jiu You’s Government want to do? What mystery does this forbidden area hide?, wondered Lin Feng. They had just said that the Nine Netherworlds were going to explode, they probably meant the area under the black water.

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights flitted over to the gigantic whirlpool of the forbidden area. He suddenly turned black, and the strength of the Nine Netherworlds started flowing throughout his body.

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights took a deep breath, and disappeared into the gigantic whirlpool, where he started absorbing the strength of the Nine Netherworlds. The strong cultivators around were impressed.

“The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights’ strength is powerful. He jumped right into the whirlpool!” Those watching were astonished. Lin Feng was still in the black water, but people didn’t pay attention to him. In the eyes of the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, Lin Feng was just passing through. The goal of the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was the Nine Netherworlds!

The strong cultivators of Jiu You’s Government waited patiently. Lin Feng was still in the black water and he was waiting as well. The death strength below was becoming more and more powerful. Lin Feng had the impression that he was dying.

Time passed and the black water whirlpool rotated faster and faster. More and more death strength emerged. Lin Feng couldn’t handle it.

At that moment, someone's voice drew Lin Feng's attention. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights suddenly rose up in the air at full speed, the whirlpool boiling beneath him. The powerful strength started exploding under him!

The black water started moving at immense speed. Lin Feng was bombarded by black waves as he kept staring at the celestial master. The black water was rising to the skies, it looked like a waterfall but upside-down. It was like the atmosphere was turning into the Nine Netherworlds!

Chapter 1847: Hell

How powerful. The Nine Netherworlds were created that way? Is it the real Hell?, thought Lin Feng, studying the darkness. The fearsome darkness kept spreading through the air, and blotted out the sky. Lin Feng gazed into the distance as everything was covered by the darkness.

The waters moved faster and faster, and kept bombarding him.

Lin Feng finally rose up into the air. He could die under such powerful energies. At that moment, the black waters turned into a black ocean.

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was at the top of the inverted waterfall. His eyes were gleaming as he watched the Nine Netherworlds black water.

He waved his hand, and his Nine Netherworlds gourd became gigantic before it started absorbing the strength at full speed. The inverted waterfall flew straight into the gourd.

“Essence of the Nine Netherworlds!” The strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Government were astonished. The gourd was absorbing the essence of the Nine Netherworlds!

The Nine Netherworlds gourd blotted out the sky. It contained a special kind of strength, as if it had were absorbing the earth and the sky.

Jiu You’s Government came here to steal the Nine Netherworlds’ black water!, thought Lin Feng, shivering. The water which flowed out of the whirlpool was powerful, raw essence strength. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was absorbing all its essence. The gourd he had was a Great Imperial Weapon. There was enough essence in the gourd to form a lake.

The source of the Nine Netherworlds continued being sucked into the gourd.

After a long time, the gourd had absorbed an incalculable amount of the Nine Netherworlds water. There were rumbles as the flow of water began to slow. Almost all of it was now inside the gourd.

The ground was shaking, the sky was rumbling. Lin Feng sensed that something was happening below him.

What's that?, thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng was shocked to see a building appear in the middle of the lake of the Nine Netherworlds. In front of him, a gigantic palace was rising. The black palace was dreadful and imposing, it looked like a palace from Hell!

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was startled too, and stared at it thoughtfully. The main gate of the palace opened itself. It was as if something or someone was waiting for them to go in.

“The entrance to Hell!” The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was astonished. The legends were true. This was the entrance to Hell.

The entrance to Hell! Lin Feng was astonished, his heart started pounding. He blurted out, “Does Hell really exist?”

“Why wouldn't Hell exist?” said the Celestial Master of the Seven Night,s smiling at Lin Feng, “You want to go inside and see?”

Lin Feng's mouth twitched. What would Hell look like?

Lin Feng was very curious. However, what would happen if he went inside? Only dead people went to Hell, that's he had always heard in his previous life. Was it true, though? Maybe it was different. The cultivation world was strange. Cultivators could create worlds, so why couldn't they create Hell?

Lin Feng was still afraid to go to Hell. But he really wanted to see what was inside.

“You, go in,” said the Celestial Emperor to Lin Feng. Lin Feng frowned and stared at the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights. Jiu You's Sage controlled Jiu You's Government. He was a Celestial

Emperor, he could easily kill Lin Feng. Even with a Great Imperial Weapon, he couldn't do much against such a cultivator. He had no way to protect himself.

"Master, what does Hell look like?" asked Lin Feng, smiling at the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights.

"I've never been there," said the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, shaking his head.

"Master, you want me to go in, but you will help me inside, right?" said Lin Feng.

However, the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights just shook his head and said, "I want to see if you can come back out alive."

"That's all? You want to use me to try?" smiled Lin Feng. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights nodded. In his eyes, Lin Feng's life had no value at all. He was just curious and wanted to have some fun.

"I have no choice then," said Lin Feng, shrugging. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was watching him closely.

"Hell, I'm coming in. We'll see what 'Hell' can be!" shouted Lin Feng, crossing the main gate.

——

Instantly, Lin Feng appeared in another place. Outside, everything was darkness. However, in front of Lin Feng, surprisingly, there was a long corridor with guards wearing armor and holding weapons. When they saw Lin Feng, they glanced at him, and then turned around as if they hadn't seen him.

Lin Feng turned around and noticed that the door was closed. Couldn't he get out anymore?

If he couldn't go out, he had to continue. Lin Feng walked through the corridor. Very quickly, he arrived at a broken bridge. The bridge wasn't long and was surrounded by fog. There was a

woman in front of the bridge. She was holding a bowl with a brew inside and smiled at Lin Feng.

“Meng Po’s brew?” Lin Feng was stupefied. He walked up to the broken bridge and looked at the old lady.

(Translator’s Note: check this article for more information on Meng Po and Hell in Chinese mythology: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Meng_Po)

At that moment, the old lady gave the bowl to Lin Feng. Of course, the bowl didn’t contain the waters of oblivion, it contained black water.

“Should I drink it?” asked Lin Feng. The old woman nodded. Lin Feng took the bowl and downed the black water before he gave her back the bowl.

“Welcome to Hell!” smiled the old lady. She took the bowl and indicated the way to Lin Feng.

“Ghost World!” Lin Feng frowned and continued walking on the broken bridge. He looked around at the fog, then back at the old woman. She nodded at him. Lin Feng continued walking and arrived at the end of the bridge. Since it was broken, the path stopped in the air. Lin Feng continued walking past the edge and didn’t walk on the air, he let himself fall down.

Lin Feng did a freefall for a short time, and landed roughly on the ground. He had the feeling that his bones were broken, but he scratched his head and stood up. He glanced around and smiled.

“Hell? Ghost World?” Lin Feng laughed. He knew where he was.

He had arrived in another world.

Hell, or the Ghost World, was just like the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It was just a name. Someday, Lin Feng’s small world would become extremely powerful and at that time, if he wanted, he

would be able to call it Hell or Ghost World, or whatever.

However, was this place in the great world or a small world?

People's cultivation levels here are extremely high. They're not weaker than people in the Holy City, thought Lin Feng glancing at the crowd. People's Qi was different and the buildings around had a different architecture. But people in here were cultivators, too.

But how can I go back?, thought Lin Feng scratching his head. He had a headache. The Nine Netherworlds were the entrance to another world. Since he could come in, it meant he could also leave. The problem was how?

Lin Feng walked forwards and glanced around. He needed to find a place where he would be able to get some pieces of information regarding this place.

Everywhere, the best places to find pieces of information were restaurants and hotels. Lin Feng quickly found a restaurant which was also a tea house. However, the water they used to make tea was black.

Lin Feng drank a cup of tea and sensed the death energy flow throughout his body. He knew that taste. He was drinking more black water!

Of course, the death Qi of this black water wasn't intense. The other people in the restaurant also drank black water, but they looked normal, it was a normal thing to do for them. It was just like tea in other worlds.

"Why do I have the feeling that this place is not connected to any other world?" muttered Lin Feng. This place was very strange. People here had their own drink, black water. Did it mean that they practiced death cultivation, and that they didn't die easily?

"Waitress!" shouted Lin Feng, calling the her over.

She ran towards him and smiled, "How may I help you?"

“I’d like to ask you something. Have you ever heard of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” asked Lin Feng.

The waitress smiled, “I don’t know if the Continent of the Nine Clouds exist or not. But I know that many years ago, I heard some people talk about strange things. They said that this world wasn’t the only world, that there were other worlds. I don’t know if it’s true or not.”

Chapter 1848: Shrine

“Well, what would I do if I wanted to go to another world?” Lin Feng asked the waitress with a friendly smile. Many people turned around and looked at him. Was this guy insane? He was only a Zun cultivator. How could he go to another world?

“Dear guest, you’re embarrassing me. You should go and ask the Ten Yama Kings of the Ten Yama Courts, and if they can’t help you, then you should ask the Great Emperor of Hell. Why would you ask me? I have no idea,” replied the waitress, shrugging and smiling, “Do you want to eat anything, dear guest?”

Lin Feng took out a low-level imperial weapon, it was golden and dazzling. He said to the waitress, “Bring me something to eat. If you answer some more questions, I’ll give you this thing.”

“Dear guest, that weapon is very strange.” said the waitress staring at the imperial weapon.

It must be gold cosmic energy, but it’s different. Something is missing from it, thought people in the restaurant, studying Lin Feng’s imperial weapon. Someone stood up and walked over to Lin Feng. That person stretched out their hand and released gold cosmic energies. Their cosmic energies contained Hell strength!

Lin Feng was startled. Cosmic energies here were different!

In this world, cosmic energies are different from cosmic energies in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It’s just like me, my cosmic energies are different in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. But here, the difference between their cosmic energies and those in the Continent of the Nine Clouds is clear and distinct. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, apart from me, nobody can sense that my cosmic energies are different.

Lin Feng shivered. Could this world be another great world?

If that was the case, it meant that the world in his spirit could

also become a great world!

Small worlds were created by people, what about great worlds? If a great world emerged in Lin Feng's spirit, then he would be the creator.

Lin Feng had created the world in his spirit.

He was stunned. That was another great mystery, a mystery of life!

Maybe the whole world was made of small worlds, the real worlds of cultivation.

"Where does your Hellish weapon come from?" the strong cultivator asked Lin Feng. He sensed that that imperial weapon contained mysteriously different cosmic energies.

"I picked it up," Lin Feng replied calmly. He smiled at the waitress, "Waitress, do you know who the strongest person in Hell is?"

"Dear guest, you're joking. The strongest person in Hell is the almighty God of Hell, of course," said the waitress naturally. The God of Hell was the god of that world. Even though nobody had ever seen him, they all believed he had created the world.

"Have you ever seen him?" asked Lin Feng naturally.

"I don't know anyone who has ever seen him," said the waitress, smiling and shaking her head.

"Do you know where he practices cultivation?" said Lin Feng.

"In the Hell Shrine, I guess!" smiled the waitress. Lin Feng frowned. Hell Shrine? A shrine?

The God of Hell was the creator of this world and he also had a shrine, which meant that the Hell Shrine was probably the most powerful group in this world.

"Who are you?" asked the strong cultivator, staring at Lin Feng. His eyes were pitch-black. Lin Feng's questions were unusual. He

was a Hell Zun cultivator, how could he not know about those things and why did he ask strange questions? The emperor found Lin Feng suspicious. He had a Hell weapon with different cosmic energies, and he asked strange and complex questions.

This guy was strange.

Everybody in the restaurant was staring at Lin Feng. They also thought that he was strange.

Lin Feng drank some black water and put his glass back on the table. He raised his head and looked back at the man. He suddenly said coolly, "If I told you I were from another world, would you believe me?"

The teapot the waitress was holding in her hand exploded. Everybody stopped talking and stared at him. From another world?

"What world?" asked the emperor.

"The Continent of the Nine Clouds!" replied Lin Feng. Everybody stared at him. The Continent of the Nine Clouds? Another world?

Lin Feng stretched his hand and golden lights twinkled. He released empty space cosmic energy. He raised his hand and smiled wryly. He mused, I thought I would be able to be cleansed by more Kalpa strength.

"Cosmic strength, but you're a Zun cultivator. On top of that, surprisingly, you control cosmic energies better than ordinary Hell emperors," noted the emperor, staring at Lin Feng. He was surprised.

"I come from another world. Maybe you don't receive cosmic energies the same way we do," smiled Lin Feng. People slowly started to believe him. He really came from another world!

"Everybody, do you know how I could go back to my own world?" asked Lin Feng. After all, he was from another world. People in there had no reason to attack him.

“We’re in one of the ten main cities of Hell, the Great Imperial Song City. Even though I don’t know how you came here, if you want to go back, I’ll think you’ll need to find the leader of the city, Great Emperor Song. He’s one of the city leaders. Maybe he knows about the mysteries of this world. But you’re just a small Hell Zun cultivator or small Hell Emperor, you will never be able to meet Great Emperor Song,” spoke up an emperor next to Lin Feng.

Apart from the leaders of the ten main cities of Hell, they knew that there were the Ten Yama Kings’ courts which ruled over Hell. They had also guessed that there were other worlds, but now Lin Feng was confirming it!

“The Great Imperial Song City!” repeated Lin Feng. One of the ten main cities of Hell, how strong was Great Emperor Song? With his cultivation level, he wouldn’t be able to meet such a cultivator.

“My name is Zhang Heng, and yours?” asked the emperor sitting down at Lin Feng’s table. Lin Feng didn’t mind. The cultivator was curious about him. He wanted to know what the Continent of the Nine Clouds looked like.

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng, Great Emperor Song has a great army. If you want to meet Great Emperor Song, you might consider becoming one of his soldiers,” Zhang Heng said to Lin Feng, “But those troops are powerfully strong, almost invincible. If you want to become one of their members, it will be very difficult. I want to go to the Great Imperial Song City to try and become one. I don’t have much hope, though,” Zhang Heng said to him. Lin Feng actually needed people’s help, otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to do anything in Hell.

“What do you mean by invincible?” Lin Feng asked him.

“Great Emperor Song’s army is composed of the most heroic fighters. Everyday there are battles, and to become a member of Great Emperor Song’s troops, you must win a hundred times

without losing!” Zhang Heng explained to Lin Feng.

“People who can win a hundred times without losing must be incredible warriors, are they willing to become soldiers?” asked Lin Feng. Many people looked at him strangely, so Lin Feng understood that he had said something wrong.

“Lin Feng, you’re from another world, you don’t understand how powerful the armies of the main cities are. Hell only has ten main cities, and their ten leaders are powerful cultivators, they control all the resources of Hell. You have to become a member of the army if you want to have access to those resources. That’s also the only way for you to become truly strong,” Zhang Heng explained to him.

Lin Feng nodded. Hell was another world, it was different from the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“But there are only ten cities in Hell and there are battles everyday, where do all those fighters come from?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious.

Zhang Heng smiled wryly, “If you knew how many people there are in the ten main cities, you wouldn’t ask. Besides, new strong cultivators appear every day in Hell. Strong cultivators aren’t lacking.”

“Maybe Hell and the world I come from are really completely different,” smiled Lin Feng.

——

At that moment, in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, outside of the forbidden area of Jiu You, someone wearing white clothes opened their eyes. Their gaze was filled with sharp lights. That person stared at the forbidden area. If the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights had been there, he would have been astonished, because that person was Lin Feng, who had gone into Hell!

“My real body went to Hell, I don’t know when I’ll be able to

come out. It seems that everything is strange in the greater world. I need to control my real body now though,” murmured Lin Feng. His eyes were twinkling. “The problem is now that I have left my body, I only have one third of my strength, and there are many kinds of strength I can’t use. I have to be very careful or my physical body will get injured.”

Then, Lin Feng’s clone’s silhouette flickered. He left that place and headed to Ba Huang!

Chapter 1849: Famous Methods

The Three Lives Scriptures were strange. They were similar to the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, as they weren't used to increase one's cultivation level. They represented a kind of cultivation unique to themselves.

The Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures were used to make things change and evolve. They also allowed cultivators to imitate others.

The Three Lives Scriptures were strange, too. They allowed a cultivator to clone themselves. The number three was just an example, it could be much higher.

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people all knew the name of the Three Lives Scriptures. However, few people had obtained them. Most people didn't even know what cultivators could really do with them. According to legends, a cultivator who had the Three Lives Scriptures could divide into three: his real physical body, a Buddha, and a Demon. Legends also said that those three bodies could live autonomous lives, they were three different people and not one person anymore.

Of course, nobody knew the real details. Some people said that the Three Lives Great Emperor hadn't stopped after three bodies, maybe he had a fourth or a fifth body, too!

Even though those bodies could live independently from one another, they were also interconnected. So, if one body studied or practiced cultivation, then the other bodies also benefited from it. Of course, that was a very efficient way of becoming stronger.

Therefore, the Three Lives Great Emperor was a powerful cultivator. Everybody knew that.

Empress Xi had also studied the Three Lives Scriptures. Lin Feng had also seen her use the strange powers related to them. The Three Lives Scriptures didn't only contain methods to divide into

several bodies, they also allowed cultivators to transform.

Body transformation techniques were rare in the cultivation world, but they were usually extremely powerful. Usually, when cultivators divided into several bodies, they had less strength to fight. If a cultivator was extremely strong, they could be almost as strong as their first physical body, but there were still restrictions.

The cloning power granted by the Three Lives Scriptures worked in the same way as mitosis. Each time, a body divided into three, and then they could divide into three again.

The most rudimentary way of cloning oneself was to use the soul embryo, but that way, the bodies didn't have much strength, and the clones' evolution depended on their cultivation. That was what Lin Feng did. He could divide into several bodies and his strength was also divided. However, his clones were also interdependent, they couldn't live entirely on their own.

Only those who understood the technique at a high level could practice cultivation on their own and evolve in the form of several clones. When cultivators were extremely strong, if one of their clones died, it was a big loss, but didn't influence their original body. Lin Feng hadn't reached that level though. If one of his clones died, his physical body would be badly injured.

Lin Feng perfectly understood that. He was now going back to Ba Huang to see Xiao Chen. Then, he would also need to find Hu Yue and Mu Lin Xue, they were waiting for him in Jiange. At the same time, he needed to tell Jiange's people to officially take control over the small world. The passage between Ba Huang and the small world was already open, and anyone could go in and out. Additionally, the passage between the great world and the small world was already under Tiantai's control.

When the news spread throughout Ba Huang, people were stupefied. Tiantai had already started rising in the great world, and some people even realized that the legendary passage between the

small world and the great world was open. They were free to enter and exit the small world as they wished. Many people even started heading to the great world to travel.

In Hell, in the Great Imperial Song City, in the battlefield outside of the city...

There were many people gathered here, some arriving and some leaving constantly.

In the northern part of the battlefield, there were bleachers and in the middle of the bleachers, there was a gate, the first city gate of the Great Imperial Song City.

Among the Ten Yama Courts' kings, everybody knew that Great Emperor Song was the one who loved fighting the most. Battles were incredible in the Great Imperial Song City, and those who stood out quickly drew his attention.

Hell and the Continent of the Nine Clouds were different. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were all sorts of powerful groups. In Hell, the Ten Yama Courts were symbols, and the strongest groups of Hell. The strongest cultivators were also in the ten main cities.

At that moment, in the bleachers, many people were watching the battles. All the fighters were incredible.

“That guy is one of the leaders of Hell, he controls Kalasutra strength. The girl next to him is his daughter, the Kalasutra Princess. And the young man there is one of Great Emperor Song's descendants,” someone pointed out. Many people were startled. One of the leaders of Hell had come to watch battles? Maybe some incredible fighters were going to appear!

No wonder he's one of the leaders, he looks incredible. His daughter or even Great Emperor Song's descendants all look extraordinary and extremely strong, thought the crowd. Having

the opportunity to be selected as one of the leaders of Hell was incredible, one had to be extremely strong, able to oppress everyone in Hell. They could be chosen from anywhere in Hell, but they had to be Celestial Emperors at the least.

Zhang Heng and Lin Feng were also in the bleachers watching the battles. Zhang Heng looked at the man who controlled Kalasutra strength and said, “That guy wields Kalasutra strength, and he controls one territory of Hell as an Minister. He’s very powerful. Great Emperor Song grants people such privileges in the Great Imperial Song City. Most people who become Ministers come from those battle stages.”

Lin Feng nodded. In the jargon of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, those parts of Hell controlled by people were maybe like small worlds, so if one could control a small world in Hell, then one had lots of advantages and access to many different resources.

People in Hell seemed more straightforward than back home, too.

“Zhang Heng, there are so many battle stages and I’m only a low-level Hell emperor, but even if a low-level Hell emperor wins a hundred battles without losing, can they really draw Great Emperor Song’s attention? I think that it must be difficult to draw his attention,” mused Lin Feng. There were many people fighting everywhere, on different battle stages for different levels. For each cultivation level, there were eighty battle stages, which meant that there were eighty battle stages for low-level emperors.

“Of course, Great Emperor Song is only one of the Ten Yama Courts’ kings. To draw his attention, you must be extremely strong. Even though it’s difficult to win a hundred battles without losing, it’s also only to become a member of the army. If you want to draw his attention, you must also be a heroic member of the army!” Zhang Heng told Lin Feng, “Of course, there’s a shortcut which can help you stand out on the battle stage.”

“What shortcut?” asked Lin Feng.

“If you do all your battles one after the other quickly, or if you challenge someone who already has lots of victories, then it can help,” said Zhang Heng. “Each time you complete ten battles, you can choose to have a rest, or you can choose to continue fighting on the second day. Your opponents have to be stronger and stronger. If you can complete all your battles one after the other quickly, very strong people will come and fight against you. If you can really complete a hundred battles without losing, then you’ll amaze everyone!” laughed Zhang Heng. “But a hundred battles without losing and without resting is something difficult to achieve. Don’t try that, you will have many chances to lose if you do. After all, the chances to win are smaller as you progress in the battles, especially since your opponents become stronger and stronger.”

“Your solution is not bad,” said Lin Feng calmly.

Zhang Heng looked at Lin Feng strangely and smiled, “Do you want to try that?”

“I’m thinking about it!” nodded Lin Feng.

Zhang Heng laughed and said, “Alright, I can’t wait to see how strong you are. I will fight on a different battle stage and we will see who’s stronger!”

While talking, they also looked for a battle stage which corresponded to their level. Lin Feng didn’t go up on one immediately, he first watched some battles. Many people in Hell controlled death cosmic energy. After all, they drank black water everyday, the circumstances were perfect. However, controlling death cosmic energy wasn’t very useful for them since they were all resistant to it, as well.

However, if an army from Hell went to the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they would be able to annihilate many people.

No wonder this place was called Hell. Even if they controlled other types of cosmic energies, their cosmic energies always contained death cosmic energy. It was a natural talent they had.

Chapter 1850: Hei Lao

The Kalasutra Minister was one of the leaders of Hell. He was watching the high-level Hell emperors' battles. Even though the Great Emperors of Hell organized the battles, he used them to recruit army members. There was no battle stage for great emperors. At that level, Great Emperor Song could grant them a position if they desired one.

If they were strong, they could obtain a high position. If they were ordinary great emperors, then they had to go through the same painstaking procedure.

Therefore, high-level emperors were the highest-level contestants.

The young man and the young woman next to Minister Kalasutra watched the other battle stages. Minister Kalasutra's daughter was a low-level emperor, and Great Emperor Song's descendant was a medium-level emperor. His name was Wang Zhuo. He was one of Great Emperor Song's direct descendants, and had already fought on the battle stage. He had won a hundred battles without losing and without having a rest, a testament to his strength. When he was still a low-level Hell emperor, medium-level Hell emperors already feared him, not because of his social status, but because of his strength.

Great Emperor Song loved war, and he loved people who were strong. If his children weren't strong, he didn't care about them. Great Emperor Song was very old, and had many descendants. There was a fierce competition between them, and they relied solely on strength to climb up the hierarchy.

"Wang Zhuo, how many people do you think will win a hundred battles without losing? Is the person you mentioned already on stage?" asked Minister Kalasutra. He wasn't dark at all, he was very pale, as if he had never been exposed to the sun. However, it

was said that the Kalasutra Hell was a powerful place filled with fire. The fact that Minister Kalasutra was so pale was very strange.

He wasn't the only one. His daughter Qin Yao was also very white, even paler, but she wasn't ugly. She was considered extremely beautiful, especially her eyes. People didn't dare look at her eyes.

"Minister, look at him," said Wang Zhuo pointing at someone. That person was very tall, he looked stupid, but on the battle stage, he looked powerful.

"How strong! Is he agile, though? He's a bit tall," observed Minister Kalasutra with a laugh, but he knew it wasn't true. He wasn't fast, but it seemed difficult to escape from him because he immediately overwhelmed his opponents.

Wang Zhuo smiled, "His name is Hei Lao. When he attacks, people are like in a cage. No matter how fast you are, it's useless against him because he will imprison you in a cage as hard as a dungeon. He's only a low-level Hell emperor, but today he will probably win a hundred battles without losing. If you like him, he can join Kalasutra Hell," said Wang Zhuo confidently. Hei Lao controlled death, weight, and empty space cosmic energies. He looked stupid but he wasn't. In fact, he was very smart. His empty space and weight cosmic energies fusion was perfect, he could make cages out of them. Therefore, he was very famous. Becoming famous in the Great Imperial Song City wasn't easy, but Hei Lao was famous.

"Of course, if Princess Qin Yao challenges him, then Hei Lao won't be able to get a hundred victories!" said Wang Zhuo, laughing and glancing at Qin Yao. He said that because he wanted Minister Kalasutra and Qin Yao to like him. He was very strong, but he was also very polite. People liked compliments, so he didn't hesitate to dish them out.

Lin Feng also noticed Hei Lao and stared at him. That guy's

cosmic energies fusions were indeed perfect. Lin Feng started thinking, imagining what it would be like to fight against him. He considered using earth and empty space energies to attack Hei Lao.

On the battle stage, Wang Zhuo pointed at a medium-level Hell emperor who had just jumped onto the battle stage. He was wearing black clothes and wielding a sword, and didn't look like Hei Lao at all. He was sturdy, with a grey face and eyes. He also looked expressionless, as he was blind.

“That cultivator is a sword cultivator, his name is Jian Mang, he's blind, very dangerous and precise, though. In the Great Imperial Song City, many strong Hell emperors are afraid of him,” Wang Zhuo laughed. “He can definitely win a hundred times on the battle stage of the medium-level Hell emperors,” said Wang Zhuo confidently, as if he were talking about himself.

Jian Mang was really strong. His sword skills were powerful.

“People who are blind are even better sword cultivators because their sword is like their eyes,” said Minister Kalasutra when he heard Wang Zhuo.

“Minister, look in front of us,” said Wang Zhuo, pointing at someone who was seated lower in the bleachers. There were pavilions filled with people. The people who were seated there had won a hundred times. Twenty pavilions were filled with people!

“I know. Those people have all won a hundred battles,” smiled Minister Kalasutra.

Wang Zhuo nodded, “They are already members of army now. However, they're still here. Minister, you probably know the reason. They want to become even more famous. They want to defeat other strong cultivators who have won a hundred times. That way, they will be even more famous and they will have privileges in the government.”

“I've heard that if you defeated nine champions, you could obtain

privileges. That's not easy," said Minister Kalasutra, smiling easily. He didn't look like a leader from Hell.

"They must also agree on a date, otherwise, seeing ten champions together on the same day is almost impossible," Qin Yao smiled. She looked at Wang Zhuo and said, "Therefore, you made my dad and me come today."

"My boy, you have given much thought to the matter," Minister Kalasutra smiled.

"I've heard that Princess Qin Yao wanted to become a member of our government. Princess, you can shine today," said Wang Zhuo smiling and nodding at Qin Yao.

Qin Yao smiled back, looking even more beautiful. Wang Zhuo was convinced that she could defeat nine other champions. She was very happy.

In the Great Imperial Song City, even an Minister's daughter had to respect the rules. She had to rely on strength to obtain privileges.

—

Down in the bleachers, many young men looked sharp and ready to fight. They already knew that the Minister's daughter was there to fight against them. It wouldn't be easy.

Hei Lao is going to get his hundred victories. It's his last battle. I wonder who will dare come and fight against him, thought many people. At that moment, someone jumped onto the battle stage. It was a handsome young man in white clothes. Everybody was astonished, not because he looked extremely strong, but because he looked like a Hell Zun cultivator.

"Show me your real cultivation level!" challenged someone, rising up in the air to face Lin Feng. Even though people were free on battle stages, there were still rules. Otherwise, the battles would have been totally chaotic. Lin Feng was a Hell Zun cultivator, but

maybe he was hiding his cultivation level.

Lin Feng nodded and released cosmic strength. When that person sensed Lin Feng's energies, he nodded, "Low-level emperor, fine, you can fight!" He went back into the crowd.

"This person is strange," observed Minister Kalasutra, looking at Lin Feng. He didn't understand. Lin Feng was using a technique to hide his cultivation level, and even the Minister couldn't see his real cultivation level.

"Even though he's using a powerful technique to hide his cultivation level, he can't defeat Hei Lao!" proclaimed Wang Zhuo. At the same time, Hei Lao jumped like a demon and thunder rang out.

Hei Lao raised his gigantic hand, which looked as big as a praying mat. He used the same technique to fight against Lin Feng as he had used against everyone else. No low-level emperor could resist him.

"The battle is over!" said Wang Zhuo, smiling confidently. Hei Lao's hand came crushing down... until suddenly, he sensed a powerful strength coming at him. A cage appeared around him... he was imprisoned!

"Hei Lao's own attack!" The crowd was stunned. Hei Lao was imprisoned! The young man destroyed Hei Lao's attack explosively and moved so fast he couldn't be seen, before punching out in Hei Lao's direction.

Explosive impacts shook the air, and Hei Lao was pounded relentlessly. Surprisingly, Hei Lao started reeling, the young man in front of him was so slim, but was as motionless as a mountain.

Wang Zhuo's confidence immediately disappeared from his face, unable to hide his astonishment.

Chapter 1851: Blue Uptala Lotus and Hellfire

Wang Zhuo wasn't the only one who was stunned, as everybody else around was astonished too. Lin Feng looked ordinary, but he had managed to defeat Hei Lao, that definitely wasn't normal! He had even used the same method as Hei Lao!

Hei Lao was extremely strong, and an expert at using earth energies. It even seemed that his body was made of cosmic energies. On the battle stage, nobody had been able to withstand a single attack from him. However, Lin Feng had attacked him and pushed him to the edge of the battle stage.

Hei Lao raised his head and stared at Lin Feng. He didn't understand, how had Lin Feng used the same strength as he had? Hei Lao had created his own attack using some kind of evolution spell as well, so how could Lin Feng imitate him and carry out a more powerful attack than his own? Only Lin Feng knew that he had used pure strength.

"You also control death, earth, and empty space cosmic energies?" Hei Lao asked Lin Feng, narrowing his eyes.

"Indeed," answered Lin Feng, nodding and releasing the three sorts of cosmic energies.

"What spell did you use just now?" Hei Lao pressed.

"I don't know," said Lin Feng, shaking his head. "I learned the spell from you."

When Hei Lao heard Lin Feng, he was dumbfounded. He turned around and left the battle stage. Someone had learned his spell that quickly, and that guy's physical strength was greater than his own. Hei Lao looked stupid, but he was a fast learner, not stupid. He knew that Lin Feng was stronger than him, so he simply left.

"You're not always right," said Qin Yao, smiling at Wang Zhuo.

Wang Zhuo just smiled wryly. "I often make mistakes. There are

many strong cultivators in the Great Imperial Song City. I hadn't thought that someone stronger than Hei Lao would show up today. This guy is a real genius if he defeated Hei Lao. He must have the strength of a medium-level Hell emperor already."

"How curious. Did he learn that spell from Hei Lao?" asked Minister Kalasutra. If Lin Feng hadn't lied, he had incredible comprehensive ability. He had just watched Hei Lao for a little while, and had learned his spell? That was incredible!

In the bleachers, there was someone with a white fan, and each time he shook it, snowflakes appeared. He watched Lin Feng with a smile. "Do you think this guy can get a hundred victories?"

"He imitated Hei Lao's spell and overpowered him with strength. Maybe he can get a hundred victories," said someone else in a pavilion.

Someone else wearing linen clothes smiled. That person looked like a poor and pedantic scholar, however, nobody underestimated him. His name was Prince Mayi. Everybody knew about him. His inescapable net spell was enigmatic, and could kill people quickly.

(Translator's Note: Mayi also refers to a mourning garment made of hemp).

"Not necessarily. He will also have to face some very strong opponents. I've heard that the Prince of the Six Abysses has come to participate to the battles. If that's the case, I'm sure he'll get a hundred victories. So we'll see if he manages to win a hundred times," said the smiling young man with the fan.

"Prince of the Six Abysses?" The people in the pavilion were shocked. One of them said, "If he comes, it's going to get interesting. He's maybe as strong as us!"

People who managed to get a hundred victories were all extraordinary.

"They're all very self-confident," observed Minister Kalasutra

approvingly, looking at the young people in the pavilions.

“If someone manages to win a hundred times in a streak, they are qualified enough to be self-confident,” replied Wang Zhuo earnestly. He sounded as self-confident as before. Even if he had made a mistake about Hei Lao, each time he talked, it was as if fate depended on his beliefs.

Minister Kalasutra understood that Wang Zhuo was self-confident, but he was also right, a hundred victories in a row was really incredible, and people who managed to do that were qualified to be self-confident, indeed. Besides, Wang Zhuo himself had defeated a hundred people in a row without having a rest. He had even defeated famous people. Therefore, he had the right to be self-confident, too! Especially with Great Emperor Song’s blood flowing in his veins...

Hei Lao and Lin Feng had battled, so he had seen how strong Lin Feng was. However, there would probably be other people who wouldn’t believe that Lin Feng was stronger. Therefore, more people stepped onto Lin Feng’s battle stage.

However, they quickly realized that Lin Feng hadn’t won against Hei Lao accidentally, he really was astonishingly strong. Each time someone stepped onto his battle stage, Lin Feng punched them and defeated them. Most of them were hurled off the battle stage. Lin Feng got his first ten victories very easily and seemed relaxed.

Ten victories. He’s strong, but does he know how to do anything else? Besides, is he that familiar with the spell cage spell he imitated from Hei Lao?, thought the observers. At that moment, someone who looked like a gigantic goose flapped his wings and remained suspended above the battle stage, releasing cosmic energies. He had golden eyes that were staring at Lin Feng.

Suddenly, he disappeared. Lin Feng sensed a powerful and sharp Qi moving towards him. The gigantic and powerful goose charged towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng raised his fist as he vanished into the

wind. It was the same old punch. However, his speed was even more higher, as he used wind cosmic energies. Everybody saw how strong the goose was. That guy wasn't going to use cosmic energies against Lin Feng.

"Imprison!" said Lin Feng. A cage appeared, but Lin Feng's cage wasn't as perfect as Hei Lao's. That cage immediately broke when the goose attacked it. But Lin Feng could see the goose moving clearly, and his fist homed in on it as he stared at the goose's golden eyes. The goose suddenly couldn't move anymore, and had the sensation that his spirit was going to be destroyed.

"Even though he's not as familiar with the cage as Hei Lao, he is strong enough to use it in a battle against his opponents," observed Wang Zhuo calmly. He sounded trustworthy and credible.

Everybody realized that Lin Feng was different and abnormally strong. He had defeated Hei Lao, and now he had also defeated the goose. When Lin Feng won sixty times, fewer and fewer people seemed willing to go up onto the battle stage. Lin Feng was calmly standing there, he didn't look tired at all.

He had easily won sixty matches!

Zhang Heng was on another battle stage and the battles weren't so easy for him. He had just won forty times in a row, and he looked exhausted.

In the bleachers, four people appeared, two in front, two behind them.

In the front were a middle-aged man and a young woman. Minister Kalasutra's skin was extremely white, but that middle-aged man was even whiter, like snow. He looked like he was sick. However, considering where he was standing, he couldn't possibly be ill.

The young woman was even whiter, but still extremely beautiful. She was much better looking than the man.

“Minister Uptala!” Wang Zhuo stood up and greeted the newcomers politely. He nodded and smiled at Minister Uptala and the young woman next to him, and then quickly looked away. Wang Zhuo knew that with women, if you didn’t look at them, they thought you were impolite, and if you looked at them a bit too long, then they thought you wanted to sleep with them. Therefore, the best way was to try and not overdo things.

“Uptala, you’re here too!” Minister Kalasutra replied with a smile. They were both leaders in Hell, Minister Uptala controlled Uptala Hell. They were both high officials of the Ten Yama Courts.

“I’ve heard that many things were going to happen,” said Minister Uptala smiling and sitting down next to them. “Qin Yao, my girl, you’re here. I came at the right time!”

“Let’s watch together!” proposed Minister Kalasutra smiling and pointing at one of the battle stages. It was Lin Feng’s battle stage. “That little boy is quite strong. Nobody can defeat him. He’s won sixty-two battles already and he hasn’t rested at all. Uptala, you think he will make a hundred times?”

“Let’s watch and see!” replied Minister Uptala. He continued watching as Lin Feng continued winning.

—

“A hundred victories won’t be a problem for him,” Uptala said to Minister Kalasutra.

“What if he doesn’t?” replied Minister Kalasutra sharply.

Minister Uptala glanced at Qin Yao. He perfectly understood what Minister Kalasutra meant. The other also thought Lin Feng could win a hundred times, but he wouldn’t let him.

“If he doesn’t, I’ll offer Qin Yao a blue Uptala lotus!” replied Minister Uptala with a smile. “But what if he does win a hundred times?”

“Uptala!” protested Minister Kalasutra. Since Minister Uptala

said he'd offer a blue Uptala lotus to Qin Yao, he couldn't miss this opportunity. "If he doesn't, I'll offer some Hellfire to your daughter!" countered Minister Kalasutra swiftly.

Chapter 1852: Blade Technique et Sword Technique

Minister Uptala controlled Uptala Hell. Blue Uptala lotuses represented his strength and were at the origin of the ten thousand things of creation. Hellfire represented Minister Kalasutra's strength. That fire was destructive and powerful. The two things were precious items for Hell emperors. If they didn't take them out even though they had said so, it would be a humiliation.

"How great! I will pay attention to the battles even more then!" exclaimed Wang Zhuo when he heard the two Ministers make a bet. He was surprised, but he was Great Emperor Song's direct descendant and he had seen many things in his life. He said that to make the two Ministers calm down in a friendly manner.

When people around the pavilions heard them, they were startled, too. There were tensions between the two Ministers, they were arguing indirectly. Of course, they were Ministers under Great Emperor Song. At their cultivation levels they couldn't fight for real, so they bet on Lin Feng's results. Both Minister Uptala's blue Uptala lotus and Minister Kalasutra's Hellfire were precious items. For Hell emperors, those things were priceless and very useful. For the two Ministers, they weren't as priceless, and they didn't need them.

"Minister Uptala, you have faith in that young man," smiled Minister Kalasutra.

Minister Uptala stretched out his slender white hand and smiled. "Minister Kalasutra, if you didn't think he could get a hundred victories, you wouldn't have asked me anything." He perfectly understood that when Minister Kalasutra had asked him that question, he already had an answer himself. Minister Kalasutra also thought Lin Feng could win, but now the circumstances were different.

“That was a moment before, now, I don’t think he can win anymore,” Minister Kalasutra smiled. He looked at Wang Zhuo. “Wang Zhuo, what do you think of that lad?”

Wang Zhuo looked at Minister Kalasutra, his expression didn’t change as he replied calmly. “We’ll see who gets onto the battle stage.”

Wang Zhuo glanced at Qin Yao. Minister Kalasutra understood what Wang Zhuo meant.

When Minister Kalasutra heard Wang Zhuo, he smiled. This young man didn’t want to offend anyone, so he answered politely.

Lin Feng didn’t know that the people in the bleachers were looking at him. He didn’t know about the Ministers’ bet, either. He had already won seventy-two battles. For him, fighting at the level of low-level Hell emperors, winning a hundred times wasn’t difficult. Even in the Great Imperial Song City, it wasn’t easy to find a low-level Hell emperor who was as strong as Ji Wuyou.

Ji Wuyou’s fighting abilities had been powerful. It was rare for low-level emperors to be that strong. Usually people who were that strong had a special body. Lin Feng was convinced that there were powerfully strong cultivators in this place, but they weren’t seen every day. Even if there were some, they also had to get onto the battle stage. Besides, even if some people stronger than Ji Wuyou wanted to battle against him, so what?

He had won more than seventy battles and he wasn’t tired. He had just imitated Hei Lao’s attack so he could practice. Everything was going perfect.

—

Lin Feng continued winning. More and more people were watching him. A few strong cultivators fought against him, they wanted to defeat him and benefit from his victories, but Lin Feng continued defeating them as quickly as he had beaten Hei Lao.

Lin Feng had now won eighty-one battles.

More and more people were watching him, including those young people in the pavilions. Some of them smiled each time Lin Feng attacked.

“That guy has won eighty-two battles, and he hasn’t rested yet. Do you know who he is?”

“Usually, people rest every ten battles, but he hasn’t. He wants to draw people’s attention and join the army in a high position.”

After all, showing how strong you were was very important in the world of cultivation.

“The most impressive thing is that he has won more than eighty battles and it seems normal for him. He looks calm and relaxed, and hasn’t used his full strength at all. He doesn’t look tired at all.”

Everybody was staring at Lin Feng and talking. Surprisingly, nobody went up onto the battle stage to fight against him for a while. Lin Feng looked too powerful, and they didn’t want to overdo it. If Lin Feng used even more brutal attacks, maybe he would be even scarier!

“Qing Qing, how strong do you think that guy is?” asked Minister Uptala to the beautiful young white woman next to him.

“I don’t know,” answered Qing Qing, shaking her head. She couldn’t see how strong Lin Feng was.

“He has won more than eighty battles, and he hasn’t used his full strength at all. He will definitely win a hundred times!” declared Minister Uptala. He sounded nice and friendly. However, he sounded firm, too, so people wouldn’t forget his words.

When Minister Kalasutra heard Minister Uptala, he looked at the battle stage. He knew that Lin Feng was extremely strong, but Lin Feng couldn’t win a hundred battles...

“There are many strong cultivators. That young man has already

amazed everyone with his eighty-one victories. That's rare. If someone manages to defeat him, they will be rewarded," Minister Kalasutra suddenly spoke up loudly. The crowd looked at him strangely. A reward for defeating Lin Feng?

Because of that, everyone looked at Lin Feng. If they defeated him, they'd be rewarded but the government would also notice them.

At that moment, a silhouette jumped onto the battle stage. He was wearing white clothes and looked extremely aggressive. His expression was as sharp as a blade.

That's Han Feng. His blade skills are powerful. When he uses his seven strikes attack, people always die. Finally, someone who's strong!, thought the crowd after they recognized the cultivator, surprised he had joined in.

"Han Feng's seven strikes blade technique always kills people. A year ago, he also came onto the battle stage, he won eighty-five times, but he was exhausted and had to rest. Prince Mayi had jumped onto the battle stage then, too. Now, a year has passed. He must have become much stronger," everybody was commenting. Han Feng had practiced cultivation really hard during the past year.

Han Feng took out a black blade, shaped like a crescent moon. It wasn't like a sword, that blade cut people. Han Feng's blade technique was about killing as fast as possible.

Han Feng cut the air with his blade, not speaking any nonsense. His black blade contained powerfully aggressive energies. He charged Lin Feng with an indomitable will.

Lin Feng stared at the blade. It was a death Hell blade, and contained some wind and earth energies. Han Feng looked extremely aggressive and was also extremely fast. His seven strikes laceration technique was powerful, aggressive, fearless, and heroic. His blade could kill people in the blink of an eye. Lin Feng

sensed the energies surrounding him.

“How aggressive, brutal, and violent.” Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch-black. He started using the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to imitate his opponent’s technique. He could suddenly clearly see how powerful the blade was.

Such an aggressive blade technique could possibly kill medium-level emperors. However, because he was extremely aggressive, he probably had a weakness in his defense. He didn’t seem to pay attention to defense. Few people could actually counterattack after such a powerful blade attack. Usually, the first strike was enough.

The first strike hadn’t even reached Lin Feng before the second blade had already appeared. It was as if blades were falling from the sky like shooting stars, all of them dazzling. Few people could fight against him. His blade attacks could easily cut people apart.

Even Minister Kalasutra was amazed and said, “What an incredible blade technique! If he moved a little bit faster, then his technique would be even more powerful!”

Minister Kalasutra was clearly helping out Han Feng.

As expected, Han Feng heard Minister Kalasutra and immediately released more wind cosmic energy. His attack became even sharper.

However, there were exceptions!

As Han Feng’s blade attack moved forwards, a kind of sword strength descended from the sky. It was like a million death swords were falling from the sky, he could sense the sharp energies. He looked at Lin Feng and saw two eyes, the eyes of the Nine Netherworlds. His willpower started shaking.

He had solely focused on his own attack, he hadn’t expected that Lin Feng would use such an attack against him. Now it was a bit complicated to react. Even if his attack was exceptional, if his opponents killed him before he had time to deploy them, then

what was the point? Therefore, Han Feng retreated, having a bad premonition. His blade energies suddenly disappeared.

Han Feng raised his head as drops of sweat appeared on his forehead.

Everybody's eyes were wide open, they didn't understand why the blade couldn't move towards Lin Feng, and why Han Feng was withdrawing!

Actually, Han Feng didn't only move backwards, he suddenly turned around and jumped off the stage. He declared "I lost!"

He had lost, so staying on the battle stage was useless!

Chapter 1853: Last Battle

The Nihility Sword Scriptures allowed a cultivator to learn more about sword intent, the sword meaning could advance to void: nihilism. Lin Feng hadn't studied the Nihility Sword Scriptures for very long, so he didn't control the sword techniques of the scriptures that well. With his Nihility Sword, he couldn't kill Han Feng. However, Han Feng was smart and understood that Lin Feng's Nihility Sword was more powerful than his Seven Blades Laceration technique.

His attack was perfect, but it wasn't enough against Lin Feng.

Everybody was staring at Lin Feng. They knew Lin Feng could win before the battle had started, but they hadn't thought Han Feng would surrender. They didn't even know what had happened. Lin Feng hadn't even moved. Han Feng had just retreated and surrendered outright!

They knew that Han Feng couldn't possibly have let Lin Feng win on purpose. At their cultivation level, nobody did that, only children or puerile people did such things. Lin Feng had probably used a secret technique, and Han Feng had given up...

Eighty-two victories. He's getting closer and closer to a hundred victories!, thought the crowd, watching Lin Feng.

Minister Uptala smiled gently and said, "I sensed some sword energy. That boy hasn't shown us all he can do. No matter who gets on the battle stage, I don't think anyone can win."

Of course, Minister Uptala was talking loudly enough for Minister Kalasutra to hear. Minister Kalasutra smiled back. "What if Qing Qing fought against him?"

"I don't know," replied Minister Uptala cheerfully. "She could win, or lose."

He smiled at Qin Yao and asked. "Qin Yao, you think you can

definitely defeat him?”

“Of course!” Qin Yao replied confidently. Minister Uptala just looked away. Qin Yao was definitely going to fight. Minister Kalasutra had bet with him, so Qin Yao had to use her full strength against Lin Feng.

Minister Uptala looked at Lin Feng and smiled. Even fewer people wanted to fight against him.

At that moment, Minister Kalasutra openly said, “Eighty-two victories! Isn’t there any low-level Hell emperor in the Great Imperial Song City who can defeat this young man?”

Many people’s eyes twinkled. Lin Feng was incredibly strong. Defeating Lin Feng wasn’t about the hundred victories anymore. It was even more meaningful.

When Minister Uptala heard Minister Kalasutra, he looked at Lin Feng and said, “Young man, if you get a hundred victories, I’ll give you a blue Uptala lotus!”

“Blue Uptala Lotus!” The crowd all turned to look in astonishment.

“If Lin Feng wins a hundred times, Minister Uptala will give him a Blue Uptala Lotus!”

“What’s wrong with the Ministers? Why are they competing like that? The Blue Uptala Lotus contains the strength of the ten thousand things of creation, and now he’s saying he’s willing to give one to that guy?”

The audience was amazed. Lin Feng naturally heard everything, he raised his head and looked at Minister Uptala in surprise. Minister Kalasutra wanted people to defeat him, and Minister Uptala wanted him to win. They didn’t seem to be friends.

“Thank you very much, Minister!” Lin Feng smiled. He didn’t understand these people’s goals, but for him, there were only advantages. An Minister was paying attention to him, that was a

good thing. He was getting closer to his goal, he wanted to attract the attention of high officials, and those Ministers were definitely high officials, they were just under Great Emperor Song in the hierarchy.

“No need. If you win, I will obtain Minister Kalasutra’s Hellfire. It’s a great thing for me, too!” laughed Minister Uptala. When the crowd heard that, they understood. Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra had bet on Lin Feng’s battles, and Minister Uptala thought Lin Feng was going to get a hundred victories, while Minister Kalasutra thought Lin Feng wasn’t.

The other people in the bleachers already knew that the Ministers had bet. Many of them wished they were Lin Feng at that moment!

—

After that, someone else went up onto the battle stage. That person was extremely strong, but far from being as strong as Han Feng. That cultivator didn’t mind though, he wanted to fight against Lin Feng to practice, he knew he couldn’t win. Besides, it was worth trying, if he were lucky, he might win!

Of course, he lost, and Lin Feng now had eighty-three victories.

After that, more people fought against Lin Feng, some stronger, some weaker. If those people had chosen another battle stage, they could have won fifty battles, at least. All in all, nobody could pose a threat to Lin Feng. Lin Feng quickly reached ninety-seven victories.

Three more battles!, thought the crowd. Lin Feng was three victories away from success! If he won a hundred battles, he would be able to join the army and obtain Minister Uptala’s Blue Uptala Lotus.

Everybody watched the two Ministers. They looked indifferent, it was impossible to know what they were thinking.

“Prince of the Six Abysses?” At that moment, the crowd saw a silhouette near the battle stage. They frowned. It was the Prince of the Six Abysses! Did he want to fight against this guy?

Even though the Prince of the Six Abysses is a low-level Hell emperor, he’s very famous. He has killed many medium-level emperors. He’s very strong, and as famous as Prince Mayi. His Six Hells spell is powerful, he can make people fall into the abysses of Hell!, thought the crowd when they saw the Prince of the Six Abysses. They looked excited. Since the Prince of the Six Abysses was there, it meant he wanted to fight against Lin Feng!

“I came to exchange views on cultivation with you!” said someone at that moment. The person was wearing white clothes and moved towards Lin Feng like lightning. People couldn’t see the silhouette clearly.

What a fast sword. How powerful!, thought the crowd, staring at the battle stage.

Lin Feng sensed a powerful sword energy surround him. His eyes glittered. This person’s speed was impressive. His speed cosmic energies made his sword even faster. He wanted to kill his opponents as quickly as possible.

Lin Feng waved his hands, and an ocean of purple energies appeared, it was his Purple Lake Tank! It rose to the skies, the sword lights shot through the air. However, at that moment, Lin Feng stretched his hand out, and a cage appeared.

“Break!” shouted his opponent, releasing sword intent. Lin Feng released wind cosmic energies and Kalpa strength, which descended from the sky. Death Kalpa strength surrounded the opponent’s sword intent, destroyed it, and then surrounded him.

“Kalpa!” swore Lin Feng. His Kalpa strength rose to the skies, and the air crackled. His opponent gave out a horrible shriek as Lin Feng landed and punched him. There was a sound of shattering bones, and the man was smashed away and crashed onto the battle

stage, some of his limbs bent in impossible ways.

“You’re humiliating yourself!” Lin Feng said mockingly. His opponent was stunned. But he had started the fight, he had immediately attacked Lin Feng even though he hadn’t even landed on the battle stage, so Lin Feng decided to humiliate him back.

“Ninety-eight!”

Two more battles and Lin Feng would get a hundred victories. However, the Prince of the Six Abysses didn’t seem to be willing to fight. The crowd was surprised when they saw that.

He wants to wait to be the last one!, thought the many people watching the Prince of the Six Abysses. He had that thought, indeed!

Lin Feng easily defeated the next opponent and had ninety-nine victories. It was the battle.

A silhouette rose up in the air. It was the Prince of the Six Abysses, preparing to challenge Lin Feng for the final battle.

“There...” however, at that moment, the crowd saw a silhouette behind Lin Feng, a beautiful young woman. The crowd was stunned: it was Minister Kalasutra’s daughter, Qin Yao!

She also wants to fight against him!, thought the amazed audience. They hadn’t thought that Minister Kalasutra’s daughter would want to fight, too!

“Go down,” Qin Yao said to the Prince of the Six Abysses. The Prince of the Six Abysses frowned and looked at her icily.

“It’s my battle!” said the Prince of the Six Abysses.

“We can only have one battle at a time on the battle stage!” said Qin Yao, smiling indifferently. Then, suddenly, she turned into a light beam and moved towards the Prince of the Six Abysses. She didn’t fight against Lin Feng, she fought against him!

“Fire!” The crowd saw an ocean of black flames appear under the

Prince of the Six Abysses' feet. He looked ferocious.

“Hellfire!” The Prince of the Six Abysses' expression changed drastically. He did some hand seals and six vortexes appeared around him, making him look like a god of Hell.

“Burn!” Under Qin Yao's feet, another powerful flame appeared and moved towards the six vortexes.

Chapter 1854: Powerful Battle

Qin Yao's Hellfire is powerful and destructive, thought the crowd. The Prince of the Six Abysses tried to force Qin Yao into the six abysses. She shouted furiously and condensed her energies. Flames sealed the area around the Prince of the Six Abysses.

The Prince of the Six Abysses' six Hells are going to burn and break apart!, thought the astonished crowd. The Prince of the Six Abysses waved his hands and purple lights surrounded Qin Yao.

"Destroy!" shouted Qin Yao. She condensed flames and a powerful Hellfire appeared in her hand. The Prince of the Six Abysses frowned and looked nervous. He struck out with both fists to counterattack.

However, at that moment, Qin Yao disappeared and turned into a raging fireball. Fire exploded in every direction, and flames filled the stage. It looked like Hell.

The crowd heard someone groan and then they saw the Prince of the Six Abysses moving back out of the flames. He was all burnt.

How strong. No wonder she's Minister Kalasutra's daughter! They had only fought for a few seconds, but it was incredible nonetheless. The Prince of the Six Abysses' strength was astonishing, but he had still lost against Qin Yao.

"Get down now!" ordered Qin Yao, smiling indifferently. Her smile was the picture of self-confidence. She had the right to fight against Lin Feng!

"We'll exchange views on cultivation again if we have the opportunity, Princess Qin Yao!" replied the Prince of the Six Abysses, before turning around and leaving the battle stage. The Princess would fight against Lin Feng!

In the ancient pavilion, the geniuses there had all won a hundred battles. However, when they saw how strong Qin Yao was, they

were also surprised. She was an Minister's daughter, and had inherited great powers. A cultivator's bloodline obviously had a great influence on their cultivation!

In the bleachers, Minister Kalasutra smiled indifferently. When he saw how strong his daughter was, he felt relieved. The Prince of the Six Abysses was a public figure, but his daughter Qin Yao had still defeated him quickly. Qin Yao was exceptionally strong. Among the low-level emperors, there weren't many people who could defeat her. Probably the only ones who could compete with her were the other Ministers' children. Ministers usually were doting parents.

"Princess Qin Yao is incredibly strong. Getting a hundred victories won't be easy for that guy," observed Wang Zhuo, smiling politely. He meant something implicitly. Minister Kalasutra just smiled. A hundred victories would be really difficult for Lin Feng now!

Minister Kalasutra looked at Minister Uptala and said. "Brother Uptala, get ready to offer my daughter Qin Yao your lotus."

"I hope the little one will be able to get it!" answered Minister Uptala indifferently. He had promised Lin Feng that if he won, he'd obtain a Blue Uptala Lotus. If Lin Feng lost, Minister Uptala would have to give Qing Yao a Blue Uptala Lotus, and his own daughter Qing Qing wouldn't be able to obtain the Hellfire.

Everybody was watching Lin Feng at that moment.

Lin Feng's strength was extraordinary. Amongst low-level Hell emperors, he was indeed extremely strong. He had won ninety-nine battles and hadn't had a rest at all. However, he didn't look like he needed one. How different would the hundredth battle be? Especially now that he was going to fight against Qin Yao after she had defeated the Prince of the Six Abysses?

The crowd didn't dare predict the result of the fight.

After all, the Prince of the Six Abysses was a powerful cultivator and Qin Yao had defeated him, which meant she was even stronger. The Prince of the Six Abysses had looked so weak when facing her. Therefore, Lin Feng would probably struggle to win a hundredth time.

People were used to seeing incredible battles with extremely strong geniuses. Many incredible cultivators liked fighting against someone once they had reached ninety-nine victories, it was a dazzling way to win. If she managed to defeat Lin Feng, whom nobody else managed to defeat, then everybody would admire her.

This guy has won ninety-nine battles, but now he's probably going to lose since Qin Yao is much stronger and has Hellfire!, thought some people.

Qin Yao turned around and looked at Lin Feng. She smiled thinly and sat down in the flames. She looked very beautiful in the flames, but scary too.

"I'm sorry. You won ninety-nine battles and that's a great achievement, but now it's going to be difficult to win the last one," smiled Qin Yao. However, she didn't sound like she was really sorry. She just sounded polite. Even Ministers' daughters didn't rely on their parents, they relied on themselves. Great Emperor Song loved fighting, so young people also started from there.

In the past, Qin Yao was only famous in Kalasutra Hell. The first time she had fought in the Great Imperial Song City, it hadn't been to draw people's attention, but she had anyway.

Her purpose was to become strong. Fighting was inevitable and pleasant, so even without the Ministers there, people fought anyway.

Lin Feng looked back at Qin Yao calmly. He knew she was self-confident, but she had what it took to be confident. She was Minister Kalasutra's daughter, she had inherited his powerful blood. Such people were rare.

Of course, what Qin Yao didn't know was that Lin Feng was also self-confident, even more than she!

“Princess, you're quite strong. However, nobody can prevent me from winning a hundred times!” replied Lin Feng calmly, yet aggressively. Nobody could prevent him from winning a hundred times, including Minister Kalasutra's daughter!

“Alright! We'll see something now.” When Minister Uptala heard Lin Feng, he laughed wholeheartedly. This battle was going to be interesting. Even if Lin Feng lost, he'd be happy to give him a Blue Uptala Lotus.

“I respect you and truly believe you're extremely strong, so I will be merciless. Be careful. It could be dangerous!” smiled Qin Yao, nodding at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng replied, “Princess, you're too polite. Please attack.”

Flames suddenly emerged from Qin Yao's body. It looked like Hell had come to the battle stage covering it in black flames. The temperature shot up, and the crackling and snapping of flames filled the air.

The powerful fire surrounded Qin Yao's body and she disappeared within it.

At that moment, some flames started moving and raced towards Lin Feng. He was startled, as these flames could easily destroy a medium-level emperor. His physical body had the strength of a medium-level emperor, but still, that fire was dangerous!

After that, a third Hellfire appeared and rose to the skies. The whole battle stage was surrounded by Hellfire. The crowd was certain Lin Feng was going to lose.

A vortex of Hellfire surrounded Lin Feng and spun around.

Qin Yao's powers are similar to Hou Qing Lin's reincarnation strength. If he came here to practice cultivation for a while, he'd definitely benefit from it, thought Lin Feng. The temperature

continued increasing, and Lin Feng began to feel hot.

The three flames became gigantic and descended from the sky towards Lin Feng. Hell was falling on him!

Qin Yao's silhouette appeared again and she struck out in Lin Feng's direction. Lin Feng couldn't escape, and the fires could destroy him.

How powerful!, thought Lin Feng. His heart started racing, and he finally moved.

He flashed away, dazzling lights appeared all around as he sealed the atmosphere around him. The fire couldn't affect him anymore.

He then released immortal strength, looking like a god. His eyes turned pitch-black as he struck out using earth punches, trying to destroy one of the flames. The ground was shaking violently.

Lin Feng then used his Setting Sun Meteorite to attack the second fire. Sword lights cut the air and sliced it apart.

He waved his hand and a destructive deployment strength manifested as his Purple Tank reappeared. It was like an ocean and moved towards the third flame.

Lin Feng released Deva-Mara Kalpa strength and physical strength to protect himself as he struck out towards Qin Yao. The whole atmosphere was filled with destructive energies.

Black flames appeared in Qin Yao's eyes. She wanted to destroy Lin Feng's will, but Lin Feng's demonic will was too powerful, he was absolutely unaffected. She sensed an endless amount of invisible sharp sword energies surround her, and immediately after, a wall of Deva-Mara Kalpa punches moved towards her and collided with her fist. Black lights exploded and obscured everything!

Qin Yao used Hell strength, a destructive kind of power. However, at that moment, she sensed an even more destructive strength. Something blackish-red splashed, it was her blood. Her

mouth was bleeding, and she had the sensation that all the bones of her arm were broken!

Chapter 1855: A Good Harvest

The destructive strength hadn't dispersed yet. The crowd was staring at the battle stage in astonishment.

Qin Yao's strength was incredible, she had used amazing strength to fight against Lin Feng. The very sky had turned into Hell. At the same time, she had used three Hellfires to surrounded Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was too strong, though. They didn't really understand how Lin Feng had attacked, but it had worked!

Lin Feng had sealed the atmosphere with deployment strength, and at the same time, he had released immortal energies and will to punch her. He had also attacked the first Hellfire with immortal, death, lightning, and earth cosmic energies, four kinds of cosmic energies!

The second fire was destroyed by his Setting Sun Meteorite, which contained fire, earth, wind, and death cosmic energies as well as sword strength coupled with fire and wind cosmic energies, that was a total of six!

The third fire was destroyed by a gigantic purple tank with an incredible destructive strength, which also contained many sorts of cosmic energies.

In the end, Qin Yao and Lin Feng's fists had collided, but his punch was far more powerful and he blew her away. She even coughed up blood.

Lin Feng was truly strong. His Deva-Mara Kalpa strength and his powerful physical strength were amazing!

When the Qi dispersed, the crowd saw Lin Feng still standing there, his black hair fluttering in the wind. He was motionless.

Nobody can prevent me from winning a hundred times. The crowd still remembered Lin Feng's statement as he stood there proudly. Even Princess Qin Yao, the daughter of an Minister,

hadn't managed to defeat him!

At that moment, Qin Yao was still in the air, staring unhappily at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes. She had lost, and felt a bit humiliated.

She didn't feel as confident as before!

"You lost," said Lin Feng helpfully. "You lost, so please go back."

"The battle is not over!" said Qin Yao. She didn't smile anymore. She released even more flames.

"The battle is already over. If you insist and want to continue fighting, I can't guarantee it'll be safe for you," said Lin Feng calmly. The crowd was astonished. Was Lin Feng threatening her?

Lin Feng actually meant that he had been merciful, he had controlled himself. Otherwise, Qin Yao wouldn't have looked like a human being anymore.

"The young will be redoubtable in the years to come!" said Minister Uptala, smiling broadly. Lin Feng was a passionate cultivator and he could see that. If someone raised that young boy correctly, he'd become a great emperor someday. He was very talented, he would definitely be able to become an Minister someday and be at the head of an army.

When Qin Yao heard Lin Feng, she stared at him icily. Lin Feng surprisingly dared say he had been merciful? She had used her full strength, Lin Feng hadn't?

She continued releasing more and more energies, but at that moment, someone intervened. "Qin Yao, that's enough."

It was her father, Minister Kalasutra. Qin Yao slowly turned around and looked back at him.

"Alright, come back," said Minister Kalasutra with a nod. Qin Yao remained silent for a few seconds, but when she saw her father's expression, she recalled her Qi and nodded obediently

before heading back to him.

Her arm still felt extremely sore...

“There are many extremely strong cultivators here on the battle stages. Someday, when you join the government, you’ll be a dazzling cultivator,” smiled Minister Kalasutra. Even though Lin Feng had defeated his daughter, he wasn’t angry. After all, Lin Feng and Qin Yao had battled according to the rules on the official battle stage of the city. Qin Yao had even provoked Lin Feng. Even though he had a high social status, he had no reason to be angry at Lin Feng. Besides, he was a Minister, and he was a Celestial Emperor in Hell. He had to control himself.

Even though Lin Feng had injured Qin Yao, the injuries weren’t too bad. Lin Feng had taught her a good lesson. Surprisingly, an unknown young man was so strong!

Of course, Minister Kalasutra was still a bit annoyed because he lost face to Minister Uptala.

“Qing Qing, this Hellfire is a gift to you from Uncle Kalasutra,” said Minister Kalasutra to Qing Qing while transmitting Hellfire to her with a gesture. However, it didn’t explode, it just moved slowly towards her.

The Ministers had made a bet, so Qing Qing didn’t refuse the Hellfire. She smiled thinly and nodded to accept it.

Qing Qing looked at the fire in her hand and smiled at her father. “Unfortunately, I am not a fire cultivator. Otherwise, that Hellfire would make me much stronger.”

“Even if you’re not a fire cultivator, you can transform it and use it for your own interest!” smiled Minister Uptala. He stretched his hand out, and the strength of the ten thousand things of creation appeared as a Blue Uptala Lotus manifested.

Minister Uptala looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “Young man, this for you. I promised it, you won a hundred battles, please take it.”

The Blue Uptala Lotus floated towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stretched his hand out and grabbed the lotus, feeling its mysterious strength. It contained the strength of the ten thousand things of creation!

“Thank you very much for your great gift, Minister!” smiled Lin Feng, bowing deeply. Lin Feng was very grateful. This Blue Uptala Lotus might be very useful for him!

“I see that you controlled fire cosmic energies, and your death cosmic energies are powerful. This Hellfire can be very useful for you too, so I’m giving it to you!” Qing Qing smiled softly, sounding very sweet. She threw Hellfire at Lin Feng.

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng was really lucky! He had obtained the Blue Uptala Lotus and the Hellfire!

However, he deserved it too! If he hadn’t been strong, he wouldn’t have won a hundred times, and he wouldn’t have obtained anything.

“Princess, it’s a gift you received, I feel like I’m stealing something from you,” replied Lin Feng. Qing Qing had obtained the Hellfire from Minister Kalasutra, and now she was giving it to him. He was touched.

“I don’t need that fire. You will become much stronger quickly with it. Uncle Kalasutra won’t be mad at me,” said Qing Qing smiled back at him.

As expected, Minister Kalasutra said, “Lin Feng, Qing Qing is willing to give it to you, just take it.”

“Thank you, my lady!” said Lin Feng happily and politely. He had received the Blue Uptala Lotus and Hellfire!

At that moment, a silhouette rose up into the air and landed on the battle stage. The official was bearing medal, it had Song written on it. He presented it to Lin Feng and said solemnly, “You won a hundred times, this is your medal. You can join the

government and become a member of the army now.”

“Thank you, sir!” answered Lin Feng, accepting the medal of the Great Imperial Song City.

“Put your godly awareness into it,” said the official. The owners of the medals put their godly awareness into them so that after their death, people couldn’t counterfeit them or use them. If Lin Feng died, the medal would just break apart.

Lin Feng did what he was told, and the person said, “Lin Feng, you have won a hundred battles. Now, you can also join those who have accomplished the same as you. If you defeat nine other winners, you will gain privileges. Would you like to benefit from that program?”

“I do want to participate!” agreed Lin Feng, nodding without hesitation. This was another opportunity, he couldn’t let it slip past him.

“Alright, since you do, please join them in the pavilions and take a rest. When all the battles are over, you can start fighting again,” smiled the official. Lin Feng looked at the cultivators in the pavilions, understanding that those people had also won a hundred battles. He hadn’t known that before. He headed over to a pavilion.

Chapter 1856: Incredible Battle

Lin Feng went to the pavilion beneath the two Ministers, it was the best one to watch battles. However, because the two Ministers were there, nobody else dared go there. However, Lin Feng did.

When entering the pavilion, Lin Feng heard someone groan coldly. He turned around and saw Qin Yao. She looked angry as Minister Kalasutra healed her injuries.

Lin Feng looked at Qin Yao and smiled. "I'm sorry, I was a bit too rough."

"You said things could have gotten worse if we had continued fighting. Did you mean you were merciful?" said Qin Yao, rolling her eyes and grinding her teeth. Lin Feng looked embarrassed, but kept smiling. The battle was over, he wanted to be nice to her, especially since her father was a powerful man. Even though Qin Yao was angry, she didn't harbor any evil intentions.

"Qin Yao, how can you be so impolite? Even though you lost, you have to be polite and practice cultivation harder," chided Minister Kalasutra.

"I know!" Qin Yao nodded. Then, she looked at Lin Feng coldly and said, "We'll fight again if we have the opportunity."

"As you wish, Princess. I am willing to spend time with you," said Lin Feng, smiling thinly. Then, he looked at Minister Uptala and his daughter and smiled at them both. Minister Uptala smiled back at him, but didn't say anything.

Lin Feng looked back at the battle stages. Zhang Heng was still fighting. He had already won sixty-two battles, a rare achievement. He had come to win a hundred battles, he hadn't thought Lin Feng, a new friend, would win that fast and in such a dazzling way.

Apart from Zhang Heng, another extremely strong man was fighting. He had also been fighting for longer than Lin Feng. He

was on the medium-level Hell emperors' battle stage, and immediately drew Lin Feng's attention.

He was blind and practiced sword cultivation. Even though he was blind, his swordsmanship was amazing. He was not only fast, he was precise, too. It was difficult to see where the sword attacks came from when he attacked. He was blind, but when fighting against him, it was like his opponents were the blind ones. He was a true sword assassin and his name was Jian Mang!

Jian Mang had gotten onto the battle stage at the same time as Hei Lao. However, he hadn't won a hundred battles yet, only sixty-seven battles. He wasn't slow, he was a sword cultivator. He wasn't any slower than Lin Feng. He quickly won battles, so why was he still on the battle stage?

It was because Jian Mang's sword attacks were cruel. After stabbing people, he slowly made them suffer, and pierced their eyes with his sword energies to make them go blind. Such cruel people were rare. Most people on the battle stages were merciful. People could accept losing a battle, but they were unwilling to go blind if they lost. Therefore, cruel people weren't numerous. Jian Mang was extremely strong, but because he was cruel, each time after his battles, people took a long time to go onto his battle stage because they were afraid.

At that moment, another horrible shriek spread in the air. Jian Mang had immediately pierced one of that person's eyes.

He's fast, precise, and cruel, thought Lin Feng. Even though he was cruel, he was also very strong. Fighting against him was definitely worth it.

Lin Feng watched Jian Mang battle. After a few battles, he understood that Jian Mang's sword was extremely quick at the beginning, then its trajectory kept changing unpredictably and resulted in an unexpected winning move.

His sword attacks were strange. Finding his weakness was very

difficult, as his sword attacks were fast and unpredictable.

Besides, each time people got close to that sword Qi, they almost suffocated. And unfortunately, each time they lost, Jian Mang blinded them.

Lin Feng also practiced sword cultivation, he used a straightforward path, using absolute power to defeat his enemies, but Jian Mang relied on his techniques and accuracy, yet the results were the same, absolute terror.

Jian Mang is going to get a hundred victories. Not many people can compete with him. So many people seem to be getting a hundred victories today, thought the audience. Wang Zhuo's eyes glittered sharply as he watched Jian Mang.

“Wang Zhuo, can you win against him?” Minister Kalasutra asked Wang Zhuo. Wang Zhuo was a medium-level Hell emperor like Jian Mang. Besides, he had already dazzled on the battle stage in the past.

“When facing an incredible cultivator, no matter how insane you are, you can't win,” replied Wang Zhuo indifferently.

Minister Kalasutra smiled and said, “Unfortunately, you have already won a hundred victories in the past, so you can't go back onto the battle stage. Otherwise, I would have loved to see you defeat him.”

—

Time passed slowly. Zhang Heng had eighty-three victories and then, unfortunately, he lost against a very strong cultivator. He had failed after coming so close to success.

But Zhang Heng wasn't angry. At the beginning, he didn't intend to finish the battles at once, he wanted to rest, but then he had seen Lin Feng win all his battles in a row and had continued. Now he had lost, but at least he had learned something. Zhang Heng looked at Lin Feng and smiled.

“Lin Feng, you’ve already won a hundred battles! You will become a dazzling cultivator! I’m not staying here. I’ll come back another day and try again! And then I’ll also come to town to see you!” called out Zhang Heng.

“Alright, I hope you’ll win a hundred battles soon!” Lin Feng smiled back at Zhang Heng, watching him turn around and depart.

—

After that, no other low-level emperor managed to win a hundred times. Among the medium-level Hell emperors, Jian Mang succeeded. Just like Lin Feng, he had finished all his battles without resting once.

At that moment, an official landed on the battle stage and announced to the crowd, “After this fight, please stop the battles. Many low-level Hell emperors and medium-level Hell emperors have won a hundred battles today. There will be battles between them!”

Everybody’s eyes glittered with expectation. The winners were all geniuses. The battles between them were going to be powerful. They could definitely wait to see them!

As expected, after the last battle, people stopped fighting. A strong cultivator in the air pointed to two battle stages; one was the battle stage on which Lin Feng had fought, and the other one was the one on which Jian Mang had fought. “Since two people won a hundred victories on these battle stages today, we can continue on them!”

People in the pavilions stood up and glanced at one another.

“Hmph!” Qin Yao was unhappy. She looked at Lin Feng angrily. She should have been on that battle stage, but Lin Feng had defeated her!

Competitors landed on the two battle stages one after another. There were quite a few of them. For the medium-level Hell

emperors, there were eleven people including Jian Mang. For the low-level Hell emperors, there were thirteen people including Lin Feng.

“If you can defeat nine people, then you will obtain privileges!” At that moment, everybody looked around.

Among the low-level Hell emperors, Lin Feng can definitely win. The Prince of the Six Abysses is strong, but Qin Yao defeated him. And she is very strong, but Lin Feng defeated her. Even though those other people have won a hundred battles, it will still be difficult for them to defeat Lin Feng. He can definitely obtain privileges!” said someone. In the bleachers, many people were expressing their opinion.

Minister Uptala smiled calmly and said, “Lin Feng became famous today. I am convinced he will defeat nine people.”

The official on the battle stage went on, “You know the rules, Lin Feng can start the battles and challenge nine people. If he loses, he has to leave the battle stage, and the winner can continue challenging eight other people.”

On the low-level Hell emperors’ battle stage, there were thirteen people, and Lin Feng was going to start. Each cultivator could also lose three times. After three losses, they were eliminated because there weren’t enough fighters to lose more than three times and win nine times.

That way, the rules were fair. How would the battles look like? All those young people were amazing!

Chapter 1857: One Against Six

On the other battle stage, Jian Mang was the first one to start the battles. On the low-level Hell emperors' battle stage, Lin Feng was the first one. He had to win against nine people. Being the first one had an advantage, they could avoid people who they thought were too strong and start with weaker ones if they knew them.

“Nine battles won't be difficult for that young man,” said Minister Kalasutra calmly.

Qin Yao nodded and agreed, “Of course. He's so strong. He'll definitely obtain privileges.”

Lin Feng had defeated her. If she said Lin Feng couldn't win nine times, it would mean that she wouldn't be able to.

“But those twelve people are also incredible people, they've also won a hundred battles. They're geniuses. I can't wait to see how he'll defeat them!” said Minister Kalasutra with an expectant smile.

Lin Feng glanced at the people he had to challenge. He knew nobody.

All those people are low-level emperors and they've all won a hundred battles. Those twelve people are all strong cultivators. Maybe they're as strong as the students of Champion University who are in the top twenty. I'm not going to fight against all of them at the same time, anyway, thought Lin Feng. He pointed at one of them and said, “Your Excellency, please come and fight.”

“Jin Pan Guan!” The crowd looked at the person Lin Feng had chosen. He was wearing fine clothes, and was fat with a round face. Even though he couldn't be compared with Hei Lao, he really looked too fat to move. He was a gold cultivator, and his gold cosmic energies were powerful. He cut people apart with gold energies.

He was unhappy that Lin Feng had challenged him. After all, he had seen how strong Lin Feng was, everybody had. Being the first one to lose would be annoying. And he could lose only three times! Against Lin Feng, he had little chance to win, so he wouldn't have many tries.

The two faced each other as the others moved to the edge of the stage.

Golden lights cut the air and Jin Pan Guan suddenly disappeared. Even though he was fat, it didn't have any impact on his speed. Lin Feng had the sensation that a rain of gold had started, and each drop of gold was as sharp as a blade. Whistling sounds filled his ears.

The lights moved towards Lin Feng. At the same time, a golden pencil appeared in Jin Pan Guan's hand.

His pencil streaked across the sky, containing a powerful deadly strength. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to be impaled.

"That guy's golden pencil is like a sword. It's sharp and contains gold and empty space cosmic energies."

Lin Feng waved his hand and nine ancient cauldrons appeared.

"Nine Cauldron Celestial attack!" said Lin Feng, waving his hand as the cauldrons emitted whistling sounds. At the same time, wind cosmic energies surrounded him and he suddenly appeared higher up in the sky, following the cauldrons.

"Imprison!" said Lin Feng, and a cage appeared. However, the golden energies pierced through the cage and broke it.

"Rule!" said Lin Feng. His eyes moved as fast as lightning. Deva-Mara Kalpa's Rule strength moved towards Guan and bore down on him.

Jin Pan Guan pulled a long face. Lin Feng knew so many different attacks! The strength of the Nine Cauldrons was incredible! He couldn't win against Lin Feng.

“I have lost!” shouted Jin Pan Guan. He knew that would happen from the beginning. It was better to give up now than end up injured, or he wouldn’t be able to continue fighting later.

However, by the time Lin Feng heard him, the Nine Cauldrons were about to crash on his opponent, and actually did. Metallic sounds rang out, the air shook violently for a few seconds.

Lin Feng had won the first battle!

He won the battle extremely easily, he will easily win nine battles, thought the audience in the bleachers. Jin Pan Guan had won a hundred battles, but against Lin Feng, he had lost in the blink of an eye. Lin Feng would easily win nine battles, it seemed!

—

As the crowd had expected. Lin Feng won two more battles easily. The fighters didn’t use their full strength to fight against him though, as they preferred not to overdo it and keep their energy for the following battles.

After winning three battles, Lin Feng felt extremely motivated. His blood was boiling. He looked at everyone and said, “You’re all being too cautious. The battles are pointless. Six people can come together so that we don’t waste time!”

The crowd was astonished. Even though Lin Feng was really strong, he was also being a bit too overconfident, it seemed? He was saying he was bored?

People on the battle stage were astonished. They had won a hundred battles too, and Lin Feng was saying it was pointless to fight against them. Even the Ministers were astonished.

I wouldn’t have thought this guy would be so arrogant..., thought Wang Zhuo. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “There are some powerful cultivators amongst them, for example the Prince of the Six Abysses. You can’t defeat six people at the same time. Even a medium-level emperor wouldn’t dare fight against six of

them!”

“He’s an ambitious and passionate young man. Let him do what he wants. Besides, he really won the first three battles easily. They are geniuses who won a hundred battles, and Lin Feng is disappointed. I understand him. Let it be,” Minister Uptala said calmly. He didn’t sound insistent, and he wasn’t trying to humiliate people, either. He was just passionate.

“We’ll see if he can be arrogant or not!” said Qing Qing, smiling gently. Wang Zhuo was surprised, but he quickly smiled and said, “You’re right! I should wait and see before criticizing!”

When people on the battle stage heard Lin Feng and then the Ministers, they were unhappy. They had all won a hundred battles, why were they there today? They wanted to earn privileges, and now they had to face a madman. People didn’t even pay attention to them anymore, everybody was only talking about Lin Feng.

“These battles should be fair, one-on-ones, but since you want to fight against us at the same time, why not! I don’t mind, I would love to see how strong you really are since you want to try!” said someone at that moment, moving swiftly.

“That’s how a man should be. Real men don’t care about what people say, even if they know they’re going to lose, they try anyway, it makes them stronger! All you guys are outstanding fighters, whether you lose or win!” said Lin Feng. Many other people agreed. Lin Feng was arrogant, but many people admired him for that. He was arrogant, but passionate!

Silhouettes flickered and six people surrounded Lin Feng with powerful Qi.

“Let’s fight!” said Lin Feng as he released his Kalpa strength, which rose to the skies. A powerful demon Qi surrounded him. Deva-Mara Kalpa rolled in waves like thunder. He looked like a death god!

Many dazzling lights emerged. Prince Mayi attacked first, releasing a black strength which blotted out the sky. Lin Feng had the sensation he had fallen into Hell as the air around him was sealed.

“Inescapable net technique!” Everybody’s eyes were glittering. The six attacked one after another. A powerful blade moved towards Lin Feng, while at the same time, small black embers struck out. Lin Feng disappeared inside all those energies.

He waved his hands and attacked both fighters. A Kalpa web appeared around him, the atmosphere kept exploding. Energies collided and the air whistled with motion.

Lin Feng flashed into the air. He waved his hands and more energies swept out, including Kalpa strength. A dazzling sharp sword streaked across the sky and moved towards that inescapable net technique. Lin Feng continued rising up in the air.

“Where are you going!” shouted Prince Mayi icily. He used both fists and released cosmic energies to attack Lin Feng. His energies formed a cage around Lin Feng.

I have to defeat him first! Lin Feng looked like an ancient overlord. The air crackled as powerful earth and demon energies appeared above his head.

Lin Feng released a gigantic hand towards the demon and earth hammer. He used physical strength and Deva-Mara Kalpa strength to counterattack.

The ground shook violently as the hammer crashed onto Lin Feng’s hands with a explosive impact, his fists started bleeding. However, Lin Feng continued pressing against the energies with bare hands like an ancient god doing battle.

Chapter 1858: Godly Soul Kalpa

Lin Feng used his hand to attack the earth and demon hammer. A powerful absorbing strength emerged from him. The attacker in the sky was startled as Lin Feng started absorbing his demon and earth strength.

“Imprison!” said Lin Feng. In a flash, a cage appeared around the cultivator in the sky. At the same time, he flashed forwards and his Kalpa strength turned into Deva-Mara Kalpa lightning filling the air. His target sensed the destructive energies surround them, and the millions of threads of Kalpa strength corroding their body. Lin Feng then used his Nine Cauldron Celestial attack to hurl him off the stage.

Lin Feng’s moves were fast, but the others kept calm and continued attacking from every direction. Their attacks were all fearsomely strong. Lin Feng’s physical body was powerful, but he couldn’t ignore their attacks.

Death and destructive Kalpa meaning suddenly rose up and Lin Feng shouted out. Nine Kalpa Swords appeared and moved in every direction. Lin Feng had studied the Indestructible Deva-Mara Scriptures, his Kalpa strength was incredible. It turned into a sword and gave birth to sword meaning as it turned into a powerful attack.

Lin Feng waved his hands, and two dazzling marks appeared and turned into an ancient destructive deployment spell which shot in every direction as he kept moving.

“Purple Lake Tank!” Lin Feng shot out his right hand and his Purple Tank descended from the sky and fused together with the destructive deployment spell as he condensed wind cosmic energy.

Lin Feng waved his left hand and condensed Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, as well as shattering deployment strength. His fist looked like a powerful destructive Deva-Mara Kalpa animal trying to

destroy the earth and the sky.

His strength was just too astonishing!

What an invasive and powerful strength!, thought Minister Uptala, leaning forwards in the bleachers. Lin Feng's attacks were majestic and powerful, and his cosmic energies were incredible. Ordinary Hell emperors couldn't compete with him. He looked like a warlord!

"Heaven and Hell!" proclaimed an icy voice. Lin Feng had the sensation that he was falling into Hell, and his whole body was suddenly surrounded by flames. He frowned and looked down at Prince Mayi.

As expected, that guy was incredible strong. At that moment, three people had already been injured, one had been forced off the stage. However, the injured had come back already. They didn't care about their injuries, all they wanted to do was to defeat Lin Feng. How could they be scared? They were heroes. They all used their full strength. If Lin Feng won against them even though they were joining hands, that would be humiliating!

Lin Feng sensed their energies and motivation. He released more layers of energies, and more Deva-Mara Kalpa surrounded him. He also released immortal energies with his Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. It looked like black lightning striking Lin Feng.

"Fall!" shouted Lin Feng, raising his head to the skies, looking like an immortal demon king with his black eyes. His Deva-Mara Kalpa strength started rotating around him, and turned into a destructive Kalpa sword, the air ripping everything around him apart.

Thunder rang out as a beam of light appeared. The air was seething with power, Lin Feng was in the middle of it in a Kalpa world. His Kalpa strength turned into a web.

Multiple explosions rang out. The crowd was shaken. Black

energies swirled and condensed into a black cloud. The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength covered everything.

Lin Feng could release so much Kalpa strength, was he going to get cleansed by even more Kalpa strength?

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng, furiously rising up in the air. Five fighters were hurled away, all of them injured, some even badly injured. Kalpa strength was flowing through their bodies. However, at that moment, they looked at the sky. Lin Feng could attract the Kalpa strength of the sky? What was going on?

Kalpa strength condensed above Lin Feng’s head. He had almost forgotten that he was fighting, he continued releasing Deva-Mara Kalpa!

The sky kept erupting with energy. A powerful Kalpa strength kept falling from the sky and bombarding Lin Feng’s body, and his muscles felt as if they were going to explode. He started shaking. He was going to be cleansed by Kalpa strength once more! Each time, it was even more intense. His physical body already had the strength of a medium-level emperor. The ancient Kalpa scriptures were extremely complex, not just any could study them. Most people who started studying them usually gave up shortly after having begun because the Kalpa strength could destroy them, and they might die.

Kalpa strength is falling from the sky to cleanse his body. That’s a skill he studied!, noted Ministers Uptala and Kalasutra. They were both startled. That guy had surprisingly studied a skill which allowed him to attract Kalpa strength and cleanse his body! Such powerful Ancient scriptures!

The crowd was astonished and shaken by what they were seeing. Another cloud of Deva-Mara Kalpa strength fell and bombarded Lin Feng’s body again. Lin Feng had the sensation that he was becoming paralyzed. The first round had just bombarded him, he hadn’t had a second to recover before the second round of Kalpa

strength was already bombarding him again.

Life cosmic energy! Few people understand life cosmic energy!, thought the crowd, sensing the life cosmic energy. In Hell, people drank black water, everything was based on black water. They were good at understanding black energy, and for that reason, they didn't understand life energy. However, Lin Feng understood both life and death energies.

His Deva-Mara Kalpa strength continued descending from the sky and pouring down on him. Lin Feng's clothes were suddenly torn apart. Some women's faces turned red, but Lin Feng condensed Deva-Mara Kalpa strength to hide the lower part of his body. It didn't matter much, anyway.

After that, Lin Feng raised his head and looked up at the sky, he looked solemn and determined. One last Kalpa cleansing!

The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength continued appearing. However, after a long time, Lin Feng rose up in the air, condensed Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, and thunder rumbled again. Lin Feng raised his head and more Kalpa strength crashed down onto him. His head shook violently as well as his soul. Lin Feng closed his eyes, coughed up blood, and his face became deathly pale.

What's going on? The people frowned and stared at Lin Feng. Their expressions changed drastically. What was wrong with Lin Feng?

Lin Feng felt dizzy, as if he was going to die. His soul was bombarded out of his body and shook violently.

His soul is leaving his body. Could this Kalpa be a soul or spiritual Kalpa?, wondered Lin Feng. He tried to make his soul and body fuse back together again as he slowly opened his eyes.

They were still pitch-black. He had recovered!

This time, the cleansing had been incredible, his soul had been pushed out of his body and he had bled. But his willpower was

great, so he had persevered. His Deva-Mara Kalpa strength was now much more powerful!

“Kacha!” Lin Feng clenched his fists, Kalpa strength exploded out and dispersed. Each Kalpa strength was divided into nine tiers, and there were nine levels of Kalpa strength, which meant eighty-one levels. Lin Feng was a low-level emperor, so at that level, he could be cleansed by eighty-one layers of Kalpa strength. For an ordinary cultivator, after being cleansed eighty-one times by Kalpa strength, their soul changed. Lin Feng was different, though. His physical body already had the strength of a medium-level emperor, and this time his soul had changed. His physical body had become stronger and his demon cosmic energies had changed, too. Now, his cultivation level had advanced to that of a medium-level emperor!

“What a powerful skill!” said Minister Uptala. He was amazed. Everybody looked at him when they heard him and trembled. Lin Feng had broken through while fighting, thanks to the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. He had been cleansed another nine times by Kalpa strength, and his soul and body had changed. Now, he had the Qi of a medium-level emperor. However, the strange thing was that he still ‘looked’ like a Zun cultivator.

“So now what about the battle?” asked Minister Kalasutra. He was also surprised. Lin Feng had broken through and become a medium-level Hell emperor during the battle. However, he was still on the battle stage of the low-level Hell emperors.

“Lin Feng has won a hundred battles and there isn’t much to say about the battle against the six others at the same time. He’s really strong. Now that he broke through, the battle counts,” said Minister Uptala with a smile.

The crowd looked at the cultivators around Lin Feng. Prince Mayi sighed and said, “He’s already done a great job. I think he won.”

Then, he turned around and left the battle stage. While walking

away, he said as he left, “Even if you continue the battles, fighting for nine victories is now pointless!”

Chapter 1859: City Government

The other people on the battle stage left as well when they heard Prince Mayi. They were all determined and passionate people.

They were all geniuses who had won a hundred battles on the battle stage. They couldn't fight against a strong medium-level Hell emperor. Six of them had fought against Lin Feng at the same time, and he had easily defeated them, even injuring some of them. Lin Feng had used Deva-Mara Kalpa and broken through, it was all too incredible!

Other people rose into the air and left. Those who had fought against Lin Feng decided not to stay on the battle stage and left. Very quickly, Lin Feng was alone on the battle stage.

When the crowd saw Lin Feng alone on the battle stage, they sighed. Fighting against someone like that was monstrous.

At that moment, the city official landed on the battle stage and smiled at Lin Feng. "Lin Feng, we know you're very strong. The Great Emperor of Hell loves battles, and you are a heroic fighter. From now on, you can access all the external governmental buildings of the city. You can also go to all the pavilions and governmental halls, you just can't go to people's residences, obviously...

"The city army is composed of 108 armies. Among them, there are 72 Hell imperial armies and 36 Great imperial armies. There are all kinds of armies among the 72 imperial armies. After you understand the different troops, you can choose one and join them. You don't need to take any more tests."

When the crowd heard that, they were amazed. People who managed to win a hundred battles were already monstrously strong. Those who could win nine battles against the other champions were even more powerful, and the city wanted to support such talents. They all had a bright future ahead of them.

Many Ministers had risen that way, and when they saw Lin Feng, a handsome and strong young man, they could easily imagine what his future would be like.

As expected, these are the kinds of privileges you get. I can freely travel within the governmental buildings now!, thought Lin Feng. He could also go to all the pavilions and governmental halls, which probably contained incredible treasures, such as ancient and mysterious scriptures. Great Emperor Song really attached great importance to such geniuses.

Unfortunately, Lin Feng's cultivation level was still too low. Great Emperor Song couldn't personally attach any importance to him. After all, he was just a medium-level emperor. For Great Emperor Song, one of the Ten Yama Courts' kings, that was low. However, Great Emperor Song had set up procedures and rules, so his assistants took care of such people. If Lin Feng kept up the good work, he'd be able to meet Great Emperor Song sooner or later!

There were many strong cultivators in the Great Imperial Song City, Great Emperor Song couldn't help all of them individually!

"Thank you very much, sir!" Lin Feng bowed politely.

Minister Uptala smiled and said, "I wouldn't have thought that I'd see such a great cultivator today. Wang Zhuo, my boy, it seems like you made another mistake today. He fought against six people, and even if he hadn't broken through, he would have won. He can be proud and he can definitely be a bit arrogant. You would be the same."

"Minister Uptala, you're right. I was wrong, I hadn't thought he'd be so strong. Now, he's a medium-level Hell emperor, in the future, he'll become like Jian Mang," agreed Wang Zhuo easily. He wasn't offended by what the Minister had said, and he even compared Jian Mang to Lin Feng. He looked at the other battle stage.

"Jian Mang has already won seven battles, that's the eighth one!"

said Wang Zhuo.

“Jian Mang is extremely strong, but Lin Feng was much more amazing. He fought against all those low-level Hell emperors at the same time. Jian Mang also just blinded one of the people among those champions. The others are all injured. Jian Mang is still just as cruel,” said Qin Yao calmly.

Minister Kalasutra agreed. “I wish everybody could be like Lin Feng.”

Even though Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra didn’t agree on everything, they both acknowledged Lin Feng. Even if Minister Kalasutra had lost the Hellfire because of Lin Feng, he didn’t mind because he hadn’t seen such a strong cultivator in many years.

“He won the eighth battle!” The crowd was watching Jian Mang. He had cruelly blinded his opponent again. If Jian Mang did the same to the last one, it would be difficult for them to fight against one another as well, there wouldn’t be enough of them able to fight.

Lin Feng went back to the pavilion and watched Jian Mang as well. He had the sensation that Jian Mang was doing something mysterious because each time, he saw some sword force which moved really slow. However, his attacks were still surprising and fast.

Jian Mang will win the ninth battle, thought Lin Feng, and as expected, Jian Mang did so. On that day, on both the battle stages for low-level Hell emperors and medium-level Hell emperors, two cultivators had managed to win against nine other champions, a rare and difficult feat!

“Someone didn’t want to let Lin Feng be the only one!” said Wang Zhuo, smiling thinly. After Jian Mang won nine battles, the others didn’t continue battling, and simply left.

The crowd was amazed and pleased. Two incredible cultivators

had appeared today, both winning a hundred battles without resting and defeating nine champions!

But Lin Feng's performance had been even more amazing. He had defeated Qin Yao the Princess, and he had also defeated six people at the same time. However, Jian Mang had fought on the medium-level Hell emperors' battle stage, and Lin Feng with the low-level Hell emperors, so Jian Mang was stronger than Lin Feng.

Jian Mang would obtain privileges like Lin Feng. He could also choose to join one of the 72 imperial military factions.

—

After winning, Jian Mang didn't say anything and left in the direction of the city. He wanted to benefit from the privileges as soon as possible. The crowd found him amusing and unconventional.

Lin Feng also stood up. Minister Uptala looked at him and asked. "Are you going to the city, too?"

"Indeed!" nodded Lin Feng. He had obtained privileges, and he wanted to see the city, learn more about Hell, the Great Imperial Song City, etc.

"Let's go together. I'm also going back to the office. You can come to my area and have a look," Minister Uptala offered.

"Minister, your offices are in the city center too?" asked Lin Feng. Minister Uptala was surprised, Lin Feng didn't know about him?

"Lin Feng, Ministers in this city are under the orders of Great Emperor Song. The same applies to every city. Each city is divided into private districts and external districts. The private district is where Great Emperor Song lives and where we, his Ministers, have our offices. The external district is for ordinary activities," explained Minister Kalasutra politely. "Lin Feng, my office is also in the private district. I can help you modify your Hellfire."

Lin Feng was very happy to be invited by the two Ministers. It seemed that the city was as big as a country!

“Ministers, I would like to get familiar with the city first,” said Lin Feng, smiling at the two of them.

Minister Kalasutra nodded at his words. “Very good. You don’t know the city, so get familiar with it.”

“Lin Feng, I’ll show you around if you want!” offered Wang Zhuo pleasantly.

Lin Feng glanced at Wang Zhuo; he looked like a prince, or other extraordinary person, but he was smiling in a humble way. He could sit with two Ministers, which meant he had a high position.

“Alright, thank you!” agreed Lin Feng with a quick smile and nod, not refusing Wang Zhuo’s invitation. He wanted to get familiar with the city so having a guide was good.

“Alright, you’re all geniuses, make friends and learn from each others. Qin Yao, let’s go,” said Minister Kalasutra.

Qin Yao shook her head and said, “Dad, I have nothing to do. I’m going with Wang Zhuo,” as she looked at Lin Feng coolly.

Minister Kalasutra was surprised, but simply smiled and nodded. “Alright, as you wish!” before he left.

“Lin Feng, if you have any problems, come to Uptala Office to find me!” directed Minister Uptala. Then, he glanced at Qing Qing. “Let’s go.” She nodded and followed after her father.

“Brother Lin Feng, please!” said Wang Zhuo, showing the way, and the three of them left.

—

When they arrived in the city, Lin Feng had the impression he was in another world, the city was gigantic and very crowded. There were amazing cultivators everywhere, and their Qi rose to the skies.

“The city has existed for a very long time. There are some very powerful clans here. Some of their districts are as big as cities,” Wang Zhuo told him. Lin Feng understood that. In the city, just the private district alone was where Great Emperor Song lived!

Chapter 1860: Blue Uptala Lotus

“Brother Lin Feng, it’s a huge city. Where do you want to go? I can guide you,” said Wang Zhuo politely.

“I want to go to a place where we can see ancient scriptures, spells, skills and techniques,” Lin Feng told him straightforwardly. The city was gigantic, but he wanted to see how different their books were.

“You already know some powerful skills, why would you want to study more?” Qin Yao asked coldly. Lin Feng’s Deva-Mara Kalpa skills were incredible. Even though she didn’t know what kind of skills Lin Feng knew, she knew they were powerful.

“This place is extraordinary, there must be some incredible and mysterious skills. Why not go and see them? I like books! Of course, if we can’t go, I don’t mind,” Lin Feng answered calmly. He didn’t even glance at Qin Yao while talking. He had defeated her, why couldn’t she get over it?

“There are many libraries in the external district. Disciples study there. Lin Feng, you’re free to travel in the external district, so you can also go, of course!” Wang Zhuo informed him cheerfully.

There were 108 armies in the city. 36 were composed of great emperors, 72 were composed of emperors. Apart from those people, most folk lived in the external district. Those who were under the orders of Great Emperor Song definitely had incredible scriptures and skills!

—

Wang Zhuo and the two others raced along and headed into the depths of the city. After a short time, they arrived in front of a library, designed as a lofty pavilion.

Lin Feng and the others entered the building freely. It was very dark inside. That was an attribute of Hell, and the libraries were

no exception. Otherwise, the difference between the Continent of the Nine Clouds and Hell wasn't big.

“Even those who are members of the army can't easily come in here. Brother Lin, because you won against the nine champions, you are free to come in here. Qin Yao can come in because Minister Kalasutra is her father!” Wang Zhuo explained patiently.

“Hmph! I will also deserve it, I will also have privileges thanks to my strength. Even though Minister Kalasutra is my father, apart from a few scriptures and spells, I don't have any other privileges. In this city, only strength matters!” Qin Yao said coldly.

This girl was annoying and Lin Feng was started to lose patience with her.

“Jian Mang is here too!” Wang Zhuo mentioned, gazing into the distance. The blind swordsman had a talisman in his hand. He was blind, so he could only use talismans to study, since he couldn't read books.

Lin Feng looked at him, took out a talisman which contained a book, and projected his godly awareness inside.

“Netherworld Celestial Fire Scriptures.” Lin Feng read the title of a book, it contained skills which used shadowy fire cosmic energies. Lin Feng looked at Qin Yao and smiled. “You have Hellfire, this skill is good for you. You should study these scriptures, Princess.”

Lin Feng put his talisman away and took another one. Time passed slowly. Lin Feng read some books. He realized that books in Hell all involved Hell strength. Many of them also involved netherworldly fire. There were also some powerful skills which involved powerful Hell strength.

There were millions and millions of spells, techniques, and ancient scriptures for all kinds of cultivators. Like in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people in Hell could also have different

specialties and different techniques.

“You really like to chill!” Qin Yao spoke up. After a long time, Lin Feng was still reading. He was a good cultivator and read books carefully. Qin Yao was losing her patience.

“I am not very intelligent. I need to broaden my knowledge!” replied Lin Feng patiently. “If you’re bored, you can leave. You don’t need to worry about me and spend time with me.”

Qin Yao looked at Lin Feng icily. “Spend time with you? You’re ridiculous. I just want to see what the one who defeated me enjoys doing in his spare time.”

“I see. Then please don’t disturb me,” Lin Feng answered indifferently as he continued reading. He found a powerful skill book. He put his entire godly awareness into it and memorized the whole book. For those who could come in the library, it wasn’t a priceless book but in the outside world, it was.

Of course, the people who could come to that library were all incredible.

——

After a long time, Wang Zhuo had no time to wait anymore. He smiled at Lin Feng and left. Lin Feng was very patient. After half a day, he still didn’t want to leave.

However, Qin Yao didn’t leave. She stayed with Lin Feng and also read some books.

—

“Lin Feng!” Lin Feng turned his head and noticed a very pale woman.

“Princess Qing Qing! What are you doing here?” asked Lin Feng. It was Princess Qing Qing, Minister Uptala’s daughter.

“I wanted to find some Ancient scriptures,” said Qing Qing, smiling gently. “Lin Feng, how long have you been here?”

“The whole time!” Lin Feng answered honestly.

Qing Qing was startled and asked, “The whole time? You didn’t visit other places?”

“Indeed!” Nodded Lin Feng.

Qing Qing smiled and blushed. “You’ve been here long enough then. You should come to my dad’s office. He really likes you. He wants to teach you how to use the Blue Uptala Lotus.”

“Princess Qing Qing, have you already found books you needed?” asked Lin Feng. Qing Qing nodded and Lin Feng said. “Since it’s that way, I can’t refuse your offer then.”

“Great. My father will be so happy. And also, don’t call me Princess Qing Qing, just call me Qing Qing, that’s fine.”

They both laughed and left. Qin Yao was astonished. She watched them leave and glared at Lin Feng furiously. Those two...!

When Lin Feng left, he noticed that Jian Mang was still in there, that guy was also a hard worker.

“Lin Feng, you stayed in the pavilion because you don’t like visiting places?” Qing Qing asked him. She was very curious. He knew nothing about the city and only appeared to have the strength of a Zun cultivator.

“Apart from the army buildings and the libraries, what else is interesting here?” asked Lin Feng.

“There are some interesting places!” smiled Qing Qing. “But now we’re going to see my dad, you won’t be disappointed.”

—

The two headed towards the private district. It was a place people normally couldn’t go freely. Of course, there were some exceptions, as Qing Qing took Lin Feng to a strange place inside it.

The Uptala office seemed to be an empty field. It was covered by a white layer of energy, and almost invisible. It was also very calm

and quiet.

When Lin Feng arrived, Minister Uptala was seated there cross-legged and his eyes were closed.

“Lin Feng!” Minister Uptala suddenly opened his eyes, then smiled and nodded at Lin Feng.

“Minister, I didn’t want to disturb you,” Lin Feng said to him. This man was nice and easy to get along with. Qing Qing was the same.

“I’m happy to see you.” said Minister Uptala. “Come, let’s go and see the lotuses.”

Lin Feng walked with the Minister to some lotus fields. They were all beautiful and contained the Qi of the ten thousand things of creation. Lin Feng felt extremely good, buoyant and uplifted in soul.

“What a strange Qi!” sighed Lin Feng.

Minister Uptala smiled. “That’s thanks to Blue Uptala Lotuses. Take out your lotus and look at it.”

Lin Feng nodded and took out his Blue Uptala Lotus.

“Release cosmic energies,” instructed Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng released cosmic energies. In a flash, he sensed an incredible Qi surround him, made up of all sorts of cosmic energies, as if the lotuses contained all the cosmic energies of the world.

“That Blue Uptala Lotus contains the Qi of the ten thousand things of creation. You can control several sorts of cosmic energies. If you practice cultivation using the lotus, your cosmic energies will fuse together even better when you attack,” explained Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng’s heart started racing. He hadn’t thought the Blue Uptala Lotus would be so incredible!

Chapter 1861: Two Adorable Sisters

In Ba Huang, Jiange...

Lin Feng's clone opened his eyes and recalled his Qi. Sharp lights glittered in his eyes.

Behind Lin Feng, an old man arrived. The old man walked slowly, but had the spirit of a dragon horse, he was old but still full of vitality, with a thick head of hair. Seeing him like that, it was difficult to imagine that a few months before, he was about to die.

“Lin Feng, you became stronger again!” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian, walking up to Lin Feng. Lin Feng's Qi and soul were changing, and he was becoming stronger. Emperor Wu Tian Jian was surprised, because Lin Feng's Qi wasn't as strong as he had thought. He didn't know why he had that impression.

Lin Feng stood up and smiled in greeting at Emperor Wu Tian Jian. “Master, you're glowing with health and radiating vigor. Since you healed, you must have been studying a lot too!”

“Indeed. The Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures hold extensive knowledge and profound scholarship, they are incredible. My understanding of the Nihility Sword Scriptures improved as well thanks to the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. Everything is going great!” Emperor Wu Tian Jian nodded. The Nihility Sword Scriptures used to be a precious treasure of Sword Mountain, and only the leaders of Sword Mountain could obtain them. His fellow disciple had chased him away and tried to kill him. Now, Emperor Wu Tian Jian had the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures and he was also a great emperor. He was becoming stronger and stronger.

“It seems that you'll be able to return to Sword Mountain soon,” Lin Feng conjectured.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian gazed into the distance and stated firmly, “I'm definitely going to Sword Mountain.”

At that moment, they heard some steps, Jian Mu was coming. He stopped two thousand meters away from them and bowed before Lin Feng and Emperor Wu Tian Jian. “Young Master, someone is here for you.”

“Who?” Lin Feng inquired.

“Feng Ling and Feng Xuan from Qi Feng Mountain,” replied Jian Mu.

Lin Feng nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll go and see them.”

“I will prepare everything next to the lake,” Jian Mu said, bowing and walking backwards.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian laughed and said, “Jian Mu is a good man. Unfortunately, he’s not talented.”

“Master, Jiange now rules over the central part of Ba Huang. Apart from you and me, nobody has broken through to the Huang Qi layer. If you can, you could help some of them break through to the Huang Qi layer and I could give them some imperial weapons. That way, Jiange would thrive for another ten thousand years.”

“Alright. Jian Wu Bei is quite strong, and he should be able to break through to the Huang Qi layer soon. I will help him. Regarding Jian Wu Bei and the others, they could possibly become emperors if they used fate seeds. Unless strong people from the outside world come here, with your imperial weapons and Ancient scriptures, Jiange should be fine for another ten thousand years, indeed. They control their future, though,” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian. Even if Jiange didn’t thrive for another ten thousand years, what could he do about it?

Lin Feng nodded. He had recreated Tiantai in the former territory of the nine great celestial castles. Strong cultivators from the outside world wouldn’t be very numerous in the small world anymore. If Jiange didn’t manage to rise, then they couldn’t do much about it.

Lin Feng left Emperor Wu Tian Jian and went to a lake. There was a pavilion there with two beautiful women inside. Lin Feng had seen many beautiful women in his life, but those two women were indeed incredibly beautiful.

Feng Xuan was wearing a red skirt, she had a great figure and was very sexy, the whole image only helped by her powerful Qi. Feng Ling wasn't the same cute little girl anymore, she was wearing a long and slim dress made of phoenix feathers. She looked like a phoenix queen, and her Qi was much more powerful than Feng Xuan's.

"Lin Feng!" the two girls greeting them. They were smiling widely at him.

"Long time no see!" answered Lin Feng, looking over these two incredibly beautiful women.

"You came back to Ba Huang, and you didn't come see us. You don't like us anymore?" said Feng Ling. Even though she had broken through to the Huang Qi layer, she still sounded cute and pouted.

"I have so much to do. Don't be angry at me, little girl!" Lin Feng smiling at her.

"Who's a little girl?" asked Feng Ling angrily. Lin Feng smiled wryly and poked her. Feng Ling wanted to dodge, but she couldn't move. She turned red and stared at Lin Feng.

"Haha, so are you a little girl or not?" challenged Lin Feng.

"Bastard, you're bullying me!" said Feng Ling, kicking Lin Feng. Lin Feng bit his lips as he took the kick, she was strong!

"Alright, that's enough, Ling." said Feng Xuan, rolling her eyes, "You're an emperor and you're acting like a kid."

"Indeed. I'm the empress of Qi Feng!" stated Feng Ling.

Lin Feng smiled and conceded, “Alright, you’re an empress, not a little girl.”

“Lin Feng, how was the great world?” asked Feng Xuan, ignoring Feng Ling.

“Right, how is the great world, does the Holy City exist?” asked Feng Ling, abruptly brimming with eager curiosity.

“The great world.” Lin Feng remained silent for a few seconds before saying, “I’ll try to sum it up a little.”

Then, he explained to Feng Ling and Feng Xuan some things about the great world. They understood that Ba Huang and Jiu You were the exits to the great world, that people from the nine great celestial castles used to control it, and also that the nine great celestial castles were under the orders of Qing Di Mountain.

in the great world, there were many powerful groups like Qing Di. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were several regions. In the Dark Night Region, there were eighteen main cities, and the Holy City was one of them. There were many powerful Holy Clans there. There were also many geniuses and universities which had incredible Ancient scriptures.

“Are people extremely strong in Champion University?” asked Feng Ling. Her eyes were shining with curiosity.

“They are. Low-level emperors there are much more powerful than people like, let’s say, Emperor Dong, for example. They are real geniuses,” admitted Lin Feng. Feng Ling was amazed. She had broken through to the Huang Qi layer, but she didn’t realize how strong those emperors were.

“Lin Feng, everybody in Ba Huang now knows that you’re extremely strong. Show me how strong you are” giggled Feng Ling.

Lin Feng looked at her and released cosmic energies, “Imprison!”

In just a flash, a cage appeared around Feng Ling.

Feng Ling attacked the cage, but it didn't yield at all.

Lin Feng laughed, waved his hand and the cage disappeared. Feng Ling looked him and declared, "You're bullying me."

"You wanted to try," said Lin Feng speechlessly.

"Alright, Ling. Lin Feng didn't do much. He recreated Tiantai in the great world and Tiantai rules over the territory of the nine great celestial castles. The Wen Clan and the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine have already disappeared thanks to him. You can't compete with him," laughed Feng Xuan.

Feng Ling's eyes twinkled. She wanted to learn more about the great world.

"Ling," said Feng Xuan to Feng Ling solemnly. "I can stay in Qi Feng alone. You can go to the great world with Lin Feng," said Feng Xuan. She had come to see Lin Feng because she hoped Lin Feng could take care of her little sister. After all, Feng Ling couldn't go to the great world alone, she was still young.

Feng Ling was startled, but she smiled and said, "To the great world? I don't want to go. I want to stay in Qi Feng and be the great empress. In Ba Huang, I feel good!"

Lin Feng looked at them, he found them cute. They took care of one another.

"You're so talented, it would be a waste if you stayed here," replied Feng Xuan, shaking her head.

"A waste? I am already quite strong. I will have a very long life. I can become stronger and then I can go to the great world. It's all the same," said Feng Ling. Then, she smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Alright, Lin Feng, we saw you now so we can leave. Do you have gifts for my sister?"

"Alright..." Lin Feng nodded. Feng Ling was so cute, how could he refuse? He released his godly awareness which moved straight to Feng Ling's third eye. She knew what he wanted to do. She

closed her beautiful eyes and accepted the memories.

After a short time, Feng Ling opened her eyes and Lin Feng said, “You can transmit the presents to your sister.”

“You’re lucky you’re a nice guy,” said Feng Ling with a laugh. Then, she took a step forwards and hugged Lin Feng. At the same time, she moved her mouth to Lin Feng’s ear and said, “Lin Feng, I need to tell you a secret, I think my sister is in love with you.”

Then, she moved back, grabbed Feng Xuan’s hand and said, “Sister, hug him too and let’s go. He will go back to the great world, you will maybe never see him again in this life.”

Feng Xuan felt extremely sad. One of the four most beautiful women in Ba Huang back then, she belonged to a powerful imperial clan, and now everything had changed. She felt dispirited.

She was standing there, her hair was fluttering in the wind. Her legs felt stiff. Lin Feng smiled, took a step forwards and embraced Feng Xuan. Feng Xuan shivered.

“Take care!” said Lin Feng. As Feng Ling had said, maybe they would never meet again. Lin Feng had already met many people in life. Among them, who would he keep in touch with forever?

Feng Ling and Feng Xuan had mixed feelings as they left. Lin Feng sighed, feeling sad too. He sat on the lakeside and lost himself in nostalgia for a time...

Chapter 1862: Xue Baguio's Memories

After Feng Xuan and Feng Ling left, Lin Feng left Jiange and went to the southern part of Ba Huang.

Some people important to him were there. After seeing Feng Ling and Feng Xuan, Lin Feng felt nostalgic. He had the feeling he had to see someone, one of the former four most beautiful women... Xue Baguio!

There were many rumors and legends about Xue Baguio in Ba Huang. She had lost her memories, apparently, she had been attacked by someone to force her to marry Emperor Dong's son. Her life was mysterious. And she wanted to resurrect the Celestial Place of the Alchemists.

Lin Feng wanted to see her, and after that, he wouldn't have anything to worry about anymore in the small world.

——

The small world of the Celestial Place of the Alchemists was still filled with fog. There was a celestial building there, where a celestial woman was seated cross-legged. She appeared both calm and serene.

Lin Feng hadn't thought he would find her so easily. He directly saw her when he arrived.

"What an incredible Qi. She looks like she's a trance," murmured Lin Feng when he saw Xue Baguio meditating there.

Xue Baguio opened her eyes. She looked surprised, "Who are you?"

Lin Feng was startled by her words. He blinked at her, she looked back at him coldly.

"Have you never seen me?" asked Lin Feng.

"You look familiar, who are you? Do we know one another?"

asked Xue coldly, staring at Lin Feng.

“She doesn’t remember.” Lin Feng was very surprised. Last time he had seen her, she had already lost her memory and then they had met again at the ceremony. So she should have remembered him, unless she had become amnesic again.

“My name is Lin Feng. We met when you were a disciple of the Celestial Place of the Alchemists, I had accidentally ended up in your room. We’ve also fought, and then we became friends. Do you remember?” asked Lin Feng calmly.

Xue Baguio shook her head and said, “Lin Feng... I think I’ve seen you before but I don’t remember you.”

Lin Feng suddenly raised his hand and released a hand attack.

Xue Baguio groaned icily, she suddenly rose up in the air and countered with a hand attack which contained both pure celestial and cold Qi. The air around her began to freeze.

Their two hands collided. Lin Feng sensed an ice-cold energy surround him.

He was surprised as he flickered out of her view. Xue Baguio had become really strong. She wasn’t weaker than low-level emperors in the great world!

“Hmph!” Xue Baguio groaned icily, she waved her hand and snowflakes appeared everywhere, she wanted to freeze Lin Feng.

“That’s enough!” Lin Feng shouted extremely loudly. Xue Baguio was startled, and stared at Lin Feng’s eyes as she sensed something invade her brain.

“Xue Baguio, you have a memory problem. If you want to follow me, maybe I can find an extremely strong cultivator to help you. If you don’t want to, then I can just leave and I will never disturb you again,” Lin Feng stated. Xue Baguio shivered.

She looked at Lin Feng and found herself shaking. Lin Feng’s

words had a definite impact on her.

She knew that she had a memory problem. Apart from the Celestial Place of the Alchemists, she didn't remember much. She had forgotten everything else!

"It's not the first time something like this has happened to you. Back then, when you wanted to get married to Emperor Dong's son, you had already forgotten everything, otherwise you obviously wouldn't have been willing to get married with Qi Yan, Emperor Dong's son. Now, we haven't seen one another in ten years, and you have forgotten everything again. I don't know what has happened to you," said Lin Feng slowly, staring at her. Her heart started pounding. She didn't know why she had become amnesic either, why had she forgotten everything?

"Did I get married to Emperor Dong's son?" she asked Lin Feng.

"You didn't. I prevented you from getting married to him," replied Lin Feng, "My name is Lin Feng. I made people destroy the Palace of the Celestial Kings of Medicine. If I wanted to do anything against you, I could, you couldn't resist me. I'm that strong. In the great world, there are many extremely strong cultivators. I can take you to the great world and we can find a solution to cure you. You should decide what you want to do."

Xue Baguio stared at Lin Feng. Even though she had forgotten everything, she wasn't stupid. If Lin Feng attacked her, she couldn't do anything. She knew he was telling the truth.

Lin Feng didn't continue asking her questions or explaining anything. He just stared at her. After a short time, Xue Baguio nodded and said decisively, "Alright, I'm coming with you!"

"From now on, when you meet important friends or enemies, use your godly awareness to remember. That way, if you forget, you will still be able to inspect your godly awareness to access memories. You will still know who your friends and enemies are," he told her. She nodded. In the past, she didn't know she was going

to become amnesic, so she had never done that. She didn't even know she kept losing memories. According to Lin Feng, she kept forgetting everything.

Both of their silhouettes flickered as they left the Celestial Place of the Alchemists. Xue Baguio followed Lin Feng silently, thinking about many things.

.....

In Hell, Lin Feng was studying the Blue Uptala Lotus Minister Uptala had given to him. He used his soul strength and blood to study the flower. He had already established a connection to it already. He just had to think about it and he could make the flower become gigantic and open. Above Lin Feng's head, a mysterious Qi was swirling.

"Lin Feng, how many sorts of cosmic energies can you control?" asked Minister Uptala to Lin Feng.

"My body type allows me to use more than a dozen sorts of cosmic energies!" replied Lin Feng with a smile. Minister Uptala's eyes shone. He could control over a dozen different cosmic energies? At a certain level, the Blue Uptala Lotus would grant Lin Feng with incredible powers. The way of Uptala transformation would be an incredible path for him.

"Blue Uptala Lotus Way of Transformation?" repeated Lin Feng.

Minister Uptala said, "I've told you, the path of the Blue Uptala Lotus can help you create the ten thousand things of creation. If you understand it, you can be like me."

Minister Uptala punched out, some Uptala intent appeared. It was ice-cold, and the air froze. However, after that, the cold Qi turned into death Qi.

Lin Feng was astonished at the sight and grew very serious. There weren't several sorts of cosmic energies there, there was one cosmic energy which transformed.

“You understand?” asked Minister Uptala.

“Master, you’ve told me that the Blue Uptala Lotus could contain all cosmic energies, so you just used it for one attack and it did that, right?” asked Lin Feng.

“That’s only Blue Uptala Lotus intent,” explained Qing Qing, smiling thinly. She continued, “The Blue Uptala Lotus contains every cosmic energy in the world. When you achieve the ultimate, your cosmic energies seem to be one only. It’s one cosmic energy, but at the same time, it’s every cosmic energy in the world!”

“One sort of cosmic energy which is every cosmic energy!” Lin Feng frowned, “Qing Qing, what you mean is that I need to study one sort of cosmic energy and make it level up, and my other cosmic energies will level up too? When I use it to attack, how many cosmic energies might it include then?...”

“Indeed!” said Qing Qing, nodding and smiling. Lin Feng shivered in anticipation. The boundless world was full of mysterious things. Minister Uptala in Hell had such a mysterious power: the Blue Uptala Lotus, the Way of Transformation!

“I know ten sorts of cosmic energies, if I want to study all of them and make them rise to the same level, it’s impossible. If I controlled the Blue Uptala Lotus, then I would need to study one kind of cosmic energy to make all my cosmic energies level up!” murmured Lin Feng excitedly. That wasn’t the only advantage, another was that he could make the energies fuse together much better!

“The more cosmic energies you know, the more beneficial the lotus is,” Minister Uptala nodded. “You probably understand why I like you. On the battle stage, you used many sorts of cosmic energies. I chose the Path of the Blue Uptala Lotus because it’s my fate, but you’re different, you can understand Blue Uptala Lotus intent. That’s priceless!”

“Thank you, Master! I am very grateful!” bowed Lin Feng. He

was moved and happy that a Hell Minister would support him.

“You made it happen!” smiled Minister Uptala. “Lin Feng, are you interested in joining an army? If not, you can follow me temporarily.”

“Well then, I prefer staying with you!” said Lin Feng smiled happily.

Minister Uptala was pleased, and Lin Feng was even happier, as staying with Minister Uptala was better than joining an army. In the future, it would also be more convenient for meeting Great Emperor Song!

Chapter 1863: Competition Over Territories

In a lake, Lin Feng was seated cross-legged, surrounded by an illusionary Blue Uptala Lotus, and was also seated on a real Blue Uptala Lotus, that lotus Minister Uptala had given to him. There were other Blue Uptala Lotuses on the lake, growing because of the other lotuses. Lin Feng sensed the Blue Uptala Lotus intent at that moment.

He was in his spirit world, where rose a gigantic ancient tree, the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree!

The way of the Blue Uptala Lotus could create the ten thousand things of creation. The Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree was a tree which also contained all sorts of cosmic energies. There was a connection between all those things.

They were similar in that they could both give birth to the ten thousand things of creation.

Lin Feng turned around and gazed into the distance, sensing the wind.

This is my world. I should be able to do anything in here, thought Lin Feng. If other people couldn't use cosmic energies in his world, how could the people who lived in there break through to the Huang Qi layer?

He could use a mysterious strength to create and shape his world. Even if the world evolved on its own, he could also be like a god and use the strength of the ten thousand things of creation to modify it as he wished.

His spirit allowed him to have a world, he was the god in his world. He had the power to understand any kind of cosmic energy, so why not understand all of them in his world?

Lin Feng was thinking, understanding more things. He remained motionless for a very long time.

—

“Brother!” someone interrupted Lin Feng. Wu Shang was smiling down at him.

“Bro, we’re not in the same place anymore, are we?” asked Wu Shang. Lin Wu Shang was usually playful but in front of Lin Feng, he was usually serious. He also had some doubts. Even though the imperial palace hadn’t changed, Yangzhou City hadn’t changed, and nothing seemed to have changed, he still had the impression that Lin Feng had made them move somewhere else.

“Why are you thinking so much?” asked Lin Feng, tapping his brother’s head and smiling.

“I want to go out and travel,” stated Lin Wu Shang, raising his head. Lin Feng had started traveling when he was fifteen. Now, Lin Wu Shang wanted to travel too, he didn’t want his family to protect him forever, he didn’t want to live in a cocoon.

“When you break through to the Huang Qi layer, I’ll let you go to the great world!” smiled Lin Feng.

Lin Wu Shang’s eyes twinkled, “Alright, that’s a promise!”

“That’s a promise!” agreed Lin Feng. Lin Wu Shang left, and Xiao Ya and Liu Fei also came to see him. Liu Fei leaned against him. Xiao Ya pulled on Lin Feng’s arm and said, “Brother, won’t you be worried letting him go and travel?”

“I will take care of him,” promised Lin Feng. He couldn’t let Wu Shang live in his small world forever. He had to let him choose what he wanted to become.

“Now is so good, I can stay with you whenever I want,” said Lin Feng sighed. He dragged Xiao Ya and Liu Fei closer to him and hugged them tightly. He was extremely happy. No matter where he was, he could visit his friends and family whenever he wanted.

.....

“Lin Feng, you’re done studying!” Qing Qing said to Lin Feng three days later.

“The Hell Fire is incredible powerful, I had to modify it entirely to make it fuse together with my own fire,” admitted Lin Feng. Qing Qing’s eyes glittered. She opened them wide and stared at him.

“What’s wrong?” asked Lin Feng, not understanding her look.

“You completely modified the Hell Fire?” Qing Qing asked.

Lin Feng was surprised. What was wrong with that? He just nodded, though. “Is there a problem?” he asked.

“No... nothing,” Qing Qing replied, shaking her head. Lin Feng had the impression something was wrong.

“Where is the Minister?” asked Lin Feng, glancing around. He couldn’t see Minister Uptala anywhere around.

“Here!” answered Minister Uptala in the distance.

Qing Qing looked at him and asked, “Father, why did Great Emperor Song call you and Minister Kalasutra over?”

“A medium-level Hell appeared in the fire mountain. Great Emperor Song gave Minister Kalasutra and me the order to go and fight the leader,” said Minister Uptala.

Qing Qing looked surprised and asked, “Who will control that place then if you defeat him?”

“Wang Zhen, Great Emperor Song wants his descendant Wang Zhen to take control of it. He asked Minister Kalasutra and me to go and fight him, but Wang Zhen and the army will come too. It’s all for him.”

Wang Zhen was a descendant of Great Emperor Song. Qing Qing understood what her father meant. While he was there, Wang Zhen would be able to gather experience too.

“Wait for me. I’m going to call people,” Minister Uptala told Lin

Feng and Qing Qing.

After the Minister left, Lin Feng looked at Qing Qing and asked, “The ten main cities of Hell also compete?”

“Of course!” Qing Qing smiled. “I don’t know much about the history of Hell, but there are many strong cultivators here. Some of them have their own small worlds, the strongest ones can modify their worlds better than others. Their small worlds can then become a region in Hell. Sometimes, some new regions of Hell appear suddenly, and then strong cultivators fight over them. There are many resources in small worlds, and people are also resources.”

“Indeed. When those people become strong, you can use them,” agreed Lin Feng. There was a huge difference between Hell and the Continent of the Nine Clouds. In the great world, the ancient clans competed all the time, and people wanted to become stronger using resources. In Hell, the Ten Yama Courts’ kings controlled everything.

After a short time, Minister Uptala came back, now wearing silver armor. There were many marks carved on it.

Behind Minister Uptala, there was a strong cultivator wearing Blue Uptala Lotus armor. He looked dignified and majestic. Many people rapidly appeared.

“That’s my father’s Blue Uptala Lotus Army,” said Qing Qing, smiling at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, come with us,” Minister Uptala nodded at Lin Feng. “Let’s go!”

—

After a short time, two other armies joined them: Minister Kalasutra’s army and Wang Zhen’s army.

Hmph!” Lin Feng heard someone grunt icily. He turned around and saw Qin Yao, who was looking at him icily.

“Brother Lin Feng!” said someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and saw Wang Zhen, smiling and nodding greetings to him.

“Everybody is here, let’s go!” Wang Zhen waved. The three gathered armies started moving together.

Lin Feng followed the Uptala army. They all jumped onto a gigantic Blue Uptala Lotus and started flying at full speed.

Lin Feng looked at the world under his feet. He finally understood how vast Great Imperial Song City was now. It was as big as several countries!

—

After they had been flying for a while, Lin Feng saw a gigantic mountain range ahead in the shape of a tortoise.

“That’s the exit of Great Imperial Song City,” explained Wang Zhen, pointing in the distance. There was a hole in what looked like the abdomen of the tortoise. The armies were heading towards that hole.

“People from Chu Jiang City found out about it, but nobody said anything about it. Then, some rumors spread and Great Emperor Song went there and broke the mountain open to create a passage, sealing it afterwards,” said Wang Zhen.

The armies walked up to the entrance, crossed over, and suddenly, they were in another world.

It was a fiery mountain range. There were flames everywhere, it looked just like purgatory.

“Let’s go!” said Wang Zhen, taking the first step. After a short time, the armies arrived in a sinister place. There were burnt corpses on the ground and wrecked buildings everywhere. Wang Zhen was furious.

“There was a battle?” asked Minister Kalasutra.

“Indeed. I had already given the order to build a city here, I hadn’t thought people would discover it that fast, they even killed our people.” said Wang Zhen. Lin Feng was stupefied. The competition between those ten big cities in Hell was fierce and cruel.

“Lin Feng, the competition in Hell is fierce, especially when people compete over territories. Usually, there’s lots of blood involved,” Qing Qing whispered to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded. He had heard that there would be five powerful groups in this place. There would definitely be lots of bloodshed involved.

“And the natives will also suffer a lot. They won’t be able to keep some of their homes.” said Qing Qing. Lin Feng realized that a deadly battle was about to happen.

Chapter 1864: Different Paths

Suddenly, some people appeared, illusions floating in the sky. Minister Uptala and the others raised their heads.

“Minister Uptala, Minister Kalasutra!” one of them called out, smiling indifferently, “People from Great Imperial Song City are here already. Should we determine some rules?”

“Since the Ministers are here, what rules do you suggest?” asked Minister Kalasutra.

“First, Hell great emperors can’t attack Hell emperors. It shouldn’t be an issue, I guess,” proposed one of them. Minister Kalasutra and Minister Uptala nodded agreement. Of course there was no problem. Even though battles were powerful and cruel, it was also a good way for armies to practice. Some people were going to get killed, some others were going to become even stronger.

Therefore, there were rules. Hell great emperors couldn’t attack Hell emperors, otherwise, nobody would benefit from the battle as low-level people wouldn’t have the opportunity to practice.

Of course, they were going to kill one another. Many people would die.

“Of course, no problem, what else?” asked Minister Kalasutra.

“We can set up different fighting areas,” suggested one of the illusions.

The strong cultivators of Great Imperial Song City understood that the four other groups had already agreed on rules. Wang Zhen asked, “How to divide them up?”

“Three areas, one for low-level Hell emperors, one for medium-level Hell emperors, one for high-level Hell emperors! We are five groups, we will see who can take over this place, those who can’t will be eliminated directly. And then we can take the Hell great emperors of the remaining groups and compare them. What do

you think?”

First, Hell emperors would battle, and among the five groups, at least two had to be eliminated.

“How is a group to be considered as a loser? When their people are all dead? What is the time limit, as well? And also, can we use weapons?” asked Wang Zhen.

“We have to seal the five entrances. We can’t use weapons. Three months. The remaining people are the winners. If a group doesn’t agree, battles to death will make them come to an agreement. I’m sure weak people will quickly give up. Of course, there’s something else, great emperors can watch, but they can’t get involved, no exception. And weapons are forbidden, if anyone violates this rule, everybody must help to kill them,” said a fourth person. Nobody wanted to risk their life for nothing. There had to be rules for great emperors, they could monitor but they couldn’t get involved.

Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra glanced at one another and then looked at Wang Zhen.

“Wang Zhen, what do you think?” asked Minister Kalasutra. Wang Zhen was the protagonist. They had to listen to him.

“No problem!” agreed Wang Zhen.

The other five people nodded and said, “Alright, we can start sealing the place. The areas are already divided,” said one of them. He released a thread of godly awareness which moved towards Wang Zhen’s third eye. A gigantic map appeared in Wang Zhen’s brain.

“That’s the map of this place. We divided it into three areas. Can you see everything?” said that person, “Great Imperial Song City, you can send five people or more to the exits.”

“Alright,” nodded Wang Zhen. The four other people rose up into the air, the five groups were going to compete to become the leaders of the territory.

Wang Zhen released his godly awareness and transmitted pieces of information to Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra. He said, “Ministers, let’s divide our forces. Bring some people with you to the different areas.”

“The area of the high-level Hell emperors is in the middle, farther away is the area for the medium-level Hell emperors, and the border area with Great Imperial Song City is for the low-level emperors. The battlefield for medium-level Hell emperors is near Chu Jiang City. People from Chu Jiang City found the place first. They don’t have many people, but they are all heroes,” explained Minister Kalasutra.

“Indeed, we can’t fight against people from Chu Jiang City,” agreed Minister Uptala. Chu Jiang City’s people had the advantage.

“How could we give up? Since you thought about it, why didn’t you mention it before?” asked Wang Zhen. He was speechless and sounded unhappy.

“We were the last ones to arrive. That’s not good. Those four people had already agreed on the rules, we couldn’t change anything about them,” Minister Kalasutra said coldly.

Wang Zhen was surprised and looked unhappy, “You’re right. We hadn’t thought about everything. However, which battle can we win, and can we bring in more troops?”

“We don’t have any more time. They’re already ready. They will probably find our exit and seal it. If we force the way in, then we’ll be violating the rules, but since Qing Qing and Qin Yao are here, our low-level emperors should have the advantage.” said Minister Kalasutra, “Unfortunately, Lin Feng has already become a medium-level Hell emperor, otherwise, our low-level emperors would have won.”

Lin Feng’s fighting abilities were incredible. However, he had already become a medium-level Hell emperor.

“Lin Feng, your ability to hide your cultivation level is incredible, if you pretend you’re a low-level Hell emperor, nobody will know,” Wang Zhuo proposed.

Lin Feng shook his head and said, “I’m going to the medium-level Hell emperor’s battlefield.”

“Let’s divide as agreed now, then,” said Wang Zhen, he didn’t want to waste time arguing.

“I will lead the high-level Hell emperors. Wang Zhuo, you lead the medium-level Hell emperors, Qing Qing and Qin Yao, you lead the low-level Hell emperors,” Minister Kalasutra proposed, and everyone nodded.

The three groups then divided. Minister Uptala took people to the medium-level Hell emperors’ battlefield. Minister Kalasutra took people to the high-level Hell emperors’ battlefield. Wang Zhen took people to the low-level emperors’ battlefield.

This small world was really well made, much better than Ba Huang and Jiu You. The people in this place were extremely strong, and the area was gigantic.

Minister Uptala was a Hell great emperor. He was extremely fast, but still, it took him a full day to take the group of medium-level Hell emperors to their battlefield.

“Minister Uptala, we are already at the heart of the battlefield, leave it to me now, go and take some people to the exits,” said Wang Zhuo to Minister Uptala.

“Alright, Wang Zhuo, if you can’t grasp how strong the enemy really is, then don’t disperse. If you can’t win this battle, then give up and leave. And help me take care of Lin Feng,” said Minister Uptala.

“I understand,” Wang Zhuo nodded. “Lin Feng is an amazing fighter, he’s very smart. I will try to prevent him from fighting too much. Don’t worry, Minister.”

“Alright,” Minister Uptala said, before taking some people away. Wang Zhuo and the others landed on the ground

“Shouldn’t we take off our armor?” Lin Feng asked Wang Zhuo.

Wang Zhuo smiled and asked, “Why?”

“It’s obvious. We don’t know who the enemy is yet. We might not even recognize them when they’re next to us,” said Lin Feng.

“Next to us? I won’t let them pose a threat to us,” Wang Zhuo smiled. There was a palace in the distance, Wang Zhuo looked at it coldly and said, “Kill all the people inside and let’s use it as our base.”

Lin Feng was surprised and said to Wang Zhuo, “What’s that supposed to mean?”

“I don’t want the enemy to pose a threat to us. Those people could have all of us in their field of vision and kill us,” said Wang Zhuo coldly, “Kill them!”

“Yes, sir!” Silhouettes flickered away. They all went to the palace and killed everyone inside. Lin Feng was astonished. Even though the world of cultivation was cruel indeed, why kill innocent people? Wang Zhuo was really cruel, he could kill so many people with a big smile on his face. Lin Feng was shocked inside.

“Lin Feng, you think I’m wrong?” asked Wang Zhuo when he saw Lin Feng’s strange expression.

Lin Feng remained silent. Wang Zhuo said, “You are very talented. But you’re a bit too nice and gentle. The cultivation world is cruel. The lives of people from small worlds don’t matter. Killing them doesn’t matter.”

“There is no point in people taking counsel together who follow different ways,” said Lin Feng coldly after remaining silent for a few seconds. Then, he turned around, his silhouette flickered and he drew back.

Wang Zhuo was stupefied and stared after Lin Feng. “What’s that supposed to mean?”

“I’ll stay on the battlefield, but I’ll fight alone.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Wang Zhuo groaned coldly and said, “I promised the Minister I’d protect you. If you leave, don’t blame me.”

“Even if I die it, it has nothing to do with you,” replied Lin Feng coldly, before heading away. Wang Zhuo was furious.

Chapter 1865: Death

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered. He gazed into the distance, noting how big the area was.

Apart from that palace, there were man villages. Considering the way the palace had been built, it meant it was very important for its people. Wang Zhuo had destroyed it, that was sad, very sad. And many locals would suffer from the war.

Lin Feng heard an animal cry in distress. He landed on the ground and looked at a small simple house in the distance. There was a small yellow dog, the most ordinary kind of animal in the world. When it saw Lin Feng, it was scared.

"Who's here?" asked someone. Lin Feng saw a fifty-year old man come out of the room. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Little Huang likes to bark when he sees strangers. Sorry. You must be from far away. Come in."

"I'll sit at the entrance." said Lin Feng pointing at a chair before the entrance door and smiled. He sat down and said, "Uncle, there's a palace not far from here, what is that palace?"

"Not far? It's hundreds of kilometers away!" said the man coming out of the small house again with another chair which he put next to Lin Feng, "We're from the countryside, we're quite weak, unlike people from cities. People like me live a hundred years. Most of us are cultivators of the Hell Ling Qi layer, most of us can never break through to the Hell Xuan Qi layer."

"You still look healthy and strong!" Lin Feng complimented him. The Hell Ling Qi layer and Hell Xuan Qi layer were of course the Ling Qi layer and the Xuan Qi layer. That man was quite weak, especially for a middle-aged man. Without resources from the outside world, it was impossible for them to break through.

"You're young, you're trying to cheer me up, that's nice. I'm not

afraid of death. I just hope my son will have a better life, especially now that he joined the Sect of Darkness. Oh yes, by the way, the palace you mentioned is the Sect of Darkness. They are very strong, they have cultivators of the Hell Zun Qi layer. They are as strong as people in the big cities.”

“My boy is only twenty. He’s already a cultivator of the Hell Xuan Qi layer, soon, he will break through to the Hell Zun Qi layer,” the man smiled. His wrinkles kept moving when he smiled.

Lin Feng felt extremely sad when he heard the man.

“You must be quite strong, young man. You must be at least as strong as my boy!” said the man happily.

Lin Feng looked grave and solemn and he asked, “Uncle, do you have other children?”

“I have a daughter too, she’s behind you,” said the man while petting his dog. Then, the small dog turned and ran towards the eighteen-year old girl behind Lin Feng. She wore her hair in braids and looked pure and innocent. She had a resplendent smile on her face.

“Your daughter is very beautiful,” said Lin Feng to the man. She blushed.

“Haha, she’s not as talented as her brother, though, I’m looking for someone who would want to marry her.” said the man, smiling in a calm, serene, and simple manner.

“Maybe her talent hasn’t awoken yet,” smiled Lin Feng. He looked at the small lane next to the house. People were walking on the cobbled lanes of the village. Sometimes people passed next to them and asked the man, “Is that your son?”

“No, he’s passing through. My son is in the Sect of Darkness!” said the smiling man. When he said that, people looked at him in admiration. To them, the Sect of Darkness was an incredible place!

Lin Feng spent some time in the village and one day, the man noticed that a beautiful woman had appeared next to Lin Feng. She was incredibly beautiful. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, “You must be the Young Master of some prestigious clan!”

Lin Feng felt so sad, they had heard nothing from the palace in days. Lin Feng didn’t know what to do.

The evening sun was shining upon the village. Liu Fei leaned against Lin Feng and smiled, “If we could stay this way forever, it would be so nice.”

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and caressed her face. After Liu Cang Lan’s death, she had stopped caring about cultivation. She dreamt of a peaceful and ordinary life.

“Feifei, how long have you known Lin Feng?” asked a young girl with a ponytail. She was extremely cute and noticed that Lin Feng and Liu Fei looked really in love.

“Many, many years,” Liu Fei told her.

“How many years?”

“Over fifteen years, I guess.”

“Feifei, you’re lying! You didn’t get to know Lin Feng when you were a baby!” said the young girl, her eyes twinkling. Liu Fei seemed to be in her early twenties, she was extremely beautiful.

“How do you know Feifei is older than you?” asked the man coming out of a house and smiling. He pet the girl’s head and pinched her cheeks.

At that moment, the man turned and looked at some people on the road, an ordinary young man was coming. The man frowned but said nothing. He had a bad premonition. After Lin Feng had appeared, more and more strangers had appeared in the village. Did they know Lin Feng? However, he had no doubts concerning Lin Feng, Lin Feng always smiled easily, and looked honest and sincere.

Lin Feng looked at those two people. They looked ordinary, but their cultivation level was incredible: medium-level emperors.

“People from the other groups have arrived. I wonder where they’re from,” wondered Lin Feng. He realized that more and more people had appeared in the village. They might be from Great Imperial Song City, or not.

“Uncle, the hotel there is already full.” said the two young men to the man politely.

“If you need space, I have two small rooms here,” offered the man.

“Great. We’ll stay here for a few evenings, then,” said the two people, and then the man took them inside.

The young girl looked at them and then back at Lin Feng and Liu Fei, and smiled. “Are they passing through like you? But I prefer you anyway.”

“Little girl.” Lin Feng patted the girl’s head and said, “You have to be polite to guests.”

The girl didn’t know, but Lin Feng knew how strong those people were. If they didn’t offend them, nothing would happen to them. After all, their targets were people from Great Imperial Song City.

As expected, the two next days were calmer. And living with the man wasn’t bad, he was funny, they liked to chat and laugh. His daughter also made soup for them.

Lin Feng took his bowl, soup appeared in the air, and Lin Feng drank it in one sip.

And then he laughed. He said, “Feifei.”

“Eh?” Liu Fei stared at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes, she looked surprised. Lin Feng took her bowl of soup and said, “I want to drink more soup.”

“Drink it!” smiled Liu Fei. Lin Feng took her bowl and finished the soup. The girl looked at Lin Feng in a cute way.

Her uncle came out of the house and suddenly shouted, “Don’t drink it!”

“You want to die!” said someone, groaning icily. The young girl suddenly turned around, her expression changing drastically.

Lin Feng was startled and his face turned pale. He saw a gigantic hand move towards the man containing death Qi.

“Life!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly, releasing life strength which started flowing throughout the elder’s body as he fell. He recovered a little.

“Father!” the young girl started crying. Then, a gigantic destructive hand descended towards the young girl. She couldn’t escape.

“Don’t!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He wanted to block the attack, but he had no time, he had just released life energy to help her father. The hand crashed onto the young girl’s body and her body exploded into millions of pieces.

A life was so easy to take.

Lin Feng saw many hands filed with death energies. People started dying one after another before him. Lin Feng rarely felt so sad when he saw people die.

A mysterious Qi rose up in the air and surrounded Liu Fei, and she disappeared. Lin Feng went next to the older man and released more life energy to heal him. His heart was filled with pain.

The man was shaking violently. He opened his eyes and looked at Lin Feng. He tried to smile but he had tears in his eyes.

“They can’t die to that kind of poison,” said the man to Lin Feng. “Lin Feng, I shouldn’t have given you any of it, tell me, you didn’t help them to kill my son, right?”

“I didn’t,” said Lin Feng shaking his head, he felt devastated. The man smiled while crying and said, “I think you’re a good boy. Can you help me avenge my son’s death?”

Lin Feng remained silent. The man was still smiling and crying. He was about to die, but his eyes remained open.

Chapter 1866: Fury

The man wanted to die, he had lost his will to live. He knew that his son had been killed. He had also realized that there were more and more strangers in all the surrounding villages. He also realized that more and more people were dying. He wanted to poison them. He had even tried to poison Lin Feng.

Unfortunately, he had failed. His poison was useless against such powerful cultivators. Then they had killed his daughter. His life had become meaningless. Lin Feng was transmitting some life energy to him but still he had his eyes closed. He wanted to die.

Lin Feng didn't blame him. He was a very ordinary man. His children had died. Life had become pointless.

"Kill everyone in the villages!" ordered the young man who had killed the man's daughter icily. Lin Feng was furious.

"Do you hold a grudge against the villagers?" asked Lin Feng icily.

"They are just annoying and keep getting in our way. You will die too, though." A gigantic black hand moved towards Lin Feng, containing powerful death energies. He was a medium-level Hell emperor! Lin Feng had guessed right, those people were here to kill people from Great Imperial Song City. Now, there were invaders everywhere and they all wanted to kill people from Great Imperial Song City.

The four other groups were also hiding in the villages. Initially, they were calm and composed, but now they started killing the villagers too.

The gigantic hand exploded. The young man was stupefied and stared at Lin Feng, "Are you a local, or are you on Great Emperor Song's side?"

"I'm the one who's going to kill you!" said Lin Feng icily. Then,

he flashed forwards, releasing death Qi to surround his enemy.

“You can’t kill me!” sneered the young man when he sensed Lin Feng’s death strength. He smiled coldly, punching out in Lin Feng’s direction. It was a gigantic black hand, and it made the air tremble.

People who came from the outside to the small world were all from incredible armies. This battlefield was the medium-level Hell emperors’ battlefield. They were all extremely strong.

When Lin Feng was standing on the low-level Hell emperors’ battle stage in the city, that was already impressive, but now things were different.

Lin Feng had seen many things in life, he had battled a lot. But in the end, he was still a human being.

Some world strength emerged. It was very strange. His spirit started shaking. A page appeared.

“Slash, slash...” Sword energies whistled. A Nine Kalpa Swords attack filled the air. His enemy was stupefied. It was as if he had appeared in another world, the beautiful woman was here, Lin Feng was here.

“Die!” shouted the young man suddenly at Liu Fei. However, Liu Fei remained motionless and the young man was surprised. What was going on? His death energy couldn’t rotate...!

A strong wind started blowing. That cultivator was stupefied. He waved his hand and a Hell hand appeared and streaked across the sky. He tried to release cosmic energies, but it didn’t work. He couldn’t use his cosmic energies properly in here. He could only use his body’s cosmic energies.

It was his first time in Lin Feng’s world. But while Lin Feng was used to using cosmic energies in the outside world, the young man was not familiar with using cosmic energies in such circumstances!

Lin Feng continued filling the air with his attacks. He was getting

closer and closer to his opponent. A cage appeared around the cultivator. Lin Feng looked at him icily.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His Deva-Mara Kalpa strength blanketed everything. His opponent’s expression changed drastically. Energy attacked the cage.

At that moment, a sharp dazzling sword light beam appeared, blood splashed.

The opponent was stunned as another silhouette emerged and assaulted him. A destructive strength exploded in his body, and he turned to ashes.

After killing him, Lin Feng took Feifei back to Xue Yue in his soul. The small world was his hunting area.

Lin Feng left his world and suddenly reappeared in the village. Horrible shrieks kept spreading in the air. Lin Feng looked furious.

He moved as fast as lightning, his dazzling Tian Ji Sword appearing above his head. It looked alive and kept whistling furiously. It could sense that Lin Feng was furious.

“Eh?” Someone saw Lin Feng and looked at him icily. A hand moved towards Lin Feng at full speed. Lin Feng shouted furiously, “Piss off!”

The Tian Ji Sword whistled furiously. It pierced through the hand attack. Lightning, fire, and other energies exploded.

“Hmph!” that cultivator groaned icily, retreating with his hands in front of him. A golden circle appeared. The Tian Ji Sword pierced through it as if it were made of mud.

Lin Feng jumped and waved his hand. The cage reappeared. He appeared not far from the cage. A mysterious world strength emerged and surrounded the cage, and suddenly his opponent disappeared.

The Tian Ji Sword cut the air with a whistle of speed, moving in

another direction. Lin Feng ignored the man he had sent to his small world. His silhouette flickered and he followed his Tian Ji Sword. After a short time, he appeared in front of another strong cultivator.

“Who are you?” shouted that person icily. Lin Feng said nothing at all. He released empty space and wind energies which surrounded him and at the same time his silver wings appeared on his back, flashing towards the cage. He could make his opponent disappear very quickly.

Very quickly, people noticed Lin Feng in the villages, as he was up in the sky with his silver wings and Tian Ji Sword. People rose up into the air one after another. However, very quickly, they seemed to shake, and suddenly only a few people were left.

“Where are the others?” thought the astonished crowd. They couldn’t see the others!

Lin Feng flapped his wings, and his Tian Ji Sword whistled. He glanced around and saw corpses everywhere in the small villages. So many people had died! For these medium-level Hell emperors, those people’s lives didn’t matter.

“Who are you?” asked the emperors, staring at Lin Feng. So many people had disappeared, it probably had something to do with Lin Feng-!.

“The one who will destroy you.” Lin Feng’s Tian Ji Sword lunged at that person as he sensed a powerful energy. Lin Feng punched out in his direction, a cage appeared around him, and then he disappeared.

The crowd was astonished. They could sense that Lin Feng wasn’t that strong, he couldn’t kill them easily, but he could easily make them disappear. Where did he send those people?

Even with a powerful treasure, it was impossible to do that! All they sensed was a little bit of Qi!

Chapter 1867: Acknowledged By The Gods

Lin Feng took everyone into his own world and then he also went inside using his world strength.

Explosions rang out. The strong cultivators kept attacking everywhere. Lin Feng's spirit was shaking violently. However, he had the same strength as them, he was a medium-level emperor. And the world of his spirit was strange and mysterious, it was very difficult to break. Even though those people had weapons and incredible spells, they still couldn't do much.

Lin Feng entered the world and he glanced around at the crowd with his eyes filled with death energies.

"Where are we?" one of them demanded of Lin Feng. He couldn't use cosmic energies properly here, he could only use the cosmic energies of his own body!

"Your burial plots!" said Lin Feng icily. Then, a Great Imperial Weapon appeared: a sun disc which was dazzling and contained immortal energies. Those people could barely open their eyes because the sun disc was so dazzling.

"You are a descendant of Great Emperor Song?"

"You are not allowed to use Great Imperial Weapons when competing for Hell territories, you are violating the rules!" said one of them icily. Lin Feng surprisingly used a Great Imperial Weapon. He was probably a descendant of Great Emperor Song.

"Slash..." a dazzling light filled with immortal energies streaked across the sky and pierced through the one who had just talked. His body exploded and his soul dispersed. The crowd was stunned and furious.

They could see that Lin Feng was a medium-level Hell emperor and he was using a Great Imperial Weapon. For them, it was a synonym for destruction.

“You used a precious item to take us in here, and now we can’t use our cosmic energies. I’m going to inform the others that people from Great Imperial Song City have already violated the rules.”

“Inform? You cannot communicate with the outside world in here!” laughed Lin Feng icily. He had already tried with Xiao Ya. Apart from him, people couldn’t communicate with the outside world, including when using their godly awareness.

“Die!” Another sun appeared and crushed the one who had just talked. Other people’s faces turned deathly pale.

They had just killed the people from the villages. They had felt powerful when doing that. Now they didn’t dare act recklessly anymore.

Lin Feng released fire strength, which started flowing through the sun disc. Lin Feng was standing on the dazzling sun. Back then, when Yang Yan was a cultivator of the very top of the Zun Qi layer, he could use the sun disc to kill medium-level emperors. Lin Feng was a now medium-level emperor, much, much stronger.

Everybody squinted, unable to see much. Suns started raining down, emperors kept falling down from the sky, one after another. Lin Feng was destroying them all. Some people’s rings even exploded immediately and their treasures fell down from the sky with them.

Finally, Lin Feng was alone.

He put his sun disc away. He didn’t feel sad at all. He went back to the outside world and saw millions of corpses. He could hear some people crying too.

Villagers were innocent people. Villages were lively, filled with life. Now, nothing was left.

The strong cultivators had killed so many of them.

Lin Feng could remember the old man and his daughter dying. It was a tragedy...

At that moment, in the distance, black clouds were expanding in dark waves in the sky. Lin Feng raised his head and looked at them.

“Who is attacking?” murmured Lin Feng. The different groups wanted to join hands to fight against Great Emperor Song’s people. However, Lin Feng didn’t care.

He turned around and flew back to the old man’s house. He used the remains of the house to make a grave, and placed the man’s corpse inside, then used earth strength to bury him. Lin Feng wanted the man to rest in peace.

After that, Lin Feng left the village. All the rest had nothing to do with him.

——

The rest of those days, Lin Feng stayed in desolate places, in the countryside, in mountains. He also walked in their cities. He met many ordinary people who had ordinary lives. They told Lin Feng about happy and sad moments of their lives, their friends, their enemies. However, Lin Feng found ordinary people touching.

A month later, Lin Feng was still thinking about life. He went to the top of a mountain and glanced around. He smiled widely.

He stretched his hand out and a bottle of alcohol appeared, and took a swig from it. It was very strong. It reminded him of good times with his friends.

I worry about imaginary troubles, I’m a genius? I feel like a mediocre person, thought Lin Feng, smiling bitterly and throwing the bottle away. He wasn’t an almighty god. He couldn’t solve all the problems of the world. Even of his world, no matter how strong he was, he couldn’t control everything. He had to let go of things sometimes. He also had to do things he enjoyed doing, he

had to spend time with people he loved.

He had killed all those people because he liked the man and his daughter. He was furious when those people had killed the villagers.

Lin Feng took out his Blue Uptala Lotus. Life and death strength were flowing together in the lotus.

Suddenly, the green life energy made the flower turn green. It was filled with life Qi, then it was suddenly black and filled with death, the change was subtle.

The energies kept changing quickly.

The Blue Uptala Lotus slowly moved away from him. Lin Feng released even more life and death energies. The life and death energies became even denser.

Life and death Qi. There's no limit in this world, thought Lin Feng calmly. He condensed some death strength which turned into a strong death wind. A vortex appeared in his hand.

"Life!" said Lin Feng. In a flash, the death strength turned into a green life energy which cleansed his body.

The air suddenly changed as cosmic strength condensed. It looked like both life and death energy. Two sorts of cosmic energies, only one.

Some people far away noticed the energies. A cosmic energy cleansing?, they wondered. Was someone breaking through to the Huang Qi layer? But those cosmic energies seemed too strong for that...

Lin Feng was surprised. He had been cleansed by Kalpa strength, and he understood life and death energies at a very high level. Something strange was happening...

"There's something wrong. That's not a cosmic energies cleansing, they are too powerful. Back then, when I broke through

to the Huang Qi layer, the cosmic energies weren't that powerful," spoke up someone in the distance. Besides, there were both life and death cosmic energies inside!

"The source of all things! Initially, I was abandoned by the gods, and now they are acknowledging me. They found a compromise!" Lin Feng smiled indifferently. After that, both cosmic energies surrounded him and cleansed his body. He had the strange sensation that he was controlling all cosmic energies.

"Life, death!" In the distance, two gigantic words appeared. A gigantic black word: DEATH, and a gigantic green word: LIFE!

Chapter 1868: The Path of Life and Death

Lin Feng sat down at the top of the mountain. Two sorts of cosmic energies surrounded his body. When Zun cultivators broke through to the Huang Qi layer, the cosmic energies of the earth and the sky cleansed their bodies. It was a means of communication created between cultivators and the earth and the sky. They could finally understand cosmic energies properly when they became emperors, and they could also condense them.

Cultivators used the cosmic energies inside their body to attract the cosmic energies of the earth and the sky, to condense them, and to attack. That way, their attacks were explosive. The cosmic energies in their bodies had limits, however. The more they could use the cosmic energies of the earth and the sky, the more explosive their attacks were.

Before, when Lin Feng fought in the outside world, he couldn't attract the cosmic energies of the earth and the sky, he could only rely on his own cosmic energies. Now, he could finally use the cosmic energies of the earth and the sky. He had been cleansed by the dual life and death cosmic energy. The gods now acknowledged him, and he was allowed to borrow their cosmic energies.

“Minister Uptala considers the Blue Uptala Lotus as a path, as a way of life. That's why he can use all sorts of cosmic energies. His body is made of almost all cosmic energies. He just has to study one sort of cosmic energy, that's enough. I was an Imperial Kalpa, the gods had abandoned me. Now, they have no choice but to acknowledge me. This time, I started walking on the path of life and death,” whispered Lin Feng to himself. Lin Feng had heard that, he had never really understood how or why though. Then, Minister Uptala had told him about the Blue Uptala Lotus, and Lin Feng had suddenly understood. Life and death energies were mysterious and incredible.

Lin Feng was surrounded by mountains. Some people appeared

in the distance and studied him.

That guy's comprehensive abilities are really incredible. He was surprisingly cleansed by two sorts of cosmic energies. And they are much more powerful than when ordinary people get cleansed by cosmic energies, thought the people staring at Lin Feng. They would have never thought someone would be getting cleansed by cosmic energies in such a desolate place.

After a long time, the wind of empty space cosmic energies dispersed. Lin Feng raised his head and smiled.

"Congratulations for breaking through to the Huang Qi layer with dual cosmic energies, Your Excellency!" said someone at that moment. A few people landed in front of Lin Feng and smiled at him. At that moment, Lin Feng seemed to have the cultivation level of a low-level emperor.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered, rather confused. How come he only had the level of a low-level emperor after having been cleansed by the cosmic energies?

I studied the Indestructible Deva-Mara Scriptures, my skills are demon-type skills. However, I haven't been cleansed by demon cosmic energies yet. My demon cultivation hasn't been acknowledged by the gods yet, so that's maybe the reason why I seem to be a low-level emperor in the outside world, reasoned Lin Feng.

After all, cultivators had to practice cultivation according to the type of skills they studied. They had to make their skills and cultivation advance homogeneously and consistently. The three lives scriptures and the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures were mysterious and special scriptures. They helped a cultivator but they didn't make him level up directly.

If people wanted to make their skills level up, they had to make their cosmic energies level up. For example, his Indestructible Deva-Mara Scriptures were mainly bound to his demon cosmic

energies. The same applied to everything else. Heaven Scriptures were bound to Heaven cosmic energies. Sky Absorbing Scriptures were associated with Sky Absorbing cosmic energies.

As a medium-level emperor, Lin Feng's best cosmic energies were his demon cosmic energies. He had the strength of a medium-level emperor when using them, but they hadn't been acknowledged by the gods yet. However, Lin Feng's life and death cosmic energies had been acknowledged by the gods, so he had broken through.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd. These people were medium-level emperors. Lin Feng guessed that they belonged to other powerful groups.

"I've just broken through to the Huang Qi layer. You have all broken through to the Huang Qi layer a long time ago. I have nothing to be proud of," said Lin Feng, smiling calmly.

"Your Excellency, you are in a small part of Hell, it's a small world which has been built by strong cultivators," someone told him at that moment.

"I am aware," replied Lin Feng with a nod.

"Since you know, I can tell you something. I am from one of the Ten Yama Courts, Chu Jiang City. King Chu Jiang is one of the ten kings of the Ten Yama Courts. We are members of Chu Jiang City's army. If you wish, you can join us temporarily. With your talent, you could rise up in the hierarchy!" offered that person peacefully.

However, Lin Feng shook his head and smiled, "I'm used to living alone in the wild."

"Hehe, Your Excellency, maybe that you don't know that we're competing to gain control over this small world. Maybe this territory will end up under the control of Chu Jiang City soon. From that moment, we will rule over this territory. It's a great opportunity you have before you. You are very lucky, you shouldn't let it slip past you," the man smiled meaningfully.

However, Lin Feng just smiled calmly, “Thank you, Your Excellency, for your kindness.”

Then, Lin Feng stopped talking to them. They were surprised. He had refused such a great opportunity!?

If they gained control over this territory, it would be theirs, and everything in it would be theirs, human and natural resources, especially talented people. They wouldn’t be able to escape anymore.

Hell has some rules, but people are much more straightforward than in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, thought Lin Feng. The Ministers in Hell wanted to keep everything under their control.

“Your Excellency, you should cherish this opportunity. Otherwise, you will regret it!” said the man coldly. He already started threatening Lin Feng.

“I’ve never regretted anything,” replied Lin Feng easily.

His questioner was furious. “You don’t know how to differentiate good from bad. Even if you understand two sorts of cosmic energies, death and life, and even if you’re talented, so what? You’re just a weakling who has just broken through to the Huang Qi layer. Maybe we could have done great things together someday, but surprisingly you don’t want to. You want to die!”

He released death cosmic energies to surround Lin Feng. He wanted to kill Lin Feng as quickly as possible.

“Even if you understand death and life cosmic energies, you will still be killed by death cosmic energies!” spat his would-be killer. Lin Feng was talented, but he was still weak. He had proposed to help Lin Feng and surprisingly, he had refused. He had to die!

If Lin Feng had been an ordinary cultivator who had just broken through to the Huang Qi layer, he could have been killed by death cosmic energies. However, what he didn’t know was that Lin Feng understood life and death cosmic energies much better than he

did. Besides, from that moment on, Lin Feng's death and life cosmic energies were going to improve very quickly.

Lin Feng had already started walking on the path of life and death. When the death cosmic energies of the other crashed into Lin Feng's body, nothing happened. Lin Feng looked like an immortal man.

"Eh?" The man realized something was wrong. Lin Feng was just standing in his death cosmic energies and nothing had happened.

"Interesting," commented the man, smiling coldly. He then jumped towards Lin Feng and raised his hand. A Hell hand filled with death energies raced towards him. Maybe this fool would die to this attack?

Lin Feng flickered, and disappeared. The Hell hand crashed onto the mountaintop, which exploded.

"Wind cosmic energies?" Lin Feng's opponent was stupefied. He grunted and released another gigantic Hell hand which charged Lin Feng again.

These people are medium-level Hell emperors, their skills and speed are incredible. They are strong medium-level Hell emperors, thought Lin Feng. His punch appeared and filled the air, demolishing the Hell hand.

The emperors around stared at Lin Feng, stupefied. How come Lin Feng was so strong? He had used demon strength which had the power of a medium-level emperor. He had also used wind cosmic energies, wasn't it the first time that cosmic energies had cleansed his body?

They couldn't understand what was going on. They were all too astonished.

Dazzling silver wings appeared in Lin Feng's back, he started beating them. He also released wind cosmic energies through his wings as he suddenly disappeared again.

The medium-level Hell emperor stared at Lin Feng and was infuriated when he saw Lin Feng charge at him. A vortex of death strength appeared. It was as if millions of death hands had appeared.

“Die!” The medium-level Hell emperor hurled the vortex in Lin Feng’s direction.

“Life!” countered Lin Feng furiously. In a flash, life strength crashed onto the death hands, life and death energies intertwined and dispersed. Lin Feng punched out again.

The medium-level Hell emperor’s expression changed drastically. Death and life cosmic energies surrounded him. His death Qi was slowly turning into life Qi. He had the sensation he was going to collapse. Lin Feng could corrode his life with life cosmic energy!

Lin Feng couldn’t really win using death strength, that’s why using life strength was the best thing he could do.

A dragon roared as it appeared behind Lin Feng. It had nine heads and a ferocious appearance.

“Imprison!” said Lin Feng. His opponent turned into a vortex of death energy. Lin Feng didn’t give him any opportunity to react, and immediately attacked.

The nine dragon heads roared furiously, grabbing the man’s head with their teeth before they started absorbing his strength.

Chapter 1869: Powerful Life and Death

“Oh no!” The other emperors were astonished. Lin Feng could defeat a medium-level Hell emperor! And his nine-headed dragon was absorbing the man’s strength!

“Die!” the trapped man shouted furiously, and a pitch-black demon appeared. However, Lin Feng stretched out his hand and a destructive black lotus appeared.

Lin Feng threw the black lotus at his opponent, and it crashed against him. At the same time, Lin Feng moved back.

Destructive black fire strength exploded. The atmosphere suddenly looked like Purgatory. A horrible shriek spread in the air as the man turned grey, black, and was then reduced to ashes.

The men around were completely astonished. They had come to that place bearing goodwill, and now that guy had died. They realized that Lin Feng hadn’t just broken through to the Huang Qi layer, he had broken through to the Huang Qi layer a long time before. He was extremely strong.

“Who are you?” they asked Lin Feng icily.

“Five groups are fighting over this place, who could I be?” asked Lin Feng smiling coldly.

They glanced at one another and said, “We know everyone from the groups. Which group do you belong to?”

“Great Imperial Song City,” said Lin Feng calmly. He slowly turned around and moved to the peak of the mountain which had exploded.

He released sword intent and waved his hands. Suddenly, the top of the mountain was shorn flat. Lin Feng jumped onto the flat land and looked back at them. “I’m waiting for you here. You can come anytime.”

Their eyes glittered. They glanced at one another. This guy was enigmatic and unfathomable. They didn't know how strong he really was. Maybe Great Imperial Song City had some trump cards. They didn't want to risk their lives.

Very quickly, they retreated. Lin Feng was still seated there cross-legged. Three thousand great deployment spells appeared in his brain, and among them, one was a life and death deployment spell. He needed to use both death and life strength to cast that deployment spell.

Lin Feng started studying it using his Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. He could imitate spells better that way.

Lin Feng understood life and death strength extremely well. If he managed to cast the great life and death deployment spell, his attacks would be even more explosive.

A few hours later, black patterns appeared around Lin Feng, one of life, and the other of death.

The pattern landed on the ground. Lin Feng bombarded it with deployment marks. The marks stuck to the patterns, which seemed to be alive. After a short time, the whole mountain was surrounded by dazzling black and green marks.

"The birth of the ten thousand things of creation, filled with vitality!" whispered Lin Feng. Suddenly, the gigantic pattern disappeared from the mountain. Where there was life energy, trees started growing at visible speed. After a short time, life Qi emerged from them.

Many people sensed those energies and raised their heads. Everything was green on the mountain and contained incredible life strength. It was a spectacular and beautiful scenery in this fiery land.

——

In the distance, a group of strong cultivators moved in that

direction. These people were from one of the ten cities of Hell, Taishan City. They had heard that someone from Great Imperial Song City was there and that he was quite strong. Those people wanted to kill him.

During the last battle, they had ambushed Great Imperial Song City's cultivators. Only Wang Zhuo and another strong cultivator had managed to escape. And now here there was another cultivator. If they managed to kill these last few people, then Great Imperial Song City would have no hope anymore.

The group of strong cultivators from Taishan City was composed of a dozen medium-level Hell emperors. They were incredibly strong.

"Where is the guy?" asked one of them indifferently.

The one who had just left looked back at the mountain and was astonished. When he had left, Lin Feng had decapitated the mountain, and now it was full of trees and life strength.

"There!" said the man, pointing at the peak Lin Feng was on. "That guy understand life and death cosmic energies. He can kill death cultivators with life strength!"

"Let's go!" ordered the leader of the group.

They arrived quickly at the mountain. He landed onto the peak and walked up to Lin Feng. "This guy is a low-level emperor and he killed a medium-level Hell emperor?"

"Maybe he's using a technique to hide his cultivation level. He is a medium-level emperor already."

"Alright," the leader acknowledged. He looked at Lin Feng and said, "The leader of the medium-level Hell emperors of Great Imperial Song City is Wang Zhuo, who are you? You don't seem to be listening to him. You should join Taishan City's army. I will help you. You will become a strong member of the army and you will not die."

Lin Feng slowly opened his eyes. Even though those people were cruel and violent, they were also straightforward. Even though Lin Feng had killed one of their medium-level Hell emperors, they still wanted to recruit him.

“You are dead already,” Lin Feng smiled indifferently.

That person was startled, but he smiled coldly and said, “During the last battle, the only ones who managed to escape on the side of Great Imperial Song City were Wang Zhuo and another person. With you, that means three people. Besides, even if you’re strong, you can’t defeat all of us together. Do you think Wang Zhuo and his friend will come and save you? Dream on!”

Lin Feng smiled coldly. That person rose up into the air and his energies spread out. In the blink of an eye, all the green trees turned black and died, and then they disappeared. A black pattern appeared, containing an endless amount of death energy. Those people’s expressions changed drastically.

“Deployment spell!” They were shocked as they realized how much danger they were in.

“Let’s go!” shouted one of them. They rose into the air and started leaving.

“Die!” said Lin Feng. Instantly, the atmosphere became pitch-black and destructive death energies were everywhere.

The life and death deployment spell turned the world into a deadly realm of darkness. The cultivators continued flying away desperately, but death invaded their bodies and their eyes closed. Then they started falling down from the sky one after another.

It smelled like death.

When Lin Feng was still a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, he had used cosmic energies to cast deployment spells, and had managed to create shattering deployment spells that could easily kill low-level emperors. He could even pose a threat to medium-level

emperors. Now, Lin Feng understood life and death cosmic energies really well. In the blink of an eye, using the life and death deployment spell, he could either give birth to the ten thousand things of creation or destroy them.

The two energies were extremely complementary.

The destructive death energies disappeared. Lin Feng walked around slowly. He took all the precious items from the corpses.

Those people were strong cultivators from Taishan City, they were all heroes. Their treasures were probably incredible. Lin Feng couldn't give them up.

At that moment, in the distance, in a palace, someone's face was deathly pale. When coming to that place, his friends and he had exchanged threads of godly awareness in order not to lose one another. Now he realized that many of those people's threads had disappeared, which meant they were dead.

"Which group did that?!" He was furious. Did Great Imperial Song City have more strong cultivators? Had they been ambushed?

He couldn't imagine that one person had done that!

Chapter 1870: Wang Zhuo's Death

Very quickly, everybody learned about those people's deaths, and were astonished. They had all paid attention to what the others had been doing, they were wondering who had killed the strong cultivators from Taishan City.

Everybody started investigating. Who had killed those people?

—

Two people appeared in the mountains where Lin Feng was. One of them was Wang Zhuo, the other one was the other survivor who had managed to escape with him.

They were astonished when they saw what had happened.

“Lin Feng!” Wang Zhuo looked at him strangely. There were green trees everywhere and there was only one person here... Lin Feng!

“How come it's you?” Wang Zhuo asked as he landed on the mountain.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked at Wang Zhuo, “I'm here, do I need to have a reason to be here?”

Wang Zhuo was surprised. Lin Feng was alone there?

“Have you seen those who killed the strong cultivators from Taishan City?” Wang Zhuo asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng shook his head, “I haven't.” He couldn't have seen them, because he had killed them.

“Are you hiding here?” Wang Zhuo asked icily.

Lin Feng looked back at him coldly. “Mind your own business, will you?” Wang Zhuo had pissed him off those days. Because of his poor tactical skills, everyone from Great Imperial Song City had died. Luckily, Lin Feng had left straight from the beginning.

Yes, Lin Feng dared look at him coldly. Wang Zhuo didn't smile, he was furious.

"Lin Feng, you escaped, you abandoned us, the people from Great Imperial Song City!" accused Wang Zhuo, staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stood up. He was furious too, and said to Wang Zhuo, "You want to kill me?"

"How do you know?" shot back Wang Zhuo icily. He slowly walked over to Lin Feng and said, "I'm just picking up bodies. Minister Uptala won't say anything. Besides, he won't even know you died."

"The way you think is not bad," said Lin Feng. He looked at the other and said, "There's a witness though. Are you going to kill us both?"

"Don't worry about that. He's with me," said Wang Zhuo, releasing his Qi.

"Do you want to know who killed the people from Taishan City?" Lin Feng asked Wang Zhuo mockingly.

"You know?" asked Wang Zhuo, staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded.

"Who?" asked Wang Zhuo. He was surprised.

Lin Feng walked towards him and death marks appeared everywhere, then a deployment pattern appeared. Life Qi turned into death Qi. The atmosphere became dark.

Wang Zhuo's expression changed drastically. He saw the illusion and turned deathly pale. That was a powerful death strength!

He looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng said grimly, "It was me!"

Then, death energies started converging, and surrounded Wang Zhuo. Wang Zhuo stared at Lin Feng. His body turned black. "No..."

However, it was already too late. Death Qi surrounded him as

well as the other man. They both turned into corpses.

Lin Feng looked at them emotionlessly. In his hands, two black flames appeared. He threw the two fireballs at the corpses and burned them to ashes. He also took their weapons. Wang Zhuo had an extraordinary social status and had been strong, he had incredible treasures.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng raised his head and gazed into the distance. He saw someone, but that person seemed blind, as if he hadn't seen Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng sensed a cold presence.

Jian Mang, he's here too!, thought Lin Feng. When they had come to the small world, Lin Feng hadn't seen Jian Mang. But now he was there and it seemed that he had sensed that Wang Zhuo and the other man had been killed. Even though Jian Mang couldn't see much, with his godly awareness, he could still inspect the area.

"You want to kill me so that I don't say anything?" said Jian Mang calmly. Wang Zhuo had an incredible social status, and Lin Feng had killed him in one strike with his deployment spell. If people in Great Imperial Song City learned about this, Lin Feng would be doomed.

"Your deployment spells are powerful, I won't go in. If you come out of the deployment spell, I will kill you," said Jian Mang said slowly.

"And so?" said Lin Feng.

"Of course, he wasn't my friend. He died and it has nothing to do with me. I don't care. However, I still want to win the war for Great Imperial Song City." said Jian Mang. Lin Feng recalled his energies. Jian Mang didn't know Wang Zhuo and didn't care about him. They weren't friends. And Lin Feng and Jian Mang weren't enemies.

"You mean you want us to join hands?" asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed. Even though I’m quite strong, our enemies haven’t lost many people. I can’t kill them on my own. With my strength and your deployment spells, things would be different. Even if we are the last two ones, we have hope,” said Jian Mang straightforwardly. He wanted to win the war!

“What would that bring to us?” said Lin Feng.

“It would prove how strong I am,” said Jian Mang.

Lin Feng smiled and nodded, “Alright, we can cooperate. But I’m not going to look for them. They can come. If they don’t come, then we’ll wait until the last day.”

“I don’t mind,” agreed Jian Mang calmly.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. He began studying evolution energy, making his life and death energies evolve. He started moving his hands, and another pattern appeared indistinctly.

Lin Feng kept drawing life and death energies. He was casting another deployment spell.

—

However, what he didn’t know was that at that moment, in a luxurious building in Great Imperial Song City, someone was furious and their Qi was raging to the skies. That was Wang Zhuo’s father, Wang Xiao!

Wang Zhuo was talented, and relying on himself, he had won a hundred battles for Great Imperial Song City. He was extremely talented, had traveled a lot, and had many precious items. His future was supposed to be bright. However, he was dead now!

“Who killed my son!?” shouted Wang Xiao furiously. He had done his best to raise Wang Zhuo, his only son. His dream in life was to see his son surpass him. Now he was dead!

“Wang Zhen, Minister Kalasutra, Minister Uptala, you’re really

cruel!” shouted Wang Xiao furiously, before leaving his home in a rage.

Chapter 1871: Defeat

Wang Xiao started flying towards the small world Ling Feng was located in. He immediately broke the seal and entered.

People from the five influential groups guarded the entrance. When they saw Wang Xiao, they were stupefied. Someone said, “Master, we sealed the area because the battles have already started. You’re violating the rules so Great Imperial Song City is violating the rules.”

When he said that, the others looked at the guards of Great Imperial Song City.

“Minister Wang Xiao, indeed, those are the rules. During the battle, nobody can come here and disturb them,” said the strong cultivator from Great Imperial Song City while bowing respectfully.

“I just came to watch. I’m not going to get involved!” said Wang Xiao. He suddenly started flying again, ignoring everybody else. Nobody dared to stop him.

The other people’s eyes glittered. This man from Great Imperial Song City was extremely strong, but they weren’t convinced he wasn’t going to get involved. Otherwise, the strong cultivators of the other groups would join hands and attack him together.

Very quickly, Wang Xiao found a palace. That palace was the place Minister Kalasutra and the others were guarding. Minister Kalasutra sensed a powerful Qi approaching and rose up into the air. When he saw Wang Xiao, he was astonished and looked at him strangely. “Wang Xiao, what are you doing here?” he asked.

“My son came here with you to conquer this territory, and now he’s dead. You’re a Minister and you’re surprisingly asking me what I’m doing here?” replied Wang Xiao icily, staring at Minister Kalasutra. He sounded very angry.

“Wang Zhuo is dead?” Minister Kalasutra was astonished, he couldn’t believe it. He knew how strong Wang Zhuo was. He was extremely strong and very smart. He also had many precious treasures. Killing him wouldn’t be easy!

“You didn’t even know!?” shouted Wang Xiao furiously. Powerful lights glittered in his eyes.

When Minister Kalasutra saw Wang Xiao’s expression, he frowned and said, “Wang Xiao, I’m very sad and sorry for your loss. Wang Zhuo was a real genius. But war is war! We’re in a territory that we’re trying to conquer. Death is inevitable!”

“My son!” shouted Wang Xiao, bursting out in anger. His voice carried explosive energies that made the sky churn.

“Young men of Great Imperial Song City will die here. Nobody can be sure they won’t die! Your son, Wang Zhuo, came here to conquer the territory, who could guarantee he wasn’t going to die? He was just too weak! How can you blame anyone?” said Minister Kalasutra, getting angry now. He wasn’t polite anymore, and his tone of speech was ice-cold. Hell was a cruel place, nobody could guarantee anyone’s safety!

“If you wanted to be sure your son was never going to die, why did you make him practice cultivation?” pressed Minister Kalasutra icily. “Wang Xiao, you’re a Minister. You’re also in charge of wars to conquer territories! Now, leave! You cannot get involved here!”

“Kalasutra!” Wang Xiao glared at the Minister with murder in his eyes.

“Piss off! If you have anything to complain about, go to Great Emperor Song to report me!” shot back Minister Kalasutra. He wasn’t a weakling. He was strong and aggressive, the atmosphere around him darkened abruptly.

“Very good, Kalasutra!” said Wang Xiao icily. Then, he turned

around and left, saying over his shoulder, “When you come out, if you haven’t conquered this place, I will come and find you!”

Minister Kalasutra didn’t care about what Wang Xiao said. Even though Wang Xiao was a descendant of Great Emperor Song, there were rules. Great Emperor Song was one of the Ten Yama Courts’ kings. Many Ministers were under his orders. He couldn’t get angry because some of his family members had died. The cultivation world was about life and death, strength and weakness. Even the strongest cultivators in the world could die sometimes.

“Wang Zhuo is dead, surprisingly,” whispered Minister Kalasutra. He was surprised, too. Wang Zhuo was extremely strong and surprisingly, someone had still managed to kill him. No wonder Minister Wang Xiao was furious. Who had killed Wang Zhuo?

In the distance, a few people arrived. Among them, there were two beautiful women: Qing Qing and Qin Yao!

“Dad, who dared act that arrogantly?” Qin Yao asked Minister Kalasutra. She had easily heard the two extremely loud voices.

“Wang Xiao. Wang Zhuo has been killed. He came to ask for explanations,” said Minister Kalasutra dismissively. Qin Yao and Qing Qing were astonished. Wang Zhuo had been killed?!

“What’s wrong with you?” Minister Kalasutra asked the two girls.

“We lost the low-level Hell emperors’ battle. The enemies made an alliance with the local people. Among them there were a few terrifyingly strong medium-level Hell emperors. And it doesn’t count as a violation of the rules, because those people don’t belong to any kind of powerful group. If local people attacked us, they can say they did it willingly. Their own medium-level Hell emperors haven’t gotten involved, obviously,” said Qin Yao unhappily. Their opponents had clearly set the rules to suit themselves.

“Wang Zhuo has been killed too, so the medium-level Hell emperors’ war must be lost as well,” said Qing Qing, her eyes glittering. She felt sad too. Wang Zhuo had been really strong for a medium-level Hell emperor. He was one of their strongest assets, a great loss. They had definitely lost the war. She wondered how Lin Feng was doing.

“Indeed, it’s quite possible. The high-level Hell emperors lost first, so we may have really lost,” sighed Minister Kalasutra sadly. He had seen the high-level Hell emperors’ battle, they had been destroyed very quickly. Very few people remained alive.

“Our enemies were ready. Losing isn’t a surprise,” observed Qin Yao.

“Right, they all plotted against us and joined hands, Now, let’s just watch and stop fighting. We can wait for the end of the war. We can see if we can compete again at some point. But if not, we can give up,” said someone else. Qing Qing and Qin Yao both nodded, annoyed. It was a tragedy for Great Imperial Song City!

There were fewer and fewer people on all the battlefields. However, the battles were also more and more deadly.

However, all of that seemed to have nothing to do with Lin Feng. During those days, he walked in the mountains, he went to villages and cities. He saw many people, some of them lucky, some of them suffering. Some faced death, some lived. Lin Feng forgot about his own self, he led his life as an ordinary person and watched life go by.

A month later, Lin Feng looked like someone who had suffered a lot in life. His clothes were ragged. He looked worn down and quiet, like an ordinary person. He laid down in the grass, put a wisp of straw in his mouth and nibbled it. Time passed slowly as he looked up at the blue sky.

After understanding the path of life and death, Lin Feng understood that he couldn't just practice cultivation really hard all the time. He couldn't kill people unceasingly, either. Sometimes, it was important to relax and get back to nature. The world was beautiful, and that in itself was beneficial.

However, in the cultivation world, it was impossible to remain calm and serene all the time. At that moment, a powerful thread of Qi appeared in the sky and oppressed the whole region.

Lin Feng looked up at the energy. Some powerful lights had appeared in the sky, and a white bolt of lightning descended from the sky.

A strong wind started blowing as someone landed next to Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at him nonchalantly and said, "You're blind, but you can find people so easily."

Jian Mang kept finding him everywhere and easily.

"It's starting. Everybody is gathering. Let's go!" said Jian Mang. He was efficient and didn't waste time.

Chapter 1872: Two People

The forces gathered. The five Hell great emperors looked at the crowd from the sky.

The number of people of the five groups wasn't homogenous, though. For example, it seemed that there was almost nobody left from Great Imperial Song City and Taishan City.

Minister Uptala looked calm and serene even though there were very few people left from Great Imperial Song City. War was about death, too. Battles to conquer territories could only be cruel. The strongest ones survived, the weakest ones died. That was their destiny and he couldn't do anything about it.

“Who joined hands to kill my people?” demanded the Hell great emperor of Taishan City. They had already lost ! He wanted to know who had killed their people!

“If it was you, just say it!” shouted a subordinate of the the Taishan Hell great emperor.

“We didn't do anything!” replied the strong cultivator of Chu Jiang City indifferently. The others remained silent. The strong cultivator of Taishan City frowned. How strange! How could his warriors have disappeared just like that?

“Many strong cultivators came here. Chu Jiang City lost the least amount of people. They've won,” said the high-level Hell emperor of Qinguang City. They had seemingly won the battle of the high-level Hell emperors.

“I agree,” said the Hell great emperor of Taishan City indifferently. They completely ignored Great Imperial Song City, who had nobody left anymore. Then, they looked at the Hell great emperor of Pingdeng City.

“I agree too,” said the Hell great emperor of Pingdeng City.

The strong cultivator of Chu Jiang City smiled, “So we won!

Great!”

However, at that moment, two people arrived in a flash of light. The crowd turned around and saw a blind man and a low-level emperor.

“Great Imperial Song City refuses to surrender!” said the blind man. The crowd was astonished. These two people?

Minister Uptala looked at Jian Mang and Lin Feng strangely. Some mysterious things happened sometimes. Jian Mang and Lin Feng had both won a hundred victories at the same time in the city, they had also defeated nine other champions, and now they were here together. They were the last survivors of Great Imperial Song City!

“Lin Feng, where are the others?” asked Minister Uptala to Lin Feng.

“All the other groups had already plotted together against us, so when we arrived, they were attacked. However, I decided to go away before that, so I didn’t see them. Then, I bumped into Jian Mang. I don’t know about the others,” said Lin Feng calmly. Minister Uptala nodded. Wars were cruel. Great Imperial Song City had lost many people!

“Minister Uptala, does Great Imperial Song City accept the result or not?” asked the strong cultivator of Chu Jiang City smiling coldly.

Minister Uptala didn’t reply. He looked at Lin Feng and Jian Mang. He knew they were incredible warriors. However, Chu Jiang City still had so many people and Lin Feng had just become a medium-level Hell emperor. Only Jian Mang could easily defeat other medium-level Hell emperors.

“We don’t!” stated Jian Mang.

“If you don’t, then you have to battle to the death. Are you sure?” asked the Hell great emperor of Chu Jiang City smiling coldly.

They still had sixteen medium-level Hell emperors, two people couldn't do anything against them, they were just acting recklessly!

Minister Uptala said, "Jian Mang, Lin Feng, are you sure?"

"Minister, we want to fight!" said Lin Feng, nodding at Minister Uptala.

When he saw how proud and self-confident they looked, he was surprised but smiled, "Alright, since you want to fight, I support you two. Great Imperial Song City doesn't accept the result and wants to continue battling!"

"How brave!" said the Hell great emperor of Chu Jiang City smiling coldly. He waved his hands and said, "Everybody, battle to death."

The members of the other groups moved back. Minister Uptala looked at Lin Feng and nodded. Apart from the strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City and Lin Feng and Jian Mang, nobody was left. Everybody else had moved back and wanted to watch the battle.

"You cast deployment spells, I kill," said Jian Mang to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded his agreement. He landed on the ground and marks started appearing everywhere. Lin Feng was carved deployment marks at incredible speed.

"Deployment spells?" Minister Uptala was astonished. Lin Feng understood deployment spells?

Lin Feng released wind cosmic energies around his body to move even faster. His deployment marks were dazzling. The strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City were shocked.

Those two dared fight, they had a reason: deployment spells!

"Kill him first and prevent him from casting a deployment spell!" ordered someone icily. Deployment spells could be terrifying!

"Use a death spell and kill him instantly!" shouted someone icily,

releasing death cosmic energies which surrounded Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng merely released life cosmic energies to counter them.

Life cosmic energies? Life cosmic energies can oppress death energy!, thought the strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City, who had all started releasing death cosmic energies at the same time. Their death cosmic energies were truly powerful, they could have killed a strong cultivator easily, but when those energies crashed onto Lin Feng's body, they turned into life cosmic energy. Green lights of vitality started appearing around Lin Feng!

How is that possible?, thought the amazed Chi Jian combatants. They didn't understand what was going on. Lin Feng didn't stop moving and carving out dazzling marks. Demon and earth cosmic energies rose up into the air. A destructive strength oppressed the whole battlefield.

A hellish spear streaked across the sky towards Lin Feng, carrying pure death intent. The air darkened as it sped forwards.

Lin Feng smiled icily, as his Tian Ji Sword spat out all sorts of cosmic energies and collided with the spear, shattering it instantly.

Dozens and dozens of punches appeared in the air, and death strength rose to the skies. Their goal was simple: destroy Lin Feng and Jian Mang with an endless amount of death strength!

"The Circle of Life!" said Lin Feng. His life cosmic energy turned into a vortex and absorbed everything around, the incoming death strength kept turning into life strength. Lin Feng opened his mouth and swallowed all the energy before all their eyes.

Jian Mang didn't waste time, either. He moved like a lightning sword, his sword energies slashing at someone's eyes.

Jian Mang was punched by an opponent and coughed up blood and was forced backwards. Jian Mang's sword attacks were strange, they didn't look powerful but they were deadly.

“Kill the one who’s carving the deployment marks!” shouted a cultivator furiously. Many people attacked at the same time, using all sorts of other cosmic energies to surround Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stepped away, and dazzling deployment marks started flashing and rising to the skies, colliding with all the energies. Their interplay blotted out the sky. Lin Feng’s life energies had turned into a powerful vortex, forming a giant life and death pattern.

His life and death energies have become one. His life energies heal him and he uses his death energies to attack!, thought Minister Uptala, pleasantly astonished. Lin Feng understood life and death energies so well already. At the same time, he could even cast deployment spells! Minister Uptala was getting more and more impressed every day!

The gigantic pattern dashed to the skies, and suddenly many people fell down from the air.

Jian Mang continued moving around at lightning speed. His sword lights were dazzling. Horrible shrieks kept sounding out and many people’s eyes started bleeding.

“What a fast sword, his sword moves like lightning!” The crowd was shaken. These two people were terrifying. Who knew there were such cultivators in Great Imperial Song City!

Chapter 1873: You're The Only Real Loser!

Minister Uptala was shocked and amazed by Lin Feng and Jian Mang's strength. He murmured to himself, "It's not a strange kind of cosmic energy, it's light cosmic energy!"

There was an infinite number of cosmic energies, but the most common ones weren't numerous, and were usually related to the five elements. However, some people also used powerful and strange cosmic energies, as was usually the case of some people from animal clans or people who had king body types. They could use strange and mysterious cosmic energies because they had inherited them.

Some cosmic energies were related to the elements. For example, a Golden Crow's fire energy was an ameliorated version of sun energy.

Some very talented people understood decay cosmic energy, and when reaching enlightenment, those people could control time.

Some incredible people could also control light cosmic energy. Light cosmic energy granted a cultivator speed and could also make people go blind. Coupled with sword techniques, their attacks could be terrifyingly powerful.

He didn't even use his full strength on the battle stage, otherwise he would have been able to defeat six people at the same time too!, thought Minister Uptala, watching Jian Mang.

Life, death, light, and sword cosmic energies had filled the air, and coupled with the shattering deployment spell, half of the strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City had already been killed. When all the energies dispersed, the crowd noticed that a dozen people had died, and three had gone blind. Two more were severely injured, one was lightly injured, and two were unharmed.

When the crowd saw all this, they were astonished. What a

tragedy for the strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City! The strong cultivator of Chu Jiang City wanted to say something, but in the end he didn't. He was speechless.

Jian Mang continued moving. His attacks still looked simple, but they were deadly. The three blinded people died at the same time, his sword lights cutting through their souls and flesh.

The strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City were astonished, and had no time to react. Jian Mang's attacks were terrifying, they just realized how dangerous he was. However, the battle wasn't over yet.

"Imprison!" Lin Feng flashed away, waved his hands, and one of the injured cultivators from Chu Jiang City was caged. The Tian Ji Sword glittered, streaked across the sky towards him, piercing through his body and killing him.

"Wake up!" shouted the Hell great emperor of Chu Jiang City furiously. The atmosphere shook. Lin Feng and Jian Mang even trembled.

A Lotus sword streaked across the sky again and three more people from Chu Jiang City died. However, this time, they were killed by Minister Uptala!

"What are you doing?" shouted the Hell great emperor from Chu Jiang City furiously.

"You intervened, so I can intervene, too," replied Minister Uptala calmly. Then, he waved his hand and strength surrounded a strong cultivator from Chu Jiang City again. That person died instantly.

The crowd looked at the Hell great emperor from Chu Jiang City. He had indeed just violated the rules indeed by getting involved.

The medium-level Hell emperors of Chu Jiang City were being slaughtered. Lin Feng, Jian Mang, and Minister Uptala killed them all. Those people were all heroes from Chu Jiang City, and now they had all died. What a tragedy!

“Taishan City, Taiguang, Pingdeng City, they have all surrendered. Now, Chu Jiang City decided to fight against Great Imperial Song City, and Great Imperial Song City has won this battle. I don’t think anyone has anything to say about this, right?” asked Minister Uptala. The Hell great emperors of Taishan City and the other cities nodded. Great Imperial Song City had two incredible cultivators, they couldn’t say anything against them. They didn’t care if all those strong cultivators from Chu Jiang City had died, it had nothing to do with them. They had just watched the battle happily. The Chu Jian Hell great emperor was probably furious at the people from Great Imperial Song City. It was even more amusing that way!

“I’m sure we’ll meet again!” said the Hell great emperor of Chu Jiang City, glaring at Minister Uptala, Lin Feng, and Jian Mang icily. He turned around and left. He didn’t need to stay there. They’d had hopes for this battlefield, they had already lost the two others. Now, they had nothing.

The cultivators of Taishan City left, too. They had also lost the three battles.

“Let’s go!” said Minister Uptala quietly. A gigantic Blue Uptala Lotus appeared. Lin Feng and Jian Mang jumped aboard it, and they all left.

Now, the great emperors went to gather where the high-level emperors were fighting. The three groups gathered there.

Wang Zhen and Minister Kalasutra looked at Minister Uptala. Wang Zhen said, “I thought we’d lost, but why did you come back with two people?”

Minister Kalasutra stared at Jian Mang and Lin Feng. He only knew that Wang Zhuo had died, so he had thought they’d lost that battle. However, Minister Uptala had now told him they had won that battle using telepathy.

“Everybody else died fighting,” said Minister Uptala. Wang Zhen

was stunned, they had all died during the fighting?

“Wang Zhuo is dead too?” Wang Zhen was shocked and angry, Wang Zhuo and he were related by blood. They were Great Emperor Song’s descendants! How could he explain this to Wang Xiao?

“Everybody died, including Wang Zhuo, then those two survivors won?” asked Wang Zhen. He couldn’t believe it. Lin Feng had survived, Wang Zhuo had died, had Minister Uptala protected Lin Feng?

“He died a long time ago,” said Minister Kalasutra. “Wang Xiao even came inside to ask what had happened. I made him go back. It’s a war, not a game. Wang Zhuo died, that’s part of war.”

“Wang Xiao came here earlier?” Wang Zhen was startled, and pulled a long face. He looked at Minister Kalasutra. “Minister, you should have told me earlier.”

Wang Zhuo had died! Even if they conquered the territory, Wang Xiao wouldn’t forgive him!

Minister Kalasutra frowned. What did Wang Zhen think? That Great Emperor Song’s descendants were superior to them, or what? They were Ministers, they were stronger than Wang Zhen, how could they report to him?

“And since Wang Zhuo died, how did you win the medium-level Hell emperors’ battle?” asked Wang Zhen.

“I don’t know how Wang Zhuo died. However, at the end of the three months, Lin Feng and Jian Mang decided to fight alone and defeated all the strong cultivators of Chu Jiang City. They won!” Minister Uptala informed them. Wang Zhen was astonished and stared at Lin Feng and Jian Mang.

“You defeated all the cultivators of Chu Jiang City?” Wang Zhen couldn’t believe his eyes and asked, “Minister Uptala, you managed the battle there, and surprisingly you don’t know how

Wang Zhuo died?”

Wang Zhen glanced at Lin Feng and asked, “How did Wang Zhuo die?”

“Wang Zhuo did things his own way and died, why do you need to ask us, Master?” Lin Feng asked Wang Zhen.

“Wang Zhuo’s death is a big problem, I need to understand!” said Wang Zhen. Wang Xiao was really strong, and Wang Zhuo was Wang Xiao’s only son! They were supposed to help him conquer that territory, they needed to have a clear explanation. Wang Xiao had a bad temper, he would remember them!

“We risked our lives and now you just remember Wang Zhuo’s death? Don’t you know that Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra also lost many people?” Lin Feng asked indifferently. Wang Zhen looked furious. Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra thought the same way, but Lin Feng had dared say it out loud. Wang Zhen remained silent with difficulty.

“Your Excellencies, if you agree, you can join Qinguang City’s army!” said the nearby Hell great emperor from Qinguang City to Lin Feng and Jian Mang. They had done so much for Great Imperial Song City, and now Great Imperial Song City’s rulers seemed ungrateful. They were more than willing to accept such strong cultivators!

“Wang Zhen doesn’t represent Great Imperial Song City. He just expresses his own opinion,” said Minister Uptala at that moment. Wang Zhen was afraid of Wang Xiao, that was why he was acting this way.

“Kalasutra, I’m not participating anymore, and you?” asked Minister Uptala.

Kalasutra turned around and waved dismissively, “We’re retreating as well.”

Minister Uptala nodded and looked at Lin Feng and Jian Mang,

“Let’s go, then.”

A gigantic lotus reappeared, the few remaining people jumped onto it. Qing Qing, Lin Feng, and the others jumped onto the lotus and left without even glancing at Wang Zhen.

Wang Zhen pulled a long face. Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra had come to help, and without them, he couldn’t do anything anymore.

He looked at the cultivators from Qinguang City and Pingdeng City, they looked back at him mockingly. His cheeks felt like they were burning. Surprisingly, everybody had let him down, and now he was the real loser!

Chapter 1874: Uptala Army

Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra went back to the city. Many people knew about the war already. Not long before, Wang Zhuo had died in battle, Wang Xiao had gone insane and destroyed many buildings.

“Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra have suffered heavy casualties, things don’t look good for them...” said some people when they saw the two Ministers come back. Wang Zhen had come back, too. He was furious. When the crowd saw how furious Wang Zhen looked, they understood that the war hadn’t gone well at all.

Minister Kalasutra and Minister Uptala had gone to war for Wang Zhen, they were supposed to help him take over that territory. Wang Zhen would have become a Minister that way. However, he had lost!

—

After Wang Zhen came back, he immediately headed to the private district since he was a descendant of Great Emperor Song. Even people with privileges couldn’t go there freely.

Wang Zhen looked glum. He went to a certain palace and waited outside, not daring to enter.

After a short time, an old man appeared. His hair was white and he had wrinkles everywhere, but still managed to look fearsome. He glanced at Wang Zhen indifferently.

“You lost?” said the old man gloomily. Wang Zhen lowered his head, “Monsignor, Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra are way too arrogant. They let Wang Zhuo die and in the end, we had an opportunity to conquer that place, but they didn’t want to let me control it, so they abandoned me. They don’t care about us Great Emperor Song descendants.”

“In order to be a Minister in Hell, you need to be a man of virtue

and honor. The Ministers, and especially Great Emperor Uptala, would never try to do anything to harm you. Minister Uptala even controls the strength of the ten thousand things of creation. He doesn't try to harm people on purpose. They would have never harmed Wang Zhuo, either. If you failed, it means you're not suitable to become a Minister. From now on, don't come here anymore," said the man calmly.

Wang Zhen started trembling violently, and his face turned deathly pale. He was in the central part of Great Imperial Song City, this place was the symbol of the city. From now on, he couldn't go there anymore, he perfectly understood what that meant!

"Monsignor!" protested Wang Zhen, trembling in fear.

"Go now," said the man, making a shooing motion nonchalantly. He turned around and headed back into the palace. Wang Zhen's heart was pounding violently. That old man was even more powerful than what the legends said about him.

He was the only one who could see Great Emperor Song. Seeing Great Emperor Song was extremely difficult even for Ministers!

Great Emperor Song was one of the Ten Yama Courts' kings, one of the ten great leaders of Hell. Even his descendants didn't know how strong he really was.

Wang Zhen left and far away, he sensed a cold energy surround him. He turned around and saw Wang Xiao.

"Brother Wang Xiao," Wang Zhen greeted him politely.

"Don't call me that," said Wang Xiao icily. "I'm asking you, who killed my son Wang Zhuo?"

Wang Zhen's expression changed drastically. How unlucky! What a tragedy, today was so horrible. He had to give Wang Xiao an explanation, but he didn't know how Wang Zhuo had died.

"Brother Wang Xiao, after we entered that territory, I asked

Minister Uptala to take care of Wang Zhuo. However, later, they told me that he had been killed. I was furious at Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra. Then, they abandoned me and refused to continue helping me conquer the area, I was forced to leave the small world and came back alone,” said Wang Zhen coldly. He was trying to blame everyone else for all those problems.

“What you mean is that you don’t know how my son died?” asked Wang Xiao. An ice-cold Qi surrounded Wang Zhen.

“The battlefields were divided into three, one for low-level Hell emperors, one for medium-level Hell emperors and one for high-level Hell emperors. Wang Zhuo followed Minister Uptala to the medium-level Hell emperors’ battlefield. Only medium-level Hell emperors could fight, so nothing should have happened to Wang Zhuo! I don’t know what Minister Uptala did. You can go and check, Brother Wang Xiao.”

“A bunch of nonsense!” shouted Wang Xiao furiously, “My son had my talisman! He could have made it explode to protect his life. Unless a Hell great emperor attacked him, he couldn’t have died. How could he die on the medium-level Hell emperors’ battlefield?”

“I also think it’s strange,” Wang Zhen agreed. He had already thought of that. If Wang Zhuo had faced danger, he would have broken the talisman or used a Great Imperial Weapon. However, he had been killed nonetheless.

“There’s another possibility.” said Wang Zhen suddenly as if he had thought of something.

“What possibility?” asked Wang Xiao.

“One of your people could have assassinated him!” proposed Wang Zhen icily. “Indeed, Minister Uptala came back alone with Lin Feng and Jian Mang. One of them is blind, the other one has just become a medium-level Hell emperor. How could they be strong enough to kill all those medium-level Hell emperors? How come they cooperated? Besides, Minister Uptala and Lin Feng are

quite close, he takes care of Lin Feng. Lin Feng even went back to Minister Uptala's headquarters."

Wang Xiao frowned. His son had died, and the matter was very strange, so anything was possible.

"Lin Feng and Jian Mang were the only survivors. Brother Wang Xiao, you have an inspection technique, if you inspect their memories, you'll find out the truth," said Wang Zhen.

Wang Xiao seemed pensive. He couldn't do anything against Minister Uptala and Minister Kalasutra. Regarding Lin Feng and Jian Mang, he just needed an opportunity to attack them. After all, they were Minister Uptala's guests. He couldn't attack them openly.

However, his son Wang Zhuo had died. He had to try anything he could!

——

Lin Feng didn't know what Wang Xiao and Wang Zhen were talking about. He was in Minister Uptala's headquarters.

"Minister Uptala, we offended Wang Zhen. He's one of Great Emperor Song's descendants. Won't they cause trouble?" asked Lin Feng to Minister Uptala.

"We're in Hell. There are Ten Yama Courts. If we hold grudges against one another, then Great Imperial Song City will disappear. Lin Feng, you have to understand that strength is all that matters here," said Minister Uptala. Great Imperial Song City was one of the ten cities of Hell. Strength was all that mattered. Anyone who was strong enough was respected. Lin Feng was such a person.

"Minister, do kings inherit their position of Ten Yama Courts' king?" asked Lin Feng.

Minister Uptala looked at Lin Feng, smiled and shook his head, "Of course not. The position of Ten Yama Courts' king is obtained thanks to strength. If someone becomes a peerless cultivator and

defeats Great Emperor Song, then they'll replace him. But nobody has tried to attack Great Emperor Song in thousands of years."

Lin Feng was stupefied. Great Emperor Song had been one of the Ten Yama Courts' kings for thousands of years? How strong!

"Of course, even though Wang Zhen doesn't attack strong people, maybe he will try and attack you. After all, you offended him too. You have to be careful," warned Minister Uptala. Lin Feng nodded, he knew that.

"Let's go, Lin Feng. I'm going to show you around the Uptala district!" said Minister Uptala, smiling at Lin Feng. He took Lin Feng to several different buildings. After a short time, they arrived in front of a lake, and went into the water. There was a door there, it looked like an illusion. They crossed it and ended up in a courtyard. There was a pattern under Lin Feng's feet.

Teleportation Deployment Spell!, thought Lin Feng looking at the marks of the pattern. The marks were Holy marks. After Minister Uptala conquered a territory, he had created a Teleportation Deployment Spell to go there easily.

"Let's go!" Minister Uptala and Lin Feng rose up into the air. After a short time, they appeared above a beautiful watery world. There were many waterfalls and rivers. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw people wearing Uptala armor. They were seated cross-legged and practicing cultivation. Some of them fought against one another to practice. Some others talked about cultivation. Those people were also extremely strong.

"Those people are the members of the Uptala army. They work together a lot. They can fight against one another to compare themselves, and they can talk about cultivation. I also make them travel sometimes. Of course, if they want to stay alone, they can too. They help me control this part of Hell. People who are talented can join my army," Minister Uptala explained to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded. This army controlled a part of Hell!

Chapter 1875: Challenge of the Celestial Country

“Minister!” greeted his army, bowing before Minister Uptala.

“Don’t pay attention to me,” said Minister Uptala calmly. The crowd then continued with what they were doing.

“Minister, I can sense Blue Uptala Lotus intent here, why?” Lin Feng asked him.

Minister Uptala smiled, “Rise higher up in the air and observe the region, you’ll understand.”

Lin Feng was surprised. He rose up into the air, piercing through some clouds, and looked down. That gigantic ice and watery world had the shape of a lotus. The mountains were gigantic petals!

“Blue Uptala Lotus!” Lin Feng was stunned.

He dropped back down to Minister Uptala. Minister Uptala smiled and said, “It was a flatland, so my father planted some Blue Uptala Lotus seeds here. It turned into a water and ice world. Many strong cultivators here practice Hellish ice cultivation, as my father did. I practice fire cultivation. So now many people here control fire, too.

“Everybody can practice what they want, everybody is the master of their own destiny. Everybody chooses different paths. You have already chosen the path of life and death. You understand life and death better than most people. Even though I can’t influence people’s destinies, at least, I can help them along,” Minister Uptala said slowly.

Lin Feng nodded. Cultivators understood cosmic energies. Cosmic energies influenced a cultivator’s life and what they could understand or study later. But nothing was fixed. Minister Uptala was telling Lin Feng: My path of the Uptala is my own path. I can help you, but I can’t decide anything for you!

Lin Feng had been helped a great deal by Minister Uptala, without him he wouldn't have been cleansed by life-death cosmic energy.

“Minister, so when I observe the Blue Uptala Lotus, I can't borrow your ideas to make them turn into my own path?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course you can, but you just use it, you don't apply everything. And anyway, powerful families emerge like that: their ancestors keep passing things on to their descendants, and they become stronger and stronger if they do the right things,” explained Minister Uptala. Lin Feng nodded. That was the role of a teacher.

“Besides, there's a strange rock in this world, called the Mark of the Path. It allows cultivators to understand the strength of enlightenment,” Minister Uptala mentioned. Lin Feng had already been cleansed by the life-death dual energy. Even many great emperors weren't capable of achieving that!

It wasn't a criterion to become a great emperor at all. However, it was an advantage if a great emperor had undergone the process.

“Mark of the Path?” It was the first time Lin Feng heard about that strange thing.

“Indeed, the Mark of the Path! There are many sorts of Marks of the Path. The simplest ones are used by cultivators to mark their path inside. There are also Marks of the Path used by cultivators before dying. They don't die completely, they put their life in the stone and then it turns into their life path. Then, they can be used by their descendants. It's a very precious treasure and they are very rarely used. Some strong cultivators create such stones, but they have to know they're going to die to do that. The power of such a stone depends on the cultivator's comprehensive abilities during his life.

“There's another strange stone, the Stone of Fertility of the Earth

and Sky. They are very precious. Different Marks of the Path have different values,” said Minister Uptala slowly. Lin Feng calmly listened. His knowledge of cultivation was becoming deeper and deeper. There were all sorts of strength, matching the different sorts of Marks of the Path, those stones could help cultivators practice!

“Yue Xin has chosen the path of mercilessness. She started by practicing skills, and then she really started walking on the path of mercilessness?” Lin Feng mused to himself. He suddenly realized how mysterious the three lives scriptures were. With the three lives scriptures, a cultivator could choose different paths! How powerful!

With one body, there were many limits, and a cultivator could choose only one path to achieve enlightenment. With several bodies, it was easier to achieve enlightenment!

At that moment, someone rose up into the air and greeted Minister Uptala, “Minister!”

“Shichuan, are you done selecting people?” Minister Uptala asked Shichuan.

“More than fifty people are willing!” Shichuan informed Minister Uptala.

Minister Uptala looked surprised and smiled, “So many people!”

“Yes, they are all heroes. I wonder how many people can survive?” agreed Shichuan. Lin Feng was startled. Another dangerous event was going to happen?

“That’s their decision. They can only rely on their own self,” said Minister Uptala calmly, “Just tell them to be careful. Even if they obtain nothing, the most important thing is to survive, otherwise being a cultivator is useless.”

“I understand!” nodded Shichuan.

When Qing Qing heard Minister Uptala and Shichuan’s

conversation, her beautiful eyes gleamed. Shichuan looked at her and smiled, “Qing Qing, you’re getting more and more beautiful. Are you not looking for a man?”

“Shichuan, you’re making fun of me. Men only think about cultivation, why say I’m beautiful each time you talk about me? Maybe someday I’ll go to the Celestial Country too!” smiled Qing Qing. She knew Shichuan quite well, he was her father’s assistant, a Vice Minister. Every Minister in Hell had a Vice Minister.

“Qing Qing, I would be happy if you did. I don’t think your father wants you to leave though!” grinned Shichuan. In the cultivation world, women weren’t as gifted as men, that was a fact. They didn’t despise women, but women weren’t as domineering on the path of cultivation. They weren’t as cruel as men, either. Of course, many women were also stronger than many men. There were just far more strong men than strong women.

“If she’s strong enough, she can go if she wishes,” Minister Uptala agreed.

“Minister, who’s this young man? I’ve never seen him before,” asked Shichuan, looking at Lin Feng. Even though Minister Uptala was humble and amiable, not many people could stand next to Minister Uptala like that. Minister Uptala probably liked this young man a great deal.

“I forgot to introduce you. This is Lin Feng. He’s not a low-level Hell emperor, but he might be able to defeat high-level Hell emperors!” smiled Minister Uptala.

Shichuan was surprised and asked, “He’s not hiding his cultivation level?”

“Three months ago, he was on the battle stage outside of the city, on the battle stage of low-level Hell emperors. He attained a hundred non-stop victories, and then he defeated nine other champions, he even defeated six of them at the same time. And while he was fighting, he became a medium-level Hell emperor!”

explained Minister Uptala, smiling as he recounted the past.

“He’s barely been a medium-level Hell emperor and can already defeat high-level Hell emperors?” said Shichuan. He couldn’t believe it. How incredible!

“I took them to conquer a territory. The other cultivator who won a hundred battles was a medium-level Hell emperor. Together, they defeated sixteen medium-level Hell emperors from Chu Jiang City.”

Shichuan was amazed. Two people had defeated sixteen medium-level Hell emperors from Chu Jiang?

“And where is the other one?”

“He’s alone having a walk.”

“Alright,” said Shichuan with a nod. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “Little friend, when you become a high-level Hell emperor, I’ll take you to the Celestial Country!”

“I was thinking the same. There are cultivators of different levels in the Celestial Country. There are many low-level Hell emperors and medium-level Hell emperors there, but it’s still too dangerous for people who aren’t high-level Hell emperors. When Lin Feng becomes a high-level Hell emperor, take him there. He’ll benefit from it!” agreed Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng asked, “Minister, what is the Celestial Country?”

“The Celestial Country is a world created for geniuses. There are many extremely strong and heroic warriors there who constantly fight to become stronger. When people go there, they call it the ‘Challenge of the Celestial Country’,” explained Minister Uptala explained in simple words. Lin Feng’s eyes lit up.

Chapter 1876: Endless Strong Cultivators

“What is the criterion to take the Challenge of the Celestial Country?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious, as he hadn’t known there was such a place in Hell.

“There’s no criterion. If you have broken through to the Huang Qi layer, you can go. However, it is an independent place cut off from the world. You cannot use treasures from outside there. You can’t use other people’s godly awareness, either. That place is filled with a strange strength. It’s called the Challenge of the Celestial Country because people go there to practice and challenge themselves,” Shichuan told him.

Lin Feng was startled. He looked at Shichuan and asked, “Master, is it possible to go participate in the Challenge of the Celestial Country anytime?”

“The passage is opened once a year. When you go there, you have to stay for a year. It’s very dangerous. You can’t use ancestors’ godly awareness there. Even if people kill you there, nobody will know about it,” Shichuan explained to Lin Feng politely.

Lin Feng nodded, he understood. No matter who went there, everybody was the same in there. A person’s social status didn’t matter there, nobody could protect them. It was probably a chaotic world, however, people called it a Celestial Country...?

“When will the next opening happen?” asked Lin Feng.

Shichuan answered, “Soon. That’s why I’m selecting people in the Uptala army among those who are willing to go.”

“Once every year.” Lin Feng’s eyes shone, he looked at Minister Uptala and said, “Minister, I want to participate in the Challenge of the Celestial Country this time.”

Minister Uptala was surprised and looked at Lin Feng, “The Challenge of the Celestial Country is extremely hard. You have to

stay there for one year once you're there. There are many powerful people there. Some of them are already at the top of the Huang Qi layer! Wait until you're a high-level Hell emperor, and then you can go. If you don't want to wait that long, you still need to stabilize your cultivation. After all, you'll have the opportunity every year."

"Danger is part of a cultivator's life. When facing danger, you can surpass others! I have already made my decision, I am going to participate in the Challenge of the Celestial Country!" swore Lin Feng insistently. He didn't have much time. He needed to become stronger and then he needed to find the exit to go back to the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If he participated in the Challenge of the Celestial Country this year, he'd become much stronger!

Minister Uptala remained silent for a few seconds and finally nodded. "Since you have already made your decision, I won't prevent you from going. But you have to remember, stay safe, there aren't only strong cultivators from Hell there."

"Eh?" Lin Feng was astonished and stared at Minister Uptala. "Minister, are you saying that people from other worlds participate in the Challenge of the Celestial Country?"

"Indeed. You need to know about that. You'll understand when you go there," Minister Uptala said mysteriously. However, Lin Feng was astonished, his heart was pounding violently. People from other worlds participated in the Challenge of the Celestial Country?

Maybe he would find a solution to go back to the Nine Clouds Continent from there!

For Lin Feng, that was an extremely important piece of information! After all, he wouldn't be able to meet any of the Ten Yama Courts' kings within a short period of time. So for the time being, finding another way to go back was the best thing to do.

"Lin Feng, since you decided to participate in the Challenge of

the Celestial Country, stay here and practice cultivation really hard these days. When the right time comes, Shichuan will come and take you there,” said Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng nodded and replied, “Alright, thank you, Minister!”

After that, Lin Feng practiced cultivation calmly. He also had a few walks in the different Uptala territories. He went to the library and read books. Lin Feng didn’t study them really hard, but he memorized some things. Reading books was always beneficial, anyway.

Lin Feng came out of the library and sensed that someone was looking at him. Someone’s eyes were glittering, but that person continued walking.

Lin Feng didn’t say anything, as if nothing had happened. It wasn’t the first time someone had looked at him. Lin Feng knew that someone was spying on him, he just didn’t know who it was exactly. However, he knew that since Wang Zhuo was dead, Wang Zhen didn’t like him, and he had said that Wang Zhuo’s father, Wang Xiao, wouldn’t accept his son’s death.

But Wang Xiao and Wang Zhen couldn’t do anything against Lin Feng in Uptala. After all, he had been invited by Minister Uptala to come there, and he had also relied on his own self to obtain privileges. If something happened to him in the city, then, it could have serious consequences.

They couldn’t do anything against Lin Feng in the city.

Some time passed. Lin Feng went to an ice mountain in the Uptala world. He looked around as life and death lights glittered while he controlled the air around him. It was an incredible display.

At that moment, a silhouette came up next to Lin Feng and

looked at Lin Feng strangely, “This young man controls life and death strength, no wonder that the Minister thinks highly of him. He’s very talented.”

Lin Feng opened his eyes and smiled. “Master Shichuan, is the Challenge of the Celestial Country going to start?”

“Indeed. Let’s go,” nodded Shichuan. Lin Feng stood up and rose up into the air, following Shichuan. After a short time, they landed on another mountain range. There were many other strong cultivators present, and they all looked extraordinary.

The Challenge of the Celestial Country was extremely difficult. As Minister Uptala had said, heroes participated in the Challenge of the Celestial Country. Ordinary people couldn’t go there, they’d die within a few seconds if they did. Even some people from rich and powerful clans didn’t dare go there.

Minister Uptala looked over the crowd and asked, “Is everyone ready?”

“Minister, don’t worry. We are a big team, in case of danger, we’ll help one another!” spoke up someone.

Minister Uptala smiled and said, “Please be careful. Don’t be obsessed with success. You are all heroic army members. I hope you’ll come back safe and sound. Even if you don’t progress a lot, it doesn’t matter. Just come back!”

“We understand!” replied everybody, bowing before Minister Uptala.

Minister Uptala looked at Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, you are very weak. You have to be extremely careful. During the Challenge of the Celestial Country, there will be many extremely strong cultivators, some of them are abnormally powerful!”

Lin Feng nodded, “Minister, I know about that.”

“Since it’s that way, I’m not saying anything else. I’ll wait for you to come back like heroes!” said Minister Uptala. Everybody looked

solemn and respectful. They would very possibly die during the Challenge of the Celestial Country.

“Let’s go!” said Shichuan, waving his hand. Everybody followed him to another location. Very quickly, they arrived in Minister Uptala’s headquarters and left. Lin Feng realized that people from everywhere in the city seemed agitated. There was no restriction to participate to the Challenge of the Celestial Country, all emperors could participate. Members of all the armies could, as well. All the Ministers sent people to the Challenge of the Celestial Country.

The entrance to the Celestial Country was in Challenge Mountain. It was where the ten cities of Hell had a common border. Shichuan led the way.

It took them a month of travel to get there. Lin Feng was amazed at the size of Great Imperial Song City’s territory again. Shichuan was a great emperor, and could travel really fast, but it still took them a month!

Outside of Challenge Mountain, there was a seemingly endless number of strong cultivators, from all ten cities of Hell. Some of them were soldiers, some of them were individuals, some of them belonged to powerful groups in Hell, but in any case, they were all emperors. There were many medium-level Hell emperors and high-level Hell emperors, there were only a few low-level Hell emperors.

These people seem so strong!, thought Lin Feng, gazing over everyone. These people were terrifying, and all of them were emperors. It was hard to imagine!

“After arriving in the Celestial Country, many strong cultivators will be waiting for you there. Those people don’t want to leave the Celestial Country. They are all terrifyingly strong. They want to stay there to continue becoming stronger,” Shichuan said to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded his understanding.

Chapter 1877: Danger All Around

“When will the passage open?” asked Lin Feng, looking around. It was very cloudy here.

“Today. The passage opens every year once for three days. During those three days, you can enter or leave. I suggest you go in on the last day,” Shichuan advised Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t understand, but then Shichuan continued, “During the first two days, some people who entered last year will stay there to hunt more people.”

Lin Feng understood. On the last day, those hunters would definitely leave the world.

“Greed is the most dangerous thing during the Challenge of the Celestial Country, because many people want to obtain as many treasures as they can. Other people are precious treasures for you. You hunt people to hunt treasures. Those people are real heroes, and their rings contain priceless treasures. Remember what the Minister said, don’t be too greedy. Stay safe!” Shichuan told them all.

At that moment, the cloud became dazzling and golden. The golden clouds illuminated everything. Someone came out of the golden clouds and flew away into the distance.

How fast, he didn’t stay here, even for a second!, thought Lin Feng. Then, someone else came out, and then a third person... and people came out one after another. Nobody stuck around. Those people all had a common point, they didn’t stay there at all, and left immediately.

Those people were chased by others..., considered Lin Feng. So many strong cultivators were coming out of the Celestial Country. Even if they were extremely strong, they didn’t want to take risks. In Hell, it was different, as they couldn’t fight as they wished. If they did, they would have to bear the consequences of their

actions. They might not know other people's social status, so if they offended a powerful group, their friends might help!

“Someone is going in!” The watchers were startled. Someone had penetrated into the golden clouds and gone into the Celestial Country.

But very few people entered immediately, only one or two once in a while. However, people kept coming out unceasingly, and the golden lights didn't disappear.

That lasted for three days, then Shichuan looked at Lin Feng and the others, “It's the last day. You can go in. When you cross the passage, you will end up in different places. Remember to stay safe!”

“Don't worry, Master. We know what to do!” everybody nodded. Then, they rose up into the air and dove into the clouds. Lin Feng followed along. While rising up into the air, he looked down at the ground once and took a deep breath.

When Lin Feng crossed the clouds, he saw a golden empty space door of empty space. It trembled in front of him, and then Lin Feng was teleported somewhere else. He disappeared from there, and was suddenly falling from the skies.

——

“Die!” shouted someone icily. Lin Feng sensed death Qi all around him.

“Life!” said Lin Feng. Life and death energies rotated around him. His life energy became much more powerful.

However, Lin Feng was startled and had cold sweats. If he hadn't understood life and death as a dual energy, he would have lost half of his life. His eyes were glittering as he saw a skinny old man. That person was grey-skinned, and looked half-dead.

The only restriction to participate to the Challenge of the Celestial Country was cultivation level, there was no age

restriction. That old man was a high-level Hell emperor. He was waiting idly for opportunities. When he saw new people come out, he naturally tried his luck. During these three days, more and more people had come to the Celestial Country.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked like a low-level Hell emperor, so the old man didn't want to let him off.

The old man moved like the wind, and a powerful black wind of death started blowing. The skinny old man's eyes looked like black holes. Lin Feng released wind cosmic energies but he was still slower than the old man.

Dazzling lights appeared. Lin Feng took out an imperial weapon, a sword, he wanted to see if he could use Great Imperial Weapons in there.

A destructive strength descended from the sky and crashed onto the sword, turning it to ashes. Lin Feng raised his head. What kind of strength was that? Was it forbidden to use weapons in this world, and therefore a mysterious strength had descended from the sky and destroyed his sword?

Had this world been created by a strong cultivator, too?

"Stay here forever!" said the skinny old man icily. Death Qi dashed to the skies and moved towards Lin Feng, turning into a hand of death.

His opponent's death energy was corroded by his own life energy. It all turned into life energy. At the same time, Lin Feng released sword energies. The death hand crackled as it broke apart.

"A low-level Hell emperor can be so strong?" The skinny old man looked stupefied. Lin Feng could make death Qi turn into life Qi. How strange, he was very powerful! However, the old man was determined, he wanted to defeat Lin Feng. Maybe he had incredible treasures!

"Where are you going, little boy?" said the skinny old man

provocatively. The earth and the sky around Lin Feng were filled with death energies. If Lin Feng hadn't been strong enough, he would have been killed outright by those energies.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered. In the Celestial Country, he couldn't use Imperial weapons and Great Imperial Weapons. He could only rely on his own strength!

"Eh?" At that moment, Lin Feng arrived in front of a mountain, and at the top of the mountain, there was a middle-aged man. His Qi was powerful and sharp as he stood there calmly. Lin Feng felt a new pressure.

No wonder Minister Uptala had told him to wait before coming to this place. It was extremely dangerous here! There were so many strong cultivators here, and the people staying here used it to hunt newcomers!

However, Lin Feng continued flying. The middle-aged man noticed that Lin Feng was looking at him, but he still looked unmoved.

Powerful wind and empty space cosmic energies surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng landed on the mountain not far from the middle-aged man and suddenly penetrated into an empty space. At the same time, the middle-aged man also moved, turning into a powerful sword. It was as if there was no strength in the air around anymore. Even the old man's death Qi broke apart. The powerful sword's target wasn't Lin Feng, it was the skinny old man!

The skinny old man was a high-level Hell emperor, Lin Feng was a low-level Hell emperor!

The skinny old man's expression changed drastically. He released as much death Qi as he could, and it turned into a death Qi vortex. If the attacker got closer, he'd die!

The middle-aged man turned into a sword and penetrated

straight into the vortex, which started bubbling. The old man stared at it. The swordsman had dared go straight in, was he going to die?

However, at that moment, a powerful sword Qi cut apart everything, The sword came out of the vortex, the atmosphere froze for a moment before the vortex exploded.

The skinny old man's body was sliced into two! The middle-aged man's sword attack was extremely swift. A few rings fell from the sky, and the swordsman immediately grabbed them. Then, he looked at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng hadn't left, he had just watched. People there were extremely powerful!

Chapter 1878: Long and Difficult Battle

At that moment, the swordsman was still surrounded by death Qi. He had still suffered a little from the skinny old man's death Qi vortex. The swordsman's body was being corroded by death Qi. Even though he looked unaffected, he was still trying to expel the death Qi from his body with cosmic energies.

"If you give me all your precious items willingly, I won't kill you!" declared the swordsman, looking at Lin Feng calmly. He had ambushed the skinny old man for a simple reason: he could kill Lin Feng easily, but not the old man!

Lin Feng shook his head. The swordsman's eyes glittered and he said, "You think I can't kill you?"

"Your sword attacks are so fast, of course you can defeat me easily." said Lin Feng indifferently. He had no doubt that that guy could kill him easily. He had seen his sword attacks. His speed cosmic energies were terrifying. When speed abstruse energies turned into cosmic energies, they were fearsome. This guy's speed cosmic energies were terrifying.

"Since you understand, that's good!" said the swordsman calmly, "You shouldn't have come here. Even if I don't steal your treasures, other people will. You should find a place to hide."

"Thank you very much for your help," said Lin Feng, throwing a ring at the swordsman before leaving quickly. The swordsman put his godly awareness inside the ring and turned furious.

He transformed into a sword and chased after Lin Feng. Lin Feng couldn't escape, the swordsman was too fast and he was much faster than the skinny old man.

Lin Feng opened his third eye. Destructive strength descended from the sky. Suddenly, Lin Feng turned around and opened his bestial consciousness, releasing black water and desolate Qi. Lin

Feng then disappeared into that black lake.

His enemy released sword energies, which streaked across the sky. He opened the black lake, and continued charging towards Lin Feng.

“Lacerate!” Dazzling sword lights turned into two light beams, and Lin Feng’s body was suddenly cut in two. Both sides fell down from the sky. The swordsman watched Lin Feng icily. That was a strange Qi...

“Earth!” Earth strength descended from the sky and crashed down onto him. Lin Feng reappeared. The swordsman was startled, the Lin Feng he had cut apart was a clone, a fake...

Lin Feng suddenly took out a destructive black lotus.

The swordsman reacted instantly. Another sword appeared and streaked across the sky.

Destructive strength filled and made the lotus explode. Fireballs blew in all directions. A powerful strength moved towards the swordsman and crashed onto his transformed sword-arm, and it started burning. The fire was very corrosive, and the swordsman’s expression changed drastically. Finally, he couldn’t remain calm anymore. Suddenly, he cut his right arm off with his left arm.

“Die!” said the swordsman. Sword energies whistled out and raced towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng could die at anytime!

Lin Feng was prepared, he had already released Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. When it collided with the sword strength, the sky exploded. Lin Feng moved back and watched the swordsman icily. He was a high-level Hell emperor, and was extremely strong. He could carry out explosive attacks with the power of his mind. A moment before, Lin Feng had hidden in the small world of his spirit and had released a clone outside. That was how he had tricked the swordsman.

Without using the power of his spirit, Lin Feng wouldn’t be able

to defeat that man. But Lin Feng couldn't use the power of his spirit in such conditions, it was too dangerous. He was surrounded by danger. He couldn't be sure that nobody was watching them here.

Therefore, Lin Feng flew away. Lin Feng had destroyed one of his arms. Even though the man could recover, it was still humiliating.

“Die!” The swordsman turned into a sword again and continued chasing after Lin Feng. Dazzling sword lights filled the air. Lin Feng was surrounded by sword energies!

Lin Feng shivered. This guy was terrifying, and the sword lights were extremely sharp!

Lin Feng suddenly stopped and rose up into the air. Life and death energies started twinkling. Lin Feng also released Deva-Mara Kalpa strength.

“Destroy!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He didn't only use his Nine Kalpa Swords, millions of swords were whistling. Lin Feng suddenly turned around, his eyes became extremely sharp.

When the swordsman saw that Lin Feng had stopped, he opened his third eye and dazzling lights emerged from it. He wanted to destroy Lin Feng's sword attacks, but it wasn't that easy. He couldn't afford to underestimate Lin Feng anyway. If Lin Feng had been at the same cultivation level as him, he would have killed the swordsman easily with such an attack.

When Lin Feng stopped, he released endless amounts of death and life energies. The swordsman was shocked to see this, and stopped cold to stare at Lin Feng.

A will-destroying sword attack and Demon Kalpa strength descended from the sky. This was the strength of a medium-level Hell emperor, and two life and death deployment spells appeared as well.

“Medium-level Hell emperor!” The swordsman was startled. He

had to kill Lin Feng now...

“Life and death deployment spell! Even without going inside, I can still kill you!” swore the swordsman. He raised his left arm, he condensing sword intent. It seemed that this intent didn’t even contain cosmic strength, like it was a pure sword. However, that was one of his powers: when he made cosmic energies fuse together with his sword attack, his opponents couldn’t sense them.

“Die!” shouted the man furiously, and then endless amounts of sword energies shot towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was in the middle of his life and death deployment spell, and there were sword energies everywhere.

At the same time, Lin Feng moved and the atmosphere trembled.

“If you could kill me with your sword energies, why would I make a deployment spell?” Lin Feng asked icily. He continued rising up in the air, and his life and death deployment spell flashed. Lin Feng did hand seals in the air, destructive strength invaded the space around him. The swords collided with the destructive strength spectacularly. There were destructive energies everywhere!

Lin Feng’s deployment spells were excellent, he had a great deal of experience at using them now. He had also studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, so he understood evolution strength really well. He could imitate various deployment spells easily!

At this moment, Lin Feng was standing in the deployment spell and was surrounded by destructive strength. He looked quite calm as he faced the swordsman and asked, “Can you kill me now?”

The swordsman pulled a long face. In the distance, people were looking at them coldly. Their battle had attracted many people’s attention. It was getting dangerous, they could both turn into prey for others.

“Can you kill me with a life and death deployment spell?” replied

the swordsman after remaining silent for a few seconds. Then, he entered the deployment spell!

When he entered the deployment spell, he turned into a sharp sword. He wanted to destroy the deployment spell!

“I control life and death in my deployment spell, your attacks are useless in here,” said Lin Feng, taking a step. Dazzling lights filled the air as he released life and death strength. Everything became darkness, the arrival of Judgement Day. The swordsman was surrounded by infinite darkness, and being assaulted constantly. His sword energies started fading!

The swordsman suddenly released even more dazzling sword lights to resist the death strength. He then rose up again, if he stayed in there for too long, he could die-!

“Die!” Lin Feng shouted furiously. More death strength descended from the sky. The swordsman’s face turned grey, the death Qi corroded his body. He couldn’t resist anymore!

“Stay here!” shouted Lin Feng. He waved his hands, an earth cage appeared and stopped the swordsman. More death Qi penetrated into his body, and he slowly closed his eyes. That death Qi didn’t look deadly, but could still kill!

Chapter 1879: Jalacandra Fairyland

At that moment, many people were watching Lin Feng, and saw him kill the swordsman. They were stupefied. The swordsman wasn't extremely strong, but he was still a high-level Hell emperor, and Lin Feng had killed him!

Lin Feng seemed to have the strength of a low-level Hell emperor. However, his real level seemed to be that of a medium-level Hell emperor! However, his life and death deployment spell was terrifying, and could easily kill people. His death strength was terrifying. It didn't look powerful, but it was extremely deadly.

Lin Feng picked up the loot from the swordsman's body, and nobody attacked him. He was dangerous. They had to be careful, or else they could easily die.

After picking up the loot, Lin Feng looked at everyone around watching him. He knew that their battle had attracted many people. However, the watchers still left. Lin Feng was very self-confident, nobody wanted to take such risks. He didn't seem to be afraid of them.

Everybody was like that. Lin Feng was warning them off by being self-confident.

After that, Lin Feng descended from the sky. He didn't want to draw too many people's attention.

After that, Lin Feng found a mountain range. He went to the highest peak and glanced around.

"There!" Lin Feng glanced around, then he stopped and started carving deployment marks at the top of the mountain. Life and death deployment lights appeared indistinctly. After a short time, his deployment spell was dazzling. However, Lin Feng waved his hands and the death strength disappeared, only life strength was left.

After that, Lin Feng didn't stop carving deployment spells. Very quickly, more marks appeared everywhere, including illusion marks.

Finally, when Lin Feng finished, an illusion energy surrounded the mountain range. It was filled with life and vitality.

Lin Feng stopped after casting two illusion spells. He sat down cross-legged and another Lin Feng appeared. It was an ordinary clone. He stood up and looked around, protected by the illusion spell. Lin Feng could practice cultivation with his real body and his clone could pay attention.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and a chessboard appeared in his mind: the Celestial Evolution Chessboard! Lin Feng stood on it.

At that moment, he carved two deployment spells on the chessboard, a life and death mark as well as an illusion mark. More marks appeared everywhere.

Deployment spells exist thanks to evolution energy. You use your mind to cast deployment spells. I already know a few of the three thousand great deployment spells. I can make them evolve, too! I also need less time to cast them, and they are even more powerful!, thought Lin Feng. He had managed to kill the swordsman with a life and death deployment spell, but he still needed some time and effort. He wouldn't be able to kill extremely powerful cultivators that way.

He used the strength of the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, a light beam appeared and began to evolve slowly. Lin Feng focused. With his clone outside, he felt safe enough to focus on his task.

——

A few hours later, someone arrived near Lin Feng and looked at the two clones.

“What a powerful life strength!” said that person. He looked at Lin Feng's clone and said, “Your Excellency, your life Qi is

incredible. You're not really a low-level Hell emperor, are you?"

"Don't come closer. Stay a thousand steps away," replied Lin Feng calmly. He looked at that person with his pitch-black eyes emotionlessly.

That person stopped his advance and smiled, "Your Excellency, don't misunderstand me. I mean you no harm. The Challenge of the Celestial Country is extremely difficult. We could travel together and help one another."

Then, he continued coming closer.

"I'm practicing cultivation, I don't want to travel. If you really don't harbor evil intentions, then come back in a hundred days," said Lin Feng, "Your Excellency, if you take one more step in my direction, I will consider you as an enemy."

"Having one more friend is better than having one more enemy, isn't it?" said that person. He continued walking forwards. Lin Feng waved his hands and suddenly the atmosphere changed and became dark. Lin Feng's clone and body disappeared. At the same time, death Qi started corroding the man's body.

The man's face turned grey. He rose up into the air, but he was now stuck in the illusion. When he died, he was still staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't even open his eyes with his real body. His clone picked up the enemy's ring. He left the corpse and the life energy came back. People preferred life energy. It made them feel confident. By leaving the corpse there, he was warning people.

——

Time passed slowly. A few corpses had built up, stirred by the blowing wind. The marks at the top of the mountain also started changing, Lin Feng wanted to try what he had worked out mentally. He made the life and death deployment spell fuse together with the illusion one, and they turned into a single

gigantic deployment spell. That way, he wouldn't need to carve two deployment spells anymore, he'd just cast one!

—

Two months later, his deployment spell had become even larger, it had turned into a gigantic dazzling pattern. There was life energy everywhere, and trees had started growing, showing leaves and everything.

Lin Feng continued studying, not leaving until the day when his demon Kalpa strength had become powerful enough. He opened his eyes, now filled with sharp demon Kalpa strength.

Even now that I'm a medium-level emperor, I still need to be cleansed by Kalpa strength 81 times, but it still hasn't happened, thought Lin Feng, lifting his head to look at the unresponsive sky. He rose and walked over to his clone, who gave him all the precious items from the dead, and then they both fused together again.

Lin Feng continued walking to the edge of the mountain, he glanced around and saw someone in white clothes standing on a stone. Their robe was fluttering in the wind like their black hair.

The man sensed someone and turned around, noticed Lin Feng, and smiled, "Your Excellency, I'm from Jalacandra Fairyland, I noticed that your deployment spells were amazing. I've been waiting here for a long time. Would you like to come to Jalacandra Fairyland?"

That person had come by a few times, Lin Feng's clone had seen him several times. Lin Feng didn't need to offend him.

"Jalacandra Fairyland, where is that?" asked Lin Feng.

"Jalacandra Fairyland is a group in the Celestial Country. From generation to generation, old people leave and new people join. New people constantly receive the Jalacandra Fairyland's intent," said the person in white clothes with a smile.

Lin Feng smiled back and asked, “What is Jalacandra Fairyland’s purpose?”

“Progressing together!” replied the person simply. “The Celestial Country is a dangerous place, people come here to hunt treasures, but there are many strong cultivators. Many people end up creating groups, it’s unavoidable. Some other people who are incredibly strong can also fight on their own and kill anyone. But many people still end up in groups. Jalacandra Fairyland is about intent and there can’t be internal fights. Those who violate the rules are killed by everyone else.”

“Temporary group!” Lin Feng was intrigued. “My cultivation level is low, why choose me?”

“Jalacandra Fairyland’s vision is on the long term. We don’t care about people’s cultivation level, we care about talent. Many people who join Jalacandra Fairyland decide to stay in the Celestial Country. Those who are weak at the beginning always become strong. You’re really talented and you stand out, your deployment spells are terrifying!” said the person in white clothes amiably. “I’ve come here several times, waiting for you to wake up. I mean you no harm. If you refuse, then I’ll just leave. I don’t want to disturb you. I hope you’ll accept, though!”

“I’ll come with you!” smiled Lin Feng. If the Jalacandra Fairyland had truly existed in the Celestial Country for many years, they had to be strong, and those people had to understand the country quite well. It was worth trying!

Chapter 1880: Peerless Fighting Ability

The mountain range which Lin Feng had chosen was gigantic. He had chosen the highest mountain because he could see the furthest from it.

At that moment, the person in white clothes had led him above a precipice. There was a valley below, and Lin Feng also noticed a waterfall. Lin Feng and that man crossed the waterfall and appeared somewhere else. There was moss, it was humid, it smelled fresh, and the stones were shiny.

“What a strange place! It really looks like a fairyland!” observed Lin Feng.

The person in white clothes smiled, “That place was the entrance to my world. It’s a remote place. Few people come here. That way, nothing can happen to Jalacandra Fairyland.”

“Jalacandra Fairyland has become a kind of sect, how come they are worried about safety?”

“The Celestial Country is a dangerous place, wait until you see the battlefield, you will understand that our lives are insignificant. Even if you’re initially from a powerful family, nobody cares,” said the man in white clothes. Lin Feng remained silent. He didn’t know much about the Celestial Country, obviously. But this person said the same things as Minister Uptala. Besides, apart from people from Hell, people from other worlds were also here!

In Jalacandra Fairyland, there were many waterfalls. A short time later, Lin Feng saw someone.

“Bai Ling, who’s that?” asked the new person.

“His name is Lin Feng. I found him at the top of a mountain. He’s very talented. His deployment spells are terrifying. I’m hoping he can become a member of Jalacandra Fairyland!” explained Bai Ling.

“Alright!” that person nodded. Then, he looked to a beautiful woman standing next to him. She looked tall and precious. She was wearing a simple transparent white dress, one could see her breasts.

“I’m the current leader of Jalacandra Fairyland, Zhi Rou! Lin Feng, would you like to join Jalacandra Fairyland?” asked the woman to Lin Feng.

“Are there restrictions? Am I free? Can I leave anytime?” asked Lin Feng.

“No restriction. Just one thing: if you leave in times of danger, then you’ll be considered a traitor!” replied Zhi Rou. People who let their friends down were traitors, of course!

“I agree!” Lin Feng nodded.

“Since you agree, remember that we all join hands to kill traitors!” Zhi Rou told him solemnly. As a leader, she had to be like that.

“You came at the perfect time. People from Hell have already started dispersing everywhere in the Celestial Country. We are getting ready to go. We have more than forty people here. We want to divide into three, each group can have a little bit more than ten people. That’s enough for us to support one another. We will also keep in touch using Jalacandra signals. We must help one another in case of danger. If someone doesn’t help, we kill them!” said Zhi Rou. Everybody nodded agreement with her.

Lin Feng looked at Bai Ling and said, “How many people are there in Jalacandra Fairyland?”

“I’m not sure. It has existed for so many years, and it changes from generation to generation. There are many people I’ve never seen. However, the Celestial Country is becoming bigger and bigger, so there are also more and more people!” replied Bai Ling.

“Lin Feng, your Jalacandra Imprint!” said Zhi Rou, handing an

imprint to Lin Feng. “Alright, get ready to leave, everyone! When the Challenge of the Celestial Country is over, we come back here!” shouted Zhi Rou. Everybody gathered up.

Bai Ling looked at Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, come with me.”

“Alright!” said Lin Feng. He had no problem with that. Very quickly, the three groups left. They all had a leader. In Lin Feng’s group, Bai Ling was the leader. They were sixteen people in his group: four medium-level Hell emperors, and twelve high-level Hell emperors. Indeed, high-level Hell emperors were numerous!

Bai Ling and the others left Jalacandra Fairyland and landed in the mountain range. Bai Ling looked at the others and said, “Since our purpose is to help one another at all times, I need to tell you some things. First how we share the loot each time, everyone can choose: you can share according to how much people have contributed, or you can share equally.”

“First one,” said someone.

“We’re a team, second one.”

“Second one.”

Everybody expressed their opinion. Lin Feng said, “We’ll see how lucky we are. If we obtain several rings, each person can choose a ring. In any case it will be difficult to share equally. If we find a really precious treasure, the first one to get it can keep it. And nobody can fight over precious treasures.”

“What if we all contribute to steal a treasure from an enemy?” said Bai Ling.

“Do you think that’s unavoidable?” asked Lin Feng. Bai Ling was surprised. If they found a really precious treasure, everybody would want to get it. And even if Lin Feng said nobody was going to argue over treasures, it was rarely the case.

Everybody agreed with Lin Feng though, and they continued. They saw many battles along the way. However, when people saw

Lin Feng and his group, they always ran away. They looked really strong, and nobody wanted to fight against groups.

“Where are we going?” Lin Feng asked Bai Ling. He didn’t recognize anything here.

“We’re going to the real battlefield, of course, where the battles are the best.” replied Bai Ling.

“There are beasts ahead!” someone exclaimed. There was a vast forest ahead, and an ancient tree had appeared in their field of vision. Lin Feng and the others noticed some sharp dazzling eyes within it.

A powerful Qi rose to the skies, and a strong wind started blowing. Gigantic beasts appeared in front of Lin Feng and the others, all winged with sharp claws.

“Stupid animals, that’s a great roc clan! Be careful, they’re extremely fast!” said Bai Ling. These great rocs spanned hundreds of meters.

Surprisingly, there are animal clans in the Celestial Country!, thought Lin Feng. The great rocs had surrounded them.

“Great rocs are extremely fast and they have an incredible physical strength. However, they can’t use death Qi. Let’s all release death Qi together!” said Bai Ling. A death Qi vortex appeared and death Qi moved towards the rocs.

“Die!” screeched a great roc. The rocs started flapping their wings, and threw themselves at the humans.

“Ice Hell!” shouted Bai Ling grimly. An ice-cold Qi filled the air, and Bai Ling punched out. Ice-cold energies moved towards the great rocs. One of them started slashing the ice with his sharp claws, but his claws started freezing.

“Hell!” shouted Bai Ling furiously. Ice-cold energies surrounded the great roc.

However, the great roc opened his wings, which were as sharp as blades. A gigantic wind blade appeared.

Bai Ling pulled a long face and shouted, “Be careful, great rocs are too fast. Lin Feng, come and cast a deployment spell, I’ll protect you.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded. Death and life marks appeared all around, glittering in the air.

At that moment, the ground started shaking from the sound of someone’s footsteps. Lin Feng looked around and saw a young man with red hair in the distance. He looked extremely strong.

That person charged in and punched a great roc. It was a simple punch, but a massive indent appeared, and the great roc shrieked in terror. His claws broke apart, and the roc was smashed away. Blood splashed everywhere, and the great roc exploded!

“How explosive! That strength...” Lin Feng was stupefied. His physical strength was exceptional, but this guy’s physical strength was even scarier!

An incredible fighter from the Celestial Country with a peerless fighting ability. He’s never lost. He just keeps killing. Lin Feng remembered what Bai Ling had told him. This person was even more powerful than that swordsman with his sword energies!

Chapter 1881: Aoxu

The great rocs flapped their wings furiously, a daunting sight. Their eyes were bloodshot as they stared at the red-haired young man.

The members of Jalacandra Fairyland also paid attention to that young man. He was heroic and incredibly strong. He could easily crush great rocs.

The young man's red hair fluttered in the wind as he glanced at the great rocs coldly and shouted, "There's no Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc!?"

"Aoxu!" A great roc turned into a human being with golden hair. He stared at the redheaded man and said, "If the king of my clan was here, you wouldn't be that arrogant!"

"You dare call your leader a king? Ridiculous!" retorted Aoxu disdainfully. The air shook as he threw himself at a great roc near him fearlessly. Bestial Qi rolled out as the roc's wings turned into sharp blades and he threw himself at the human.

"Argh...!" A gigantic bloody hand appeared and surrounded the great roc.

The hand crushed the roc's wings. Thunder built up in rumbles, and the great roc's body exploded in a rain of blood.

"Someone from the Dragon Clan!" Bai Ling looked at the man, amazed and wary. Lin Feng was astonished, too. The Dragon Clan? That was a legendary clan! Surprisingly, he was on a battlefield in the Celestial Country!

"Let's go!" shrieked another great roc furiously. He opened his wings and flew away as quickly as possible. All the other great rocs followed him, rapidly disappearing into the mountains. The arrogant man looked after them coldly. Around him, many bloodthirsty dragons appeared, roaring furiously.

Thunder swept out, and the forest below them was flattened. All the trees disappeared. “If you find the Great Oriental Greenfinch Rocs, tell them to come and find Aoxu!”

This guy is a terrifying fighter!, thought Lin Feng. He could kill great rocs easily! If he had continued killing them, they would have just died, so he had just humiliated them hoping the Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc would show up. He was provoking the king of the great rocs!

The great rocs had all left. Aoxu eyed Lin Feng and the others and said, “Death Qi, you’re all from Hell.”

He looked at Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling. Dragon Claws suddenly appeared and shot at Lin Feng.

“Stop!” shouted Bai Ling, coldly releasing ice-cold energies. Bai Ling punched out and an ice Hell cauldron appeared. It contained both ice and Hell Qi, and froze the dragon claws.

“Who dares attack me?” said Aoxu, his eyes all red and sounding furious. More dragon hands appeared again, this time there were nine of them and they all attacked the cauldron, shattering it instantly.

“Die!” the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland shouted furiously. Suddenly, death energy surrounded Aoxu and started corroding his life. At the same time, Bai Ling released more ice energies. A waterfall of ice energies appeared and turned into a frozen river.

People from the dragon clan are really aggressive. Aoxu is a high-level emperor. There are so many terrifying cultivators here. Only real geniuses can come here. For animal kings and monstrously strong human cultivators, it’s a bit easier, Lin Feng thought as he punched out. A life and death chessboard appeared above Aoxu. Death Qi boiled as it surrounded Aoxu.

A dragon started chanting. Aoxu was surrounded by red lights as

the death Qi penetrated into his body. At the same time, he released terrifying and aggressive destructive energies.

“Death Hell Attack!” shouted Bai Ling coldly. Death Qi turned into icicles. The others attacked one after another, all sorts of strength filling the air. However, Aoxu was really strong. He released blood strength and physical strength, filling the sky with his energies. Apart from death strength, other kinds of strength didn’t seem very effective against him.

“Everybody use death strength!” Lin Feng hurled out his power. Death and life energies kept glittering together.

“Death cosmic energy, condense!” Bai Ling and the others all released death cosmic energies. The life cosmic energies disappeared, and the air was filled with death Qi as it turned into a pattern. Lin Feng waved his hands and released death Qi unceasingly.

When Aoxu sensed the gathering death strength, he straightened up, his eyes bloodshot.

“Argh, argh...!” the dragons roared. Aoxu was standing there and started attacking. His punches turned into dragons and shot towards the death pattern. After reaching the pattern, the dragons exploded, shaking the pattern violently. Nine dragon’s voices suddenly roared, and as the pattern finally exploded and the death Qi dispersed, Aoxu was caught in the eruption!

However, Aoxu didn’t continue attacking Lin Feng. He stared at Lin Feng and said, “A life and death deployment spell, not bad! You even managed to take my dragon punches, you can be proud of yourself. Why is there demon dragon blood in you?”

Lin Feng was startled. No wonder that Aoxu had attacked him, he had sensed his dragon energy!

“I met a dragon before and he transmitted his blood to me,” he replied to Aoxu.

Aoxu raised his head and roared. The earth and the sky shook violently. The crowd sensed the ground shake. Lin Feng's blood started boiling as dragons roared. Lin Feng also opened his mouth and dragon Qi mixed with demon Qi dashed to the skies.

The Qi turned into a body, and after a short time, a black dragon appeared around Lin Feng's body. Its scales were pitch-black and as sharp as blades, it looked ferocious. It glared at Aoxu angrily.

"Bastard, you always keep him in your body?" demanded Aoxu, angrily staring at Lin Feng.

"His ancestor's blood wasn't powerful. I let him grow inside of my body to make him become stronger. It's a good thing for him!" replied Lin Feng easily. Aoxu kept staring at the dragon behind Lin Feng.. The Dragon Clan had few dragons colored black. They all had an explosive strength.

In the Dragon Clan, there were three sorts of dragons: golden dragons with five claws, blood dragons like him who were bloodthirsty, and demon dragons.

Those three dragon types all had an explosive strength and were extremely powerful.

"So you intend to keep him in your body forever?" asked Aoxu. Lin Feng smiled and said, "If you want to take him back to the Dragon Clan, I don't mind."

"You don't mind letting him go?" he asked Aoxu, startled to hear that. Demon dragons were extremely powerful. That dragon had grown inside Lin Feng's blood, Lin Feng was almost like his mother. He could even help Lin Feng fight!

"He could get a great education in the Dragon Clan, that would be good for him!" Lin Feng smiled.

Aoxu remained silent for a few seconds, and then said, "Nah, my clan is for blood dragons, it wouldn't be good for a demon dragon. If I took him back the members of my clan might attack him. Of

course, the five-clawed golden dragons would accept him.”

“I see, then forget about it.” The demon dragon didn’t go back into Lin Feng’s body. He turned into a human being with black eyes and an icy stare. His skin looked like a pitch-black armor. The members of Jalacandra Fairyland were startled to learn Lin Feng had a dragon inside his body.

They also noticed Aoxu didn’t look as angry as before.

Chapter 1882: Milky Way Battlefield

The dark dragon had grown up inside Lin Feng's body, and so had a very different childhood than other dragons. Therefore, even though he wasn't old, he could already turn into a human being. He didn't understand the outside world, though. He stayed next to Lin Feng and glared at Aoxu angrily. He could sense that Aoxu was very strong.

"You little bastard. We are both dragons!" Aoxu said to the demon dragon angrily.

"He's just a baby. Why are you angry at him?" Lin Feng smiled wryly. Then, he looked at the demon dragon and told him, "Since the family name of people from the Dragon Clan is Ao, then I'll call you Aomo."

"Aomo!" repeated the dragon with a nod. He had a name now!

"You're lucky, little bastard. You surprisingly have a demon dragon!" said Aoxu, looking at Aomo with a smile.

Lin Feng was speechless and said, "You like calling everyone bastard, don't you? My name is Lin Feng."

"Alright, Lin Feng," agreed Aoxu. He glanced at the others and said, "Come, let's go to the Milky Way battlefield."

"Milky Way battlefield?" Bai Ling frowned in surprise. That was a scary place!

"What, you don't dare?" asked Aoxu to Bai Ling, "You're not weak. If we join hands, nobody can stop us. The Milky Way battlefield is a great place to practice. That's where really strong cultivators go. You've probably never seen really strong cultivators! Haha!" Aoxu laughed.

Bai Ling looked at the others and said, "You have no objections, right? Let's go to the Milky Way battlefield."

Lin Feng looked surprised and asked, “What is the Milky Way battlefield?”

“It’s the most chaotic battlefield of the Celestial Country. People there are absolutely terrifying. There are army members from many different worlds. You’ll see some people from Hell who can kill others in one strike,” said Bai Ling, smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded eagerly. “I see. Let’s go and see!”

The others nodded. They were all excited, and couldn’t wait to see the Milky Way battlefield.

“Don’t worry. I’ll protect you,” Aoxu shouted to them. A moment before they were enemies, and now he said he was going to protect them. The members of Jalacandra Fairyland smiled wryly. Even though Jalacandra Fairyland was a powerful group, the Milky Way battlefield was a terrifying place with terrifying cultivators. There were many people there as strong as Aoxu. Many people there were as close to becoming a great emperor as possible. Many people also died there!

——

They arrived near the chaotic area. Some silhouettes flickered past them, but nobody attacked them.

After a short time, Lin Feng sensed a terrifying Qi. He raised his head and saw a constellation ahead. It was incredible sight that made him quiver.

The Milky Way, what a strange Qi!, thought Lin Feng. He didn’t know what the Milky Way actually was.

“That’s the Milky Way battlefield. Look at the Milky Way, you can’t get close to it, otherwise you will die. That’s why the battles happen within a radius of ten kilometers of it. Look at the crowd. They are all heroes. These people are stronger than most people in your world,” said Aoxu. Lin Feng and the others glanced around. Indeed, many silhouettes were moving around and their Qi was

incredible.

Qi was pulsing ahead of them, and many energies whistled around them. However, the Milky Way didn't move at all, it was just a mysterious Qi. Lin Feng gazed into the distance, and saw many broken bridges, with people fighting on them.

Finally, Lin Feng and the others arrived on a bridge and could clearly see everything. The area was gigantic. Under the bridges, there was water, and the boundless Yellow Springs of the underworld. Some people sometimes fell down into the yellow waters, already dead.

“Above, the heroic warriors search the Green Void, below the Yellow Springs. The Milky Way is the Green Void, the Yellow Springs are the underworld. Fighting here is extremely dangerous!” Bai Ling told them after glancing around. There were many bridges on which strong cultivators were fighting on.

“Some people are extremely strong!” said one of the members of Jalacandra Fairyland.

Aoxu said, “Even though they're strong, how many people can reach the Milky Way and get to the other side?”

“What's on the other side?” These people understood the Celestial Country quite well, but few people knew what it meant to go on the other side.

“Don't you know? On the other side, it's not Hell and it's not the Celestial Country. It's another battlefield. If you can go to the other side, it means that you've become incredibly strong. Besides, if you manage to cross the Milky Way, while crossing, you will be cleansed by the Hell World imprints. You will become much stronger!”

“Another world?” Bai Ling frowned. He had heard that there were people from other worlds in the Celestial Country.

Surprisingly, there were also people who could reach the other side of the Milky Way.

Lin Feng shivered. Another world? Was it the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

“Aoxu, where do you come from?” Bai Ling asked Aoxu.

Aoxu smiled, “The Dragon Clan has ways to come to the Celestial Country, of course.”

“Where do those bridges lead?” Lin Feng pressed. “How many worlds are connected to this place?”

“Haha, there are billions of worlds, but there’s only one real world. The Hell world is independent. Opposite the Milky Way, there’s the Continent of the Nine Clouds!” Aoxu smiled. Lin Feng was delighted, sharp lights glittered. As expected, the Continent of the Nine Clouds! Was the Continent of the Nine Clouds the main world, then?

“Some people from Jalacandra Fairyland are there too,” Bai Ling pointed at a group of people. Those strong cultivators were on bridges and wearing white clothes. Their group was bigger than Lin Feng’s, a total of thirty-four people.

“That’s a descendant of King Qinguang, Leader Qin Yu. He’s extremely strong. No wonder he took people to the Milky Way battlefield!” said Bai Ling. Everybody was shocked. Qin Yu was very strong indeed, and very famous in Qinguang City. Few people could compete with him.

“Let’s gather and walk around?” Lin Feng glanced at Bai Ling.

“Alright, let’s go!” said Aoxu. Everybody followed. Very quickly, they landed on that broken bridge.

“Qin Yu!” said Bai Ling. All the members of Jalacandra Fairyland turned around and saw Bai Ling and his group. Bai Ling said to Qin Yu, “We’re all from Jalacandra Fairyland, let’s stay together.”

“Since we’re all from Jalacandra Fairyland, we should do that indeed. We have to help one another,” Qin Yu nodded. The Milky Way battlefield was dangerous, the more people the better!

“If we find good things, you’ll get things after us,” Qin Yu told them. Everybody looked at Bai Ling. Even though they were all from Jalacandra Fairyland, there were so many people, they had to find some compromise.

“Those who find great things keep them for themselves!” declared Aoxu.

That person smiled at Aoxu and said, “That’s the best solution.”

Qin Yu looked at the crowd and said, “If you find an item, keep it for yourself then. But remember that we’re all friends, there can’t be internal conflicts. Otherwise, I’ll get angry.”

“Alright!” everyone agreed. They started walking along the bridge. People were fighting all around them. Precious items kept falling from the sky. Lin Feng was astonished.

“What are those precious items falling from the Milky Way?” asked Lin Feng.

“There are techniques, Ancient scriptures, Imperial weapons, Great Imperial Weapons, Marks of the Path, all sorts of items,” Bai Ling answered him. Lin Feng was stupefied. Marks of the Path?!

Chapter 1883

Lin Feng gazed into the distance. The bridges were floating in the air, and blood kept falling from the sky. It was an astonishing sight.

“Is that meteor rain made of precious items?” Lin Feng was dumbstruck. He didn’t understand.

“Haha, we’re in the Celestial Country, it’s a mysterious place. We can’t know where there are items. Here is the most dangerous place, though, there are the scary battles here. Of course, that meteor rain isn’t solely made up of precious items. There are real meteors too, and some meteors are empty!” said Aoxu.

Qin Yu nodded agreement with the dragon. “Even Hell great emperors go insane for Marks of the Path. After all, even great emperors want to raise their comprehension. Marks of the Path are more likely to appear here than anywhere else. The other places of the Celestial Country aren’t as good.”

“Let’s stop talking and wasting time. Let’s go further and see!” proclaimed Aoxu, leading the way ahead. The group of people from Jalacandra Fairyland continued along. They were a larger force, and it was safer for them like that.

The broken bridges in the air were extremely strange. They appeared out of nowhere, then they were broken, and started again farther away. They also seemed indestructible, strong cultivators’ attacks reached them, but they didn’t break.

Many people noticed Lin Feng and his group. Some people sped up because they wanted to avoid them. Some others didn’t mind and walked confidently near to them.

“Milky Way Rain!” Suddenly, a thick rain appeared. Lin Feng and the others sped up immediately, moving like lightning towards the rain!

Lin Feng stretched out his hands and touched the water, a gigantic drop of water appeared on his hand and vanished.

“Haha, you’re lucky!” Aoxu laughed. After that drop of water dispersed, an ancient imprint appeared. It contained ancient Qi. Aoxu laughed loudly when he saw it.

The others all rolled their eyes, at how loud he was. The others also obtained treasures and smiled happily.

A gigantic hand suddenly moved towards Aoxu.

That person sure is unlucky!, thought other people who knew Aoxu. Aoxu looked at the hand coldly, before claws appeared and destroyed the hand. At the same time, Aoxu flashed away and threw himself at the man attacking him furiously. A red dragon’s claw moved towards the attacker. Dragon roars filled the air. That person’s face turned deathly pale in shock, “Dragon Clan!”

He retreated exceedingly quickly. At the same time, two other people attacked Aoxu at the same time.

“Die!” shouted Qin Yu coldly. Aoxu had stayed with them, they couldn’t let people bully him. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland all released death Qi at the same time and it surrounded those two people, who turned grey. So many people attacked at the same time, it was terrifying. The two people didn’t have time to do anything. The death Qi crashed down on them and their bodies fell down into the Yellow Springs.

How terrifying!, thought Lin Feng. Almost all those people were high-level Hell emperors and all of them controlled death Qi, a terrifying kind of strength. There weren’t only sixteen of them anymore, they were more of them, and they were very powerful.

After those two people died, two people grabbed the items from the corpses. They couldn’t give them up.

Those who hadn’t obtained treasures were annoyed, but those were the rules. They couldn’t steal treasures from their friends.

They couldn't violate the rules either, everybody respected them.

Aoxu also killed his first attacker, laughing and saying, "Not bad. That small army is useful!"

"You're from the Dragon Clan?" Qin Yu asked Aoxu. He was surprised after seeing Aoxu use dragon energies.

"Indeed! Let's keep going!" Aoxu smiled. Strong cultivators kept moving forwards or returning all about them.

"There's a powerful army there. They've killed many strong cultivators," said Bai Ling, pointing at a group of people fighting together. They were all wearing black Taoist robes made of feathers. The wind swirled about them. They looked imposing and awe-inspiring. People didn't dare get too close to them.

"That's the Black Shark Army. They are super stars on the Milky Way battlefield, very strong. They have hundreds of fighters!" said Qin Yu.

"The Milky Way battlefield is gigantic. There are many armies. The Black Shark Army is only one of them. There's nothing exceptional about them," sniffed Aoxu. Many people understood that fighting there alone was dangerous. Only a few people like Aoxu dared fight against entire armies on their own.

"The Milky Way battlefield is gigantic, if we could kill an entire army, that would be incredible!" said Lin Feng. Even with his strength, Aoxu couldn't kill an entire army on his own.

Suddenly, more meteorites fell from the sky. The group of people from Jalacandra Fairyland rose up into the air again.

"Those who steal treasures from the rain of meteorites will die!" shouted someone arrogantly. The group of people from Jalacandra Fairyland suddenly stopped. They saw the people from the Black Shark Army rise up in the air and taking treasures.

"How arrogant!" said Aoxu coldly. A hundred people looked at Aoxu. His dragon blood started boiling.

“Look over there!” said someone at that moment. People turned their heads and saw a mountain descending from the Milky Way. It looked like a celestial mountain. Its Qi was incredible!

“That celestial mountain seems alive. Does it contain Marks of the Path?” People’s eyes started shining with greed.

“Take them all!” shouted the leader of the Black Shark Army. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland all released death Qi. Everybody was ready to fight.

“Celestial mountain!” In the distance, more and more people arrived and stared at the mountain. Suddenly, explosions and rumbling filled the air. The celestial mountain descended and crashed onto a bridge. A terrifying Qi surged out over them.

Marks of the Path, there might be Marks of the Path inside!, thought the crowd. Finally, someone flew towards the mountain.

“Die!” Millions of threads of Qi crashed onto that person and they died instantly. The whole crowd went silent. Nobody dared move recklessly anymore. Nobody went to take that person’s treasures, either.

“If anyone touches the celestial mountain, they die! Let’s fight first!” said the leader of the Black Shark Army coldly. Everybody looked solemn and respectful. Death strength surrounded the Black Shark Army. It was like the battle could start anytime.

“Die!” shouted someone furiously. They were already prepared. All the members of Jalacandra Fairyland started running towards their enemies. Death Qi dashed to the skies. The Jalacandra Fairyland’s army was powerful, but the Black Shark Army was dangerous. They had to deal with them first.

“Life!” said Lin Feng, flashing ahead. Life and death lights rose to the skies. Five or six people were killed on the way and fell down from the sky.

“The Circle of Life!” A gigantic life and death pattern surrounded

the people from Jalacandra Fairyland.

“Get ready to use death strength, I’ll attack!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly when he saw that all the members of the Black Shark Army were running towards them. Life and death lights dashed to the skies and surrounded them.

“Condense death strength!” shouted Lin Feng explosively. Bai Ling and the others knew how strong Lin Feng was, they kept releasing death strength into the life and death pattern. Then, the life and death pattern surrounded the crowd from the Black Shark Army and turned into a vortex.

“Die!”

The life and death energies kept rotating. Life energy turned into death energy, death energy turned into life energy, both attacking the Black Shark Army. Instantly, many corpses started falling from the sky. It was a spectacular scene. The crowd in the distance didn’t get involved, they were just astonished as they watched this.

Chapter 1884: In The Celestial Mountain

The two armies, the Black Sharks and Jalacandra Fairyland, fought. Their energies blotted out the sky. It was the first time Lin Feng had participated in such a terrifying war. The weakest cultivators there were medium-level Hell emperors. His eyes were pure black and he kept releasing immortal and death energies, looking like a warlord. A terrifying life and death strength rotated around him.

“Kill him!” People from the Black Shark Army saw that Lin Feng controlled two sorts of strength. He had killed many people with his death energies already. Lin Feng sensed a terrifying Qi surging towards him. His life and death strength rotated defensively.

Someone surrounded by death and fire energies appeared and threw themselves at Lin Feng, running towards Lin Feng’s vortex.

“Hmph!” Aoxu groaned coldly. A blood dragon punch stuck out, churning the air. Behind his opponent, a terrifying silhouette appeared, a king of Hell and fire. The area turned into a small purgatory.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng. That person moved towards his life and death pattern, and death strength moved towards them. A black flame appeared behind that person and surrounded them.

What a powerful Qi!, thought Lin Feng. He didn’t continue attacking the man. Aoxu could take care of him, and he could kill other people.

Explosions kept shaking everything, and cultivators kept falling from the sky. Apart from Aoxu, Qin Yu was also a terrifying cultivator. He had a mysterious spirit, a life and death cloth. People couldn’t get near him, and he was displaying exceptional strength.

However, the cultivators of the Black Shark Army were terrifying

too. The battle was fierce, and people from Jalacandra Fairyland kept dying one after another. One of the warrior from the Black Shark Army was terrifying, he had netherworld ghostly claws and could cut people apart.

More and more people gathered, but they didn't dare get involved. The two armies were fighting, but if any outsider tried to steal treasures from the celestial mountain, then some extremely strong cultivators would definitely kill them.

What a terrifying battle. Dozens and dozens of people died every second!, thought the crowd. They were stupefied. The two armies were terrifying. Nobody was in front of Lin Feng anymore, he kept evading. A netherworld silhouette moved towards him like dark lightning. Ghostly claws cut apart everything in their path.

However, Aomo attacked the ghostly claws with a chant, and a demon punch lashed out, destroying the claws. Aomo looked at that silhouette coldly.

Lin Feng didn't know how strong Aomo was. The dragon had grown up inside his body. They were very close, as Lin Feng had raised him. Now Aomo was fighting, and Lin Feng had the impression he was terrifyingly strong.

The atmosphere kept exploding from conflicting energies. More claws appeared and turned into five black lights striking at Aomo. Aomo blocked them, but wounds appeared on his body and he started bleeding. Lin Feng dragged him backwards.

"Freeze!" When Bai Ling saw that strike, he released ice energy. The one with the scary claws moved away. That person was dangerously strong, a high-level Hell emperor. Lin Feng had just become a medium-level Hell emperor, and there were many high-level Hell emperors there. Some of them had even reached the top of the Huang Qi layer. They were all incredible combatants.

Lin Feng shouted furiously, sword energies whistled. His opponent was surprised at the sudden shift. At that moment, Lin

Feng moved both hands . Another life and death pattern appeared and rotated. All sorts of energies penetrated into the life and death pattern.

His spirit appeared. Lin Feng turned into a shadow as he jumped into the deployment spell. His pattern was dazzling and life and death energies pulsed out.

“Life and Death Destructive Illusion!” shouted a voice. The atmosphere was suddenly sealed. However, the life and death pattern was an illusion, drawing in the cultivator.

“An illusion, a life and death deployment spell!” shouted someone furiously, retreating. But Qin Yu arrived behind him, his life and death cloth turned into a gigantic hand and imprisoned that cultivator. The deployment spell bombarded his head and he turned grey. His life energy even turned into death energy.

“Fire!” shouted Qin Yu coldly. A terrifying Hell fire appeared and surrounded that person. He started burning.

“Lin Feng is casting deployment spells, help him!” shouted Bai Ling extremely loudly. Some people landed around Lin Feng to protect him, all of them powerful and skilled. They saw that Lin Feng’s life and death deployment spells were extremely powerful. If they could help him, then it would be beneficial for everyone.

Lin Feng kept performing hand seals, the life and death pattern became gigantic and people from the Black Shark Army pulled back.

“Someone is stealing the celestial mountain!” At that moment, someone ran towards the celestial mountain, everybody looked at him and Qi dashed to the skies.

Idiot!, thought Lin Feng. At that moment, many people were staring greedily at the celestial mountain. Even if that person could steal the celestial mountain, they would die in any event.

As expected, everybody started moving when they saw that that

person was trying to steal the mountain. The Black Shark Army and Jalacandra Fairyland stopped fighting and everyone moved towards that person. They were fighting over the celestial mountain, so they couldn't let anyone else take it.

Energies rose to the skies and surrounded him. At the same time, people attacked the celestial mountain. They also wanted to know what was inside it.

The celestial mountain was extremely hard and seemed indestructible. However, when the energies crashed onto it, a crack appeared. People's hearts were filled with ardor. Did that celestial mountain contain Marks of the Path?

"Immortal energy, and demon energy." Lin Feng frowned. He could sense the incredible energies emerging from the mountain.

"Break!" shouted someone explosively. The mountain finally broke apart and turned into a million pieces. People twitched in astonishment.

There weren't Marks of the Path inside. There was a person!

The person looked like an ancient god as he suddenly opened his eyes. His king energies dashed to the skies as he released heaven, earth, and demonic energies. He looked like a demon king!

"It's him!" Lin Feng was astonished and froze for a moment. He had already seen that face!

Back then, in Jiu You, he had gone to the shrines.

He had already seen that proud young man there in the central area of the twelve shrines. He looked like a god, and all the shrines wanted to recruit him. It was the young man with the king body!

Back then, everybody wanted to recruit him, and in the end, the young man had chosen the Demon Shrine. Now he looked like a demon king!

I'm a very fast learner, I'm already a medium-level emperor. But

that guy is already a high-level emperor and he has an immortal king body type. No wonder the people all wanted to recruit him. He was already gifted, but with the help of the shrine, he practiced cultivation even faster!, thought Lin Feng. That guy practiced cultivation even faster than him! Lin Feng was shocked, finding the Celestial Country even more mysterious. That guy was from one of the shrines, and now he had descended from the Milky Way!

Chapter 1885: Pathfinder Peak

“Who are you? Why were you in the mountain? Why did you come down from the Milky Way?” asked the leader of the Black Shark Army. People who touched the Yellow Springs or the Milky Way could die, now that young man had descended from the sky. People were obviously astonished.

People fought over that mountain and in the end, there was someone inside. Amusing!, thought the people staring at the young man with a king body. He had to be the descendant of an ancient king, a noteworthy person.

The young man glanced at the strong cultivators of the Black Shark Army indifferently. He didn't say anything. He glanced around as if he didn't know where he was.

“I asked you something!” said the leader of the Black Shark Army when he saw that the young man didn't reply to him. He looked furious.

The young man turned to him, and suddenly, demon Qi emerged from his eyes, and thunder echoed out. The eyes of the cultivator from the Black Shark Army suddenly felt extremely sore. His will was being attacked!

“Immortal king and demon strength!” the strong cultivator of the Black Shark Army blurted out as he shook violently. Then, the young man jumped and a trail of immortal Qi appeared behind him and turned into a vortex.

“That person has killed countless people! His king body is incredible. He's a dangerous person!” Aoxu declared cautiously. Even though he was from the Dragon Clan, he also found people who had king bodies incredible. They were always extremely strong!

“Let's go. That guy is here to kill. He will kill all of us to

practice,” said Aoxu. That young man had already started killing cultivators from the Black Shark Army. Demon lights kept emerging from his eyes and killing people. He was a real murderer.

The members of Jalacandra Fairyland started dispersing. After a short time, the young man slaughtered the strong cultivator of the Black Shark Army.

He didn’t stop releasing immortal and demon energies at all. His silhouette flickered and he continued butchering the people from the Black Shark Army.

“Die!” Many people from the Black Shark Army and Jalacandra Fairyland were injured. However, there were still many people who released energies and attacked the young man.

However, at that moment, the young man looked like a death god. He proudly stood in the sky and absorbed the death Qi his opponents released.

The young man flashed ahead, and the strong cultivators were shaking. He was too terrifying!

The young man pointed a finger at a strong cultivator, Qi emerged and pierced through his head. His corpse fell down from the sky, a one-shot kill.

Corpses kept falling down from the sky and into the Yellow Springs. The crowd looking on was astonished. The strong cultivators from the Black Shark Army died one after another. What a tragedy for all those valiant fighters. They were insignificant in front of that young man, and he was slaughtering them!

“That guy is killing people, but not taking their treasures. He lets them and their treasures fall into the Yellow Springs, the treasures are lost forever.” Qin Yu was astonished. That guy was a true slayer.

“He’s just practicing. This place is just somewhere to become

stronger for him.”

The crowd was astonished when they saw what the young man was doing. He didn't even care about precious treasures anymore. Only Lin Feng understood that the Demon Shrine had sent him there, so he didn't lack skills and Ancient scriptures. He didn't need more treasures!

“I feel ashamed of being inferior in front of such people. Is he from Hell? He came from the Milky Way, so where does he actually come from?” asked Qin Yu. He didn't understand. Most people in the Celestial Country thought of the territory as two territories, one for terrifying battles and one for easier battles. But when facing such a terrifying cultivator, they could only question themselves.

Some mysterious people understood that Hell wasn't the only place next to the Celestial Country. However, they didn't understand the details.

Lin Feng was staring at the young man in astonishment. The cultivation world was a cruel place, and so was this person. Lin Feng stared at the young man and wondered how he could improve his life and death cultivation.

“Let's go!” said Bai Ling. Everybody nodded. That guy was just a butcher. He was going to kill them if they stayed. Taking such a risk was useless.

On the side of the cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland, more than twenty cultivators were still left. They had suffered great losses. Lin Feng understood how those geniuses thought now. When they became high-level emperors, they chose their own path!

In the Holy City, at university, there are champions. Ji Chang is the champion of Champion University. He could become the champion of the city. Such cultivators also choose their own path and what they want to do in life!, thought Lin Feng. He felt intense pressure and had the sensation he wasn't progressing quickly

enough. He hadn't been back to the Holy City for a long time. He was wondering how strong Ji Chang had become.

Lin Feng and the others left. Meteorites continued falling from the sky, but there were only twenty-some people left in Lin Feng's group. They had also obtained many great items, anyway. Everybody felt dispirited though. Even Aoxu felt dispirited. The young man was too strong!

"There are many strong cultivators in the world. Perseverance and determination are mandatory. Cultivators have to focus on cultivation to become extremely strong," said Lin Feng, walking next to Aoxu.

Aoxu frowned and looked at Lin Feng warmly. "You look like a low-level emperor, but you're a medium-level emperor. Your life and death deployment spells are deadly. You're a very talented person. Were you amazed by the strong cultivators of the Milky Way battlefield?"

"I can't control other people's strength. I can only control my own life," Lin Feng smiled.

Aoxu smiled back and said, "Indeed. In normal conditions, I would have tried to fight against him. However, when I saw how he killed people, I gave up. I felt like trash."

"I see," Lin Feng nodded. "Someday you'll achieve enlightenment, and you'll fight against him."

"Indeed. People from the Dragon Clan are incredibly talented. I'll definitely try to fight against him someday!" said Aoxu, smiling happily as he thought about that day. He gazed into the distance, where there was a bridge above Yellow Springs. There was a peak sitting there, and many people were floating around it. They looked hesitant and maintained a distance between themselves and the peak.

“Within the Milky Way battlefield and the Yellow Springs, there is an ancient peak there!” said the startled Lin Feng. The peak was even moving, how strange!

“Eh?” Aoxu was surprised and stared at the peak with him. “Apart from treasures, there’s also such a place in the Milky Way battlefield? It looks dangerous. It might be worth it, though! Let’s go and see!”

Their band sped up, chasing the moving hill. The peak was so strange, looking like a mirage. There were some big words on it, but they looked indistinct and blurry.

“Pathfinder Peak!” read Lin Feng. He was astonished.

The expressions of Aoxu and the others changed drastically. “I’ve heard about the Pathfinder Peak but I’ve never seen it,” the dragon admitted.

“What is that place?” asked Lin Feng.

Qin Yu said, “According to legends, the Pathfinder Peak is a place where you can find Celestial Pathfinder Plates. They are very helpful for cultivators.”

“I see. Why are those people hesitating and not moving closer?” asked Lin Feng.

“Many people have never come back from the Pathfinder Peak, it’s like you go in and can’t come back” explained Qin Yu calmly.

Lin Feng was astonished. What a mysterious place!

Chapter 1886: How to Walk On the Path

“Aoxu, is the Pathfinder Peak a forbidden area?” Lin Feng asked Aoxu.

Aoxu smiled and shook his head. “It’s not. Even though it’s the first time I’ve seen the Pathfinder Peak, I’ve heard about it many times. Some people from the Dragon Clan have been there. After coming back, their comprehension had increased a lot. They had also become much stronger. However, they held their tongues regarding what they saw and found there. They’ve always told me that if I found it, I had to go, though!”

Aoxu then spoke up and said, “Let’s go and see the Pathfinder Peak! We can’t miss such an opportunity!” before rushing towards the peak. He disappeared among the crowd.

“Indeed, we have to go since we’ve found it!” said Lin Feng, smiling and following after him. Aomo followed him, and they both disappeared into the crowd.

Lin Feng headed straight to the Pathfinder Peak, and felt the atmosphere change drastically around him. There was a special Qi here, rising from the grass. It looked like another world without an exit. There were many people seated cross-legged with their eyes closed. There were also many skeletons lying on the ground.

This place is really dangerous, thought Lin Feng when he saw the skeletons. Many skeletons were not complete, with some of their body parts were missing. Others were surrounded by a terrifying strength which had not dispersed.

“People who dare come to the Pathfinder Peak are at least medium-level emperors, but most of them are high-level emperors. At such a cultivation level, flesh doesn’t rot, which means that those skeletons lost their flesh because of an external strength!” muttered Lin Feng. Qin Yu and Bai Ling also arrived and came up next to Lin Feng. When they saw that place, they were as

astonished as he had been.

“The Celestial Pathfinder Plates can be found here.” Aoxu was gazing into the distance. There were some dazzling lights dancing about a gigantic stone there.

“According to legends, it’s easy to come here, but difficult to leave, as if this place is sealed. There is a passage somewhere in that valley I think,” said Qin Yu, walking slowly towards the Celestial Pathfinder Plates.

A light shot down out of nowhere, spotlighting Qin Wu. Qin Wu looked calm and serene. He slowly walked towards the stone.

Suddenly, the Celestial Pathfinder Plates became even more dazzling and Qin Yu disappeared inside them.

“Kowtow before the Celestial Plate!” said a mysterious voice coming from the stone. Qin Yu attacked the stone with his energies and jumped towards it. In return, a terrifying strength emerged from the stone and smashed into him.

Qin Yu waved his hands and a stone hurled out from it. He barely managed to scratch the gigantic stone with it, as he hadn’t used much power

“Why would someone who doesn’t follow the Way ask for his path?” asked an ancient voice from the stone. Lin Feng and the others were astonished. The people around who were meditating looked calm and unsurprised. They obviously knew that there was such a thing already. Unruly people couldn’t ask for their path!

Qin Yu’s eyes twinkled. Someone who didn’t follow the Way?

Even though he was really strong and famous in Hell, Qin Wu wasn’t that strong compared to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate.

Qin Wu released more energies and attacked the stone again. However, the stone counterattacked even more brutally. The attack crashed onto Qin Wu and he groaned with pain as he was force back and started bleeding.

“What an aggressive Celestial Plate!” murmured Aoxu. He looked excited. Opening the door of that stone was going to be difficult.

“Aomo,” Lin Feng said. Aomo turned into smoke and went back into Lin Feng’s body. He had grown up in there, he could go back inside as he wished.

Lin Feng walked up to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate, took a deep breath as he calmed himself, and stood before it.

“Kowtow before the Celestial Plate,” demanded the voice.

Lin Feng released life and death lights and said, “I ask for my path regarding the path of life and death.”

The life and death lights penetrated into the stone. A strange light appeared around the stone. The whole stone turned into a death stone, like a mirror.

Suddenly, death lights emerged from the stone and moved towards Lin Feng. He frowned. That was death Qi, but life Qi had appeared. Life energy flew throughout his body. His body was suddenly filled with incredible life energies.

How dangerous! I understand why there are so many corpses!, thought Lin Feng. The Celestial Pathfinder Plate had a life. It could counterattack, and if Lin Feng didn’t understand life and death energies, he would have died.

Dazzling lights appeared and the Celestial Pathfinder Plate turned into a mirror. Lin Feng could see himself and strength surrounding him. He was astonished.

“Come in!” said someone. Someone who was seated with their eyes closed appeared before him and spoke to Lin Feng.

“Alright!” said Lin Feng before entering the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. He disappeared inside.

“Surprisingly, you can go inside the Celestial Pathfinder Plate!” Aoxu and the others were shocked. They wouldn’t be stuck inside

this world that way.

Lin Feng entered the Celestial Pathfinder Plate and appeared somewhere else. There were people seated cross-legged all around him, and there were more corpses, too. There was one exit, and it was also a Celestial Pathfinder Plate.

There are two levels to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate?, thought Lin Feng, glancing around. There were so many people there. What was this strange place?

No wonder it was easy to go inside and difficult to come out! Some people were stuck, but not dead!

“Kowtow before the Celestial Plate,” said a voice again. Lin Feng frowned and stared at the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. He released life and death lights again, and presented them to the second Celestial Pathfinder Plate.

The lights penetrated into the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. Once again, the stone lit up, energies emerged, and penetrated into Lin Feng’s body. This time, he started shaking violently and had the sensation he was going to faint.

“You want to bring about your own destruction. You overestimated yourself!” spoke up a black-haired person coldly, after opening his eyes. However, Lin Feng just looked around again, he had the sensation he had died once.

“If you don’t use your mind to follow the Way, how can you ask for your path?” said the ancient voice resonating in Lin Feng’s brain. Lin Feng was astonished and looked dizzy.

Lin Feng finally understood the purpose of that stone, he might be able to find his path with it!

Chapter 1887: Forcing The Way

Lin Feng had used life and death strength to pass the first challenge of the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. He had been bombarded by death energy and his godly awareness had been shaken violently.

I walk on the path of life and death and you threaten my life with my own path. If you don't use your mind to follow the Way, how can you ask for your path?

Getting in is easy, but getting out isn't. My life and death cultivation is extremely aggressive. Therefore, the Celestial Pathfinder Plate's counterattacks are equally brutal and aggressive, able to kill me, thought Lin Feng. The more aggressive his attacks were, the more aggressive the counterattacks were.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and multicolored lights emerged from his third eye as he focused.

—

Time passed as he visualized the Sky Palace.

“My Godly awareness palace has stopped improving. I need to make it evolve!” Lin Feng said to himself. His godly awareness was powerful, and the Sky Palace had even started appearing. He needed to harmonize his cultivation.

Of course, Lin Feng also had the Nine Netherworlds Demoniac Song. Killing him wasn't easy.

Lin Feng looked at the Celestial Pathfinder Plate from where he was seated cross-legged. The black-haired cultivator walked up to Lin Feng and stated coldly, “You are not allowed to go to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate again before I leave!”

Lin Feng frowned.

He looked at the Celestial Pathfinder Plate again and released life

and death lights at it. The Celestial Pathfinder Plate started fading. Then, a gigantic wave of death energy rolled and crashed against Lin Feng, his soul shook violently.

“The Circle of Life!” Lin Feng had already prepared and had released his life strength. However, the death energies were incredible and still made his soul shake violently. It was as if he had died once again.

The death energies left an imprint on his soul. He suddenly opened his eyes and his life energy kept turning into death energy, which turned into life energy again, and repeated the cycle.

“You really want to die!” shouted the black-haired cultivator coldly.

When Lin Feng attacked the Celestial Plate, the counterattacks also struck the others.

Many people looked at Lin Feng coldly. However, Lin Feng didn’t care. He released life and death lights and his life and death pattern appeared on the ground. Life and death energies condensed around him.

Lin Feng bombarded the ground with punches. The life and death lights kept rotating around him.

“If I don’t come here to ask for my path, how could I achieve enlightenment!” said Lin Feng. His life and death lights then bombarded the Celestial Pathfinder Plate again. A terrifying strength emerged. People suddenly opened their eyes and looked furious. The death energies kept pulsing out and bombarding people’s souls.

“The Path of Death can unlock the door!” Lin Feng sensed the death energies and continued releasing life energy at the same time. When he was bombarded by death energy, his death energy turned into green life energy.

However, the death energy was too powerful and made his soul

shake violently. He started chanting the Song of the Nine Netherworlds. Lin Feng was suddenly surrounded by deadly death energies.

The others were bombarded by aggressive death strength and looked at him coldly. The black-haired cultivator said coldly, "You'll die!"

"Kill that guy!" shouted people. Lin Feng sensed energies surrounding him.

"If you don't use your mind to follow the Way, die and ask!" Lin Feng stood up, his eyes ice-cold. Life and death lights rose to the skies. He continued singing the Song of the Nine Netherworlds and released his dazzling godly awareness. His energies enveloped him, before raging out at the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. The crowd was astonished and staring at Lin Feng. He was insane!

A sound spread in the air, death intent reached a high level, everybody sensed the death energy penetrating into their soul. They all had the impression they were going to die.

Lin Feng raised his head. Death Qi whistled around him, and he had the sensation he was going to die.

Life and death, my death is my life, how could my path kill me?, thought Lin Feng. Suddenly, he was filled with an endless amount of life energy. He was dead and alive at the same time!

Sharp lights filled the air. Lin Feng's life and death pattern kept rotating, and at that moment, his life energy entirely turned into death energy. The life and death pattern was filled with death Qi which rose to the skies.

This guy is brave!, thought the astonished black-haired man. At that moment, deadly energies moved towards Lin Feng. However, his godly awareness was blocked because of the death strength. He couldn't release it too much because he would die otherwise.

Lin Feng remained focused, ignoring the others. In his eyes,

there were only life and death lights.

He waved his hands. People's expressions changed drastically. Lin Feng closed his eyes and released all his soul strength towards the door.

He's insane!, thought the crowd. They wanted to kill Lin Feng. Usually, they were very careful when knocking on the stone plate. However Lin Feng was using his full strength. He didn't care about them.

Life strength invaded the whole space, which turned grey. Death swelled a moment later.

A strong cultivator's face turned grey. He fell down and stopped moving. He was dead.

If they had known Lin Feng would try to force the way, they would have killed him first!

Lin Feng closed his eyes. His body was filled with life and death energies.

"My life is my death, my death is my life, life and death are my path. How could I fear death?" said Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's soul had been cleansed by life and death energies many times. Lin Feng raised his arms and condensed life and death strength. He had to accept both life and death to achieve enlightenment.

The Celestial Pathfinder Plate shook violently. Death strength surged everywhere. More and more people collapsed and died in the room. They were all stronger than Lin Feng, but the counterattack of the Celestial Pathfinder Plate was much more powerful than them.

At that moment, an even more terrifying death strength penetrated into Lin Feng's soul. However, Lin Feng just said, "Life!"

The death energy turned into life energy. Lin Feng turned into a halo of life and death lights. His body shone brightly.

“Enlighten me on the path of life and death.” Lin Feng’s eyes were filled with dazzling life and death lights which moved towards the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. The energies intertwined.

“You have already achieved rudimentary accomplishments on the path of life and death, now you need to ask yourself about your mind.” The Celestial Pathfinder Plate turned into a mirror. Lin Feng stared at it. He had already passed this challenge.

Lin Feng turned around, there were corpses everywhere, but there were still some people who were still alive. They hadn’t been killed by the death energy.

However, they didn’t look at Lin Feng angrily. Only one person glanced at Lin Feng.

“Never let fears invade your heart. The only path is the path of enlightenment,” said that person bowing before Lin Feng, “Thank you very much for what you’ve shown us today.”

Lin Feng was surprised and smiled calmly, “Don’t mention it, it was not on purpose. And they all died because of me.”

Then, Lin Feng crossed the door and went to the next place. What would happen in the next room?

Chapter 1888: The Path of Life and Death is Complex

Lin Feng crossed the door and arrived in another room. As before, there was a Celestial Pathfinder Plate. However, there was nobody else in that room. He was completely alone with the celestial doorway.

Lin Feng walked up to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate and sat down cross-legged before it. Strange lights surrounded him. A voice emerged from the Celestial Pathfinder Plate, “Use your heart to knock on the door and ask for your path.”

Lin Feng looked calm as sharp lights emerged from his eyes. They turned into life and death lights and penetrated into the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. However, the Celestial Pathfinder Plate didn’t react.

“Use your heart to knock on the door and ask for your path,” repeated the voice. Lin Feng frowned. What heart?

Lin Feng was seated there and looked pensive. On the path of cultivation, you had to do things wholeheartedly.

Back then, he had started studying the path of life and death. He had to do it wholeheartedly, just wanting to do it wasn’t sufficient.

The heart was the most important thing.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and started meditating and thinking about the path of life and death. In his mind, life and death stamps appeared and moved to the Celestial Pathfinder Plate.

The Celestial Pathfinder Plate started shaking. Lin Feng sensed his godly awareness shake violently. He suddenly started feeling a bit sad and grieving. It was the grief of life and death.

He remembered Liu Cang Lan, who had died for his country. He felt grief for Yan Yu Ping Sheng, his wonderful teacher. He also felt

sad for Wen Ao Xue, an incredible woman who had ended up dead because of her family.

He also felt sad for the man and his daughter in the village in Hell. They were ordinary people, but in that world, they had no freedom. Cultivators didn't care about those people's lives.

In that world, nobody could escape from death. It was omnipresent.

That's my way of walking on the path of death and life, thought Lin Feng serenely. He released his godly awareness again. It sparkled, and life and death lights continued raining on the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. The air whistled in reaction. Lin Feng continued feeling grief, but in that grief, he also sensed vitality. Life and death were indivisible.

Lin Feng felt very weak before the plate now. He felt tiny and scared.

He was afraid. His strength allowed him to control other people's lives, either by letting them live or by killing them, or by protecting his loved ones as well. He had created a small world and had put his loved ones inside because he was afraid to let them stay in the outside world.

What was he afraid of? He was afraid that Meng Qing would turn into an animal again. He was afraid that his family members could be killed. He was afraid that Qiu Yue Xin had lost control over herself. He was afraid because Yi Ren Lei had dumped him like that. He wanted to control everything in his life. Therefore, he needed to become stronger.

"You're asking me how I feel deep inside?" Lin Feng sighed. He looked at the Celestial Pathfinder Plate and tried to understand how he really felt.

Lin Feng stood up and took a step forward. Dazzling lights appeared before him. He calmed down as he infused the door with

life and death energies again. He forced himself to have a heart as calm as still water.

“I chose the path of life and death, are you asking me to use my heart or to stop using it.” Lin Feng stared at the door. Sharp lights emerged from his eyes.

“Who can reject the world of mortals on the path of cultivation? Nobody can escape from life and death!” declared that voice in Lin Feng’s brain.

Dazzling lights emerged from Lin Feng’s body, “I’ve already started walking on that path. There is nothing I can’t do. I can reject the world of mortals if I wish! Destroy!”

After that, Lin Feng released terrifying energies and bombarded the Celestial Pathfinder Plate. However, at that moment, a silhouette appeared there. It was his own silhouette!

Lin Feng walked forwards and realized he was now at the top of the mountain. He could sense the breeze brush against his body. His clothes were fluttering in the wind. He had just arrived, but it felt as if he had spent an entire life there.

Lin Feng walked to a gigantic stone and sat down on it cross-legged. He closed his eyes and forgot about the outside world.

—

Three days later, at the top of the Pathfinder Peak, life and death intent were intertwining and appearing in Lin Feng’s brain. He was also releasing life and death energies.

One month later, Lin Feng was still surrounded by life and death lights. He looked calm and serene. Sharp lights were emerging from his third eye.

“Eh?” At that moment, in the outside world, people around the Pathfinder Peak looked surprised. Their eyes were twinkling. They could see life and death energies emerging from the Pathfinder Peak.

Three months passed. On that day, the meditating Lin Feng finally opened his eyes. They were filled with demonic will. There were two life and death discs in his eyes. One could sense life and death strength just looking at his eyes.

In the air, terrifying demon energies pulsed. It was as if the Milky Way had appeared above Lin Feng's body. There was demon Kalpa strength there, too. Lin Feng flashed forwards and left the Pathfinder Peak.

"There's someone!" Outside of the Pathfinder Peak, some people saw Lin Feng come out and were astonished. It was said that most people never came back out. The Pathfinder Peak was easy to go to, but difficult to leave.

"The Milky Way is shaking, what kind of strength is that?" Some people came out of the Milky Way and moved towards Lin Feng, they wanted to ask him questions about the Pathfinder Peak.

"What did you see on the Pathfinder Peak?" asked someone. People surrounded Lin Feng and stared at him. People who had never been there were curious.

"You can ask for guidance about your cultivation, obviously," replied Lin Feng. That person was cold and impolite. The Milky Way continued shaking.

Some sounds spread in the air. It was as if the Milky Way had been broken. Something strange was happening. Someone demanded, "What did you find there?"

Lin Feng glanced at them in a cold way. His eyes contained life and death intent.

"If you don't dare go there, why do you ask me?" said Lin Feng.

That person shouted coldly, "You want to die!" as he attacked.

Lin Feng's eyes were filled with life and death energies. Suddenly, lights emerged from his eyes and moved straight into that person's. In counter, a gigantic hand appeared and moved

towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng flashed away and released life and death sword energies. The man had the sensation that his soul was going to explode. Death sword energies pierced through his head. He gave a horrible shriek as his face turned grey, he looked dead.

“Die!” said Lin Feng. Sword energies continued piercing through his brain. Then, his body slowly fell from the sky and down into the Yellow Springs.

Lin Feng glanced at the others coldly and said, “If you don’t dare go there, why do you ask me?”

Demon Kalpa strength pulsed, it was as if the Milky Way had been broken. Lin Feng was surprised at the feeling.

“I’m going to get cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, how strong will they be since I’m a medium-level emperor?” Lin Feng’s eyes looked ice-cold. The crowd around moved further away from him.

Thunderclaps boomed. Kalpa strength fell from the sky and rained down on Lin Feng’s body furiously with its first wave. His clothes completely disappeared, and his silhouette had become blurry, too. Demon Kalpa strength flowed throughout his body.

How terrifying. The Kalpa strength is much scarier than when I had the strength of a low-level emperor. If my physical body didn’t have the strength of a medium-level emperor, my flesh would have been crushed!, thought Lin Feng grimly. When the Kalpa strength cleansed his body a sixth time, he started bleeding as wounds appeared on his body.

However, when this demon Kalpa cleansing finally ended, Lin Feng’s body was already all shiny and unmarred. He had recovered in the blink of an eye, as if he had been reborn.

When the seventh wave of Kalpa strength pounded down on him, Lin Feng had the sensation his soul was going to get kicked out of

his body. He fell down on his knees and his face was deathly pale.

“Life!” Suddenly, life strength flowed through Lin Feng’s body. He raised his head and stared at the sky. The Kalpa strength kept coming down. Just like the previous time, the last waves of Kalpa strength were the most powerful ones.

Chapter 1889: Making the Skies Furious Again

However, Lin Feng didn't look like he was suffering, he looked excited. He stood up again, like a powerful mountain. He was defying the heavens!

“Kacha!” When the eighth wave of Kalpa strength bombarded his body, his muscles shook violently, and he burst out bleeding again. His soul kept shaking violently.

The Kalpa strength felt like millions of snakes inside his muscles. The crowd was staring at him in amazement. Surprisingly, a medium-level Hell emperor was being cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, and the Milky Way even started breaking. That was an incredible skill!

When the last wave of Deva-Mara Kalpa strength appeared in the sky, he was still surrounded by powerful life and death lights.

Thunder kept rolling, and the Milky Way had turned into a dark demon cloud. People felt like they were suffocating around him.

Finally, the ninth wave attacked his body violently, like a million snakes trying to enter his skin.

“Destroy!” said Lin Feng coldly. Death meaning rose to the skies. Sword lights cut everything and countered the wave of Kalpa strength. It was as if everything were collapsing around him.

“Life!” Lin Feng released life energies. The mighty Deva-Mara Kalpa strength kept tempering his body. He had the impression he was going to die.

Blood splashed out of his mouth. Lin Feng slowly sat down and released even more life Qi to surround every corner of his body.

Is he hurt?, thought the crowd, staring at Lin Feng. The demon cloud slowly dispersed. However, the terrifying strength was still

pressing down. He had to be injured!... At that moment, some people's silhouettes flickered. Lin Feng's skill was incredible, he probably had some incredible Ancient scriptures!

I'm a demon cultivator, I broke through to the Huang Qi layer using my physical body. If I had his skill, I would become extremely powerful!, thought a demon emperor, staring at Lin Feng. Demon lights appeared, he looked at Lin Feng greedily with his black eyes.

Silhouettes flickered. A group of strong cultivators had surrounded Lin Feng and looked at him coldly.

"Give me your skill and I'll help you get rid of these people!" said one person coldly. His long black hair looked as sharp as blades, like a scary ancient demon.

"Kill him, that's all!" said someone coldly. Many people looked at that demon emperor coldly.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and glanced at the people around him coldly. "If you want my skill, come and get it!"

Eyes glittered with greed. One of them shouted furiously and released death strength to surround Lin Feng, who was still seated. He looked unperturbed. He absorbed the death energies and a life and death pattern appeared. He waved his hands, and life and death lights appeared.

One of the people flashed to attack, the earth and sky shook violently. It was like endless ferocious animals had been unleashed to attack him!

Lin Feng moved forwards. Lights shone, a Purple Tank appeared and explosions detonated around him.

That cultivator raised his hands and a powerful earth spear appeared, also containing deadly empty space cosmic energies.

"Die!" shouted that cultivator coldly. His spear shot at Lin Feng.

“Illusion Destruction!” retorted Lin Feng, throwing his life and death pattern. The life and death pattern started spinning as an illusion swept over the area.

Lin Feng flashed away as more marks appeared, and a great deployment spell materialized. It contained a terrifying strength. Besides, the golden deployment spell kept spreading more and more.

“If you don’t kill me, I guarantee you, you won’t survive,” said Lin Feng, smiling coldly. He didn’t stop moving, staying in motion. The deployment spell turned into a dangerous illusion!

“Hmph!” The cultivator who had just talked groaned coldly. He moved in a blur of speed. In front of him, eight spears appeared and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng waved his hands, and the life and death pattern became lit up brightly, collided with the spears. At the same time, death intent emerged from his eyes.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He suddenly disappeared, a void sword appeared and pierced through his opponent’s head with death intent.

After Lin Feng’s brain had been imprinted, he had managed to stamp his Nihilism Sword Scriptures with death strength. His Nihilism Sword attacks were now much more powerful. Therefore, even before Lin Feng was cleansed by the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, he had killed someone like this.

That person still shouted furiously. Millions of spears reappeared and collided against Lin Feng’s sword. However, at that moment, Lin Feng landed in front of him and another life and death stamp appeared and crashed onto his body.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with death energies. The soul of Lin Feng’s enemy shook violently. Lin Feng raised his fist and there was explosion. His enemy’s head directly blew apart.

At the same time, sword Qi emerged, and he cut apart his opponent's soul.

More bright lights suddenly moved towards Lin Feng, gleaming and sharp. His soul suddenly started shaking.

“Cut!” An ancient mountain moved towards Lin Feng. As the second strong cultivator attacked, some other people also attacked Lin Feng at the same time.

Lin Feng released his bestial consciousness, and a lake of black water appeared everywhere, shocking everyone. Lin Feng released all his wind cosmic energies into his legs and retreated. The earth and sky were shaking violently as multiple energies crashed together.

Lin Feng descended on his deployment spell. Golden lights glittered and strobed. At the same time, destructive illusion energies surrounded those strong cultivators.

The onlookers were all staring at the Milky Way, it was pulsing furiously, and its strength was pressing down on everyone.

Lin Feng released all his desolate cosmic energy. People's faces changed drastically as they saw the results. He had just been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa, why were the skies furious again?

“What kind of strength is that?” Even though they were all well-taught and knowledgeable, they didn't recognize that kind of strength. Why were the skies furious?

Lin Feng raised his head as some explosive strength condensed in the Milky Way. It was extremely oppressive and descending from the sky.

“Come!” said Lin Feng coldly. The skies were furious. Explosions erupted. Lin Feng's deployment spell kept undulating. Some splits appeared on the deployment spell, and drove Lin Feng down onto his knees, he was bleeding severely. However, he looked indestructible. He stood up again and said, “Destroy!”

Lin Feng's physical body was being attacked. The strong cultivators were still stuck in the deployment spell, and his face was deathly pale as he stared at the energies in the sky.

Then, a second wave of strength bombarded him.

"No...!" shouted someone. However, explosions and rumbling sounds erupted again, and Lin Feng was struck down to his knees again. Back then when the skies had attacked him, he had used the Celestial Evolution Chessboard to protect himself. Now, he just endured the attacks with his physical strength.

"Pfew..." Lin Feng took a deep breath. His physical body was being destroyed by that strength, but he kept recovering. He coldly glanced at the crowd. Those people were high-level emperors, but their physical strength couldn't be compared with Lin Feng's.

What kind of physical strength is that? How come he attracts the fury of the skies?, thought the demon cultivator who had wisely retreated. A third wave of energies crashed down onto Lin Feng. He had just recovered and now he was being repeatedly assaulted again. He fell down on his knees once again, and finally just sat down on the illusion spell again and closed his eyes. Terrifying life energy appeared all around him.

The Qi finally dispersed. The watchers didn't dare attack Lin Feng anymore. Even though he was just a medium-level Hell emperor, he was really terrifying. The demon cultivator was determined to learn what Lin Feng's secret was.

Chapter 1890: Ancient Demon Clan

Lin Feng was seated cross-legged and ignored the people around him. His eyes were closed. His bones and flesh were emitting crackling and spluttering sounds. Deva-Mara Kalpa and desolate energies kept bombarding him. If he hadn't been strong enough, he would have died.

Surprisingly, nobody dared go and disturb him again. The demon cultivator in the distance did some hand seals and a pitch black imprint appeared, racing towards Lin Feng.

The pitch-black imprint stamped Lin Feng's body. It looked like nothing had happened, but Lin Feng's eyes went ice-cold. Strength started flowing inside his body and chased after the imprint. However, Lin Feng realized he couldn't destroy it, it acted like it didn't even exist.

"That's a special imprint from my clan, the Ancient Demon Clan. It's an illusion. You can't destroy it!" said a voice. Lin Feng turned around and looked at the gigantic demon cultivator.

Sharp death Qi instantly struck out at the man!

The demon cultivator frowned and released demon strength. Ancient demons appeared in the air and crackling sounds spread in the air.

"Your Nihility Sword has a death stamp," said the gigantic demon cultivator before adding, "Give me your skills! I set some Ancient Demon Clan's imprints everywhere in the Milky Way battlefield, you can't survive!"

"Ancient Demon Clan's people." The crowd was staring at the gigantic demon cultivator and frowned. The Ancient Demon Clan was very powerful. Nobody knew where their headquarters were, but they had a faction on the Milky Way battlefield. They were in the Milky Way battlefield at all times.

The Ancient Demon Clan had special powers. They were extremely strong, powerful, and aggressive. People didn't dare offend them.

"Ancient Demon Clan?" Life and death energies rotated in Lin Feng's eyes. He suddenly jumped and ran towards the gigantic demon cultivator. Death imprints appeared as well as Nihility Sword strength.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. His gigantic life and death pattern rained down. The gigantic demon cultivator's soul shook. Another demon shadow appeared and collided with Lin Feng's death sword. At the same time, he raised his fists, and a gigantic demon hand blotted out the sky. Thunder cracked in the air.

How strong!, thought Lin Feng. He suddenly rose up into the air. A terrifying sword intent started spinning around him. He condensed cosmic energies in his fists and punched out.

Lights flared around him. Lin Feng sensed his bones crackle and pulled back .

The gigantic demon cultivator wasn't enjoying himself either, as Lin Feng's sword energies were powerful. He had to protect himself.

He's been a medium-level emperor for a short time, his cultivation isn't that stabilized. However, he can resist my Ancient Demon Fist Imprint! His physical body is incredible, which means his mysterious skills are powerful!, thought the gigantic demon cultivator. He wanted Lin Feng's skills even more now!

He stared at Lin Feng and said, "You're quite strong, but your cultivation level is too low. Give me your skills and techniques, and I won't kill you!"

"Hmph!" Lin Feng grunted, and flashed forwards, energies pulsing around him. He ignored the gigantic demon cultivator. He didn't know what the Ancient Demon Clan was, but they were

extremely strong. Lin Feng's physical body was already incredible, he had even broken through to the Huang Qi layer thanks to his physical body. However, that gigantic demon cultivator's physical strength was incredible too, and he had the strength of the top of the Huang Qi layer. He couldn't defeat him with death sword attacks. He didn't have the advantage in this battle.

"Do you think you can escape?" said the gigantic demon cultivator coldly, and chased after Lin Feng. Their battle attracted people's attention on the Milky Way battlefield.

A terrifying golden spear shot at Lin Feng. That golden spear contained stamped fire lights. A rainbow of energies appeared in the sky and lashed at Lin Feng.

"Hmph!" The gigantic demon cultivator chased after Lin Feng and accelerated, his strength rising quickly. A gigantic hand appeared and moved towards Lin Feng even more quickly.

Lin Feng's eyes were filled with flames of fury.

The spear moved even faster. His enemy wanted to stab Lin Feng no matter what.

At that moment, Lin Feng stumbled and the golden spear pierced through his chest. However, it didn't kill him. It just softly pierced through his body. The attacker was stupefied. He hadn't thought Lin Feng would fail to dodge. He suddenly looked scared.

But it was already too late, both of them were incredibly fast. His spear hadn't killed Lin Feng. Lin Feng raised his fist and crashed a fist onto the man's skull. His head crackled at the blow. Lin Feng grabbed him and threw him away.

The golden energies were still in Lin Feng's body. People's hairs bristled when they saw Lin Feng's ice-cold gaze.

Life energy started flowing in his body. He yanked the spear out of himself and threw it behind him. He didn't even look at his attacker again, and continued walking. Some strange marks

appeared behind him as he wielded empty space and wind cosmic energies.

“Hmph!” The gigantic demon cultivator grabbed his golden spear and chased after Lin Feng again. Many people looked after them. They were surprised, but they didn’t try to attack them. These two people were too strong.

What a strange agility technique, he’s also using empty space strength!, thought the gigantic demon cultivator. He was furious, he couldn’t seem to catch up with Lin Feng.

At that moment, a talisman appeared in his hand. He put his godly awareness in it and didn’t stop chasing.

—

Lin Feng flew for a long time. Suddenly, the atmosphere shook in front of him as more people arrived, their strength was incredible. One of them had a Qi similar to the gigantic demon cultivator and was flying towards him. Each time he took a step, the ground shook.

“Strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan.” Lin Feng turned around, but someone was coming from that direction, too. He was being surrounded on the Milky Way battlefield!

“Don’t offend me or I’ll kill you!” said Lin Feng, suddenly turning around to confront the gigantic demon cultivator and releasing terrifying energies.

However, the gigantic demon cultivator didn’t care about what Lin Feng said, he was also an amazing cultivator. In response, a demon appeared behind him.

“Die!” shouted the gigantic demon cultivator. The demon charged Lin Feng. He was using his soul to carry out the attack.

A gigantic Ancient Demon Hand appeared above Lin Feng’s head. He felt the pressure, the hand wasn’t an illusion!

Lin Feng raised his fists, terrifying energies continued pressing down on him. He was being pushed down and was going to be pushed into the Yellow Springs under his feet. The gigantic demon cultivator frowned; he didn't want to push Lin Feng into the Yellow Springs, he wanted his mysterious physical body skills and techniques!

However, Lin Feng released death intent and a cage appeared around the gigantic demon cultivator.

The gigantic demon cultivator was startled. Lin Feng suddenly rose up into the air, grabbed one of the gigantic demon cultivator's legs and pulled him down. The gigantic demon cultivator and the cage containing him fell!

"Break!" shouted the gigantic demon cultivator furiously. The cage broke apart, but Lin Feng continued putting pressure on him. Silver wings appeared on Lin Feng's back and he forced the demon cultivator down further. His Purple Tank appeared and pressured the gigantic demon cultivator even more. Lin Feng wanted to throw him into the Yellow Springs!

The gigantic demon cultivator's expression changed drastically. He shouted furiously and gained some altitude, performing a knifehand strike in the air and making a fissure in the atmosphere.

In the blink of an eye, the two other cultivators also arrived. Lin Feng flapped his wings quickly and flew away. If the Ancient Demon Clan's strong cultivators caught him, they'd definitely kill him!

Chapter 1891: Demon Pond

Lin Feng wrapped his silver wings around himself, and his shadow spirit appeared. Lin Feng turned into a shadow and sped away. He had to get rid of the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan.

“Jumo, why are you chasing this person?” asked one of the strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan to the gigantic demon cultivator, who was called Jumo. The three of them continued chasing Lin Feng.

“His physical strength is incredible. He has a marvelous skill which allows him to cleanse his body. If I and some others could obtain it, we could possibly become great emperors using just our physical bodies!” Jumo told them eagerly. The other two lit up with greed. Indeed, Jumo was right; if Lin Feng had such a thing, then they could benefit from it!

“Let’s tell our people and let’s capture him!” said that guy coldly, and took out a talisman. He used his godly awareness to contact his people.

—

Lin Feng was farther and farther from the people tracking him. However, Jumo continued chasing him. He couldn’t see Lin Feng anymore, but he couldn’t lose track of him since he had put an imprint in Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng couldn’t escape.

Sometimes, it rained above the Milky Way battlefield, but Lin Feng didn’t try to get any precious items. A palace appeared in front of him above the Yellow Springs, it was spectacular.

Lin Feng flashed aside and entered the palace.

—

At that moment, Jumo looked extremely happy, he smiled in a strange way and said, “We’re so lucky! That guy surprisingly went

to the Ancient Demon Island, he's going to bring about his own destruction!"

"Ancient Demon Island?" The two others continued using talismans to communicate with their colleagues, but they looked surprised.

—

Lin Feng didn't know where he had gone. However, he could sense demon Qi everywhere. That place seemed to be a paradise for demon cultivators. Lin Feng liked these energies!

However, at that moment, more people rose up in the air and said nothing, they just threw themselves at him and surrounded him. Lin Feng realized he had ended up in the wrong place. Those people had the same Qi as Jumo!

"Ancient Demon Clan!" Lin Feng was speechless. What a bad coincidence! However, Lin Feng was fearless. In the Celestial Country, there was no great emperor, there were only normal emperors. Lin Feng wasn't afraid to fight against emperors.

Lin Feng suddenly charged ahead lightning-fast, and a powerful demon lotus appeared in his left hand. It contained a powerful and destructive fire energy.

"Hmph!" one of the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan grunted coldly. He didn't know how strong Lin Feng was. That fire was powerful, but it didn't pose a threat to him.

People from the Ancient Demon Clan were terrifyingly strong. They had incredible Ancient Demon techniques, and their physical bodies had all been cleansed by demon strength. Their physical strength was usually amazing. Few people could compete with them in terms of physical strength.

Lin Feng threw the fireball in his left hand. His enemy smiled coldly. He waved his hand and an ancient demon imprint moved towards Lin Feng. His enemy looked like a demon.

“Boom!” Lin Feng’s fire and the demon hand collided. The demon hand broke apart but Lin Feng continued punching the atmosphere in his enemy’s direction. Lin Feng was strong. Another demon imprint appeared and shot towards Lin Feng. He had to suppress Lin Feng!

At that moment, the two cultivators were getting closer. Lin Feng didn’t look perturbed at all. His eyes were just grey. He actually looked dead.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng explosively. Death energy penetrated into his enemy’s brain. At the same time, Lin Feng released sword energies in a blur of motion. The attack seemed indestructible.

Those watching had no time to react. They saw the death sword shoot towards the strong cultivator’s head. Lin Feng blurred into motion, and a gigantic hand came down on the man’s head, with fatal results!

The other strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were astonished. They had just been watching the battle, they thought their colleague could fight alone against Lin Feng, he should have been enough. But even if he wasn’t enough, they had thought Lin Feng couldn’t kill him! They hadn’t thought Lin Feng would kill a cultivator of the Ancient Demon Clan so easily.

Of course, they didn’t know how strong Lin Feng was. Lin Feng had already started on the Path of Life and Death, and he had already started practicing life and death cultivation with his heart and mind. He used death strength stamps, his Nihilism Sword attacks, and his mind to attack. He could now kill people even more easily than before. Lin Feng didn’t flinch, and boldly attacked the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan.

—

In the central area of the palace, there was a demon pond with demon water inside. It contained powerful demonic energies which dashed to the skies. The whole pond was filled with demon

strength.

There were two strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan bathing in the pond and practicing cultivation. Powerful demon strength kept flowing throughout their bodies, making them stronger and stronger. Crackling and shattering sounds were audible, and the water around them seemed to be boiling.

Oh no!, thought some of the strong cultivators when they saw that Lin Feng was flying towards the demon pond. They were stupefied and shouted furiously, “Be careful!”

The extremely loud shout woke everyone up on the whole Ancient Demon Island. Black lights moved towards Lin Feng. Someone was causing trouble in their world, and now he was going to their demon pond, how audacious?!?

They hadn’t imagined such a thing was possible, so the two cultivators in the pond couldn’t possibly think of such a thing, either. Even if they could sense the powerful energies, they couldn’t imagine what was happening while they peacefully practiced cultivation. Sometimes, the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan released such powerful energies, so it was no surprise to them.

A death sword streaked across the sky and pierced through the head of the first one cultivating. Lin Feng then punched the other one, wasting no time. When those people realized they were being attacked, they had no time to react. The second one’s head just exploded!

Lin Feng killed those two people, but he still looked emotionless. His eyes were still filled with death intent. He entered the demon pond and started absorbing the water.

This pond’s demon intent is strange. I can use it to cleanse my body!, thought Lin Feng, surprised he had found such a place. He did a knife-hand strike, and gigantic waves appeared on the pond. Lin Feng then released Kalpa strength as the whole world seemed

to tremble. The powerful Deva-Mara Kalpa strength fused together with the water, before sending it shooting up into the air.

“He’s using the demon strength of the demon pond.” Some strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan arrived and saw that Lin Feng was in the pond, they could hear crackling and shattering sounds coming from it. They were astonished and looked down at Lin Feng coldly.

“Die!” Explosions filled the air, and death strength surrounded Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng didn’t seem to be affected at all. He continued swimming in the demon pond and his powerful Deva-Mara Kalpa strength became stronger.

Suddenly, Lin Feng waved his hand and the water rose higher up in the air.

“Die!” said Lin Feng raising a finger and pointing at someone. In a flash, the water started boiling. An endless amount of Deva-Mara Kalpa energy shot towards the person Lin Feng was pointing at, and that person immediately exploded into chunks of flesh and bone.

Chapter 1892: The Evolved Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony's Deployment Spell

Such powerful attacks scared the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan to death. The whole demon pond was in the air. Lin Feng's eyes were filled with death intent and made them shiver. Jumo and the others wanted to kill him, but even though he only looked like a low-level emperor, he was terrifyingly strong!

The air kept trembling Jumo and the others shouted furiously when they saw that Lin Feng was in the pond. "How could you let him go into the water!"

Everybody pulled a long face. Lin Feng could easily kill their strong cultivators now that he was taking the water from their pond. Their ancestors had created that pond for them, and had brought it to the Milky Way battlefield. It was a holy cultivation place for them. However, at that moment, Lin Feng was using it!

"Let's attack him together. Don't waste your energies. This guy has mysterious skills!" Jumo said loudly. Quickly, the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan threw themselves at Lin Feng at the same time. If they joined hands, they should have no trouble killing this outsider!

Lin Feng raised his hands and condensed Kalpa strength. Two dazzling light beams of destructive strength appeared.

"Bastard!" shouted Jumo furiously. When he saw the two light beams, he noticed that it contained the pond's strength!

The two light beams dashed to the heavens, and demonic lights blotted out the sky. Deva-Mara Kalpa strength twisted, and the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength turned into an illusion, many powerful stars appearing around them. The people from the Ancient Demon Clan were stupefied at the display!

"Die!" Jumo knew that he couldn't wait at all. Ancient Demon

Imprints struck out like a meteor shower. All of the people of the Ancient Demon Clan attacked at the same time. If all those energies crashed onto Lin Feng's body, he would definitely die.

“Go!” Lin Feng condensed Kalpa strength in his left hand, as well as wind cosmic energies. He reacted extremely quickly as his energies collided with the energies in the sky. The Kalpa strength kept exploding. With all the destructive energies flying around, it was like the world was going to collapse!

“Destroy!” A light beam of destruction emerged from Lin Feng's right hand. At the same time, many Kalpa lights appeared. Lin Feng swam down to the depths of the demon pond and released life energy to form an armor around his body.

At the surface, the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength was bombarding the earth and sky. Lin Feng's Deva-Mara Kalpa strength obviously couldn't be that powerful, but coupled with the demon strength of the pond, his skills, and his Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, his attack was just too terrifying. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were going insane and trying to escape, but it was difficult to find a place without Deva-Mara Kalpa lights. Many people were being crushed to death!

When the clouds dispersed, the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan looked terrified. Lin Feng reappeared at the surface of the pond. He raised his hands again and condensed Kalpa strength again. The cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were trembling at the sight.

“Has Juxiao come back already?” asked Jumo, staring at the others. Juxiao was the strongest cultivator of the Ancient Demon Clan's faction on the Milky Way battlefield. He had reached the very top of the Huang Qi layer, and was extremely strong.

“Not yet. Juxiao wants to fight on the other side of the Milky Way,” replied a clansman. Jumo's eyes glittered. Juxiao really wanted to go the other side. Even if he encountered a terrifyingly

strong cultivator, it wouldn't be easy to kill him.

“Let's activate the Great Ancient Demon Deployment Spell, and gather together to kill him,” ordered Jumo coldly. People frowned. Activate the Great Ancient Demon Deployment Spell to kill an emperor? They were so many strong cultivators, and now he wanted them to use the Great Ancient Demon Deployment Spell? How sad! But Lin Feng really was too terrifying. And if they didn't activate it, who would dare go in and fight against Lin Feng?

“Alright!” said the Ancient Demon Clansmen. Eighteen people's silhouettes flickered and landed in eighteen different positions. After only a short time, eighteen lights beams rose up in the air, demon clouds rolled in and covered the sky.

Lin Feng raised his head and watched everything. Those people surprisingly understood deployment spells as well!

In the air, demon patterns appeared, appearing like demon silhouettes. Demonic energies emerged from the eighteen locations

“Demon shadows!” Lin Feng was startled. Those demon patterns looked like demon kings, very realistic. They were extremely powerful!

A demon silhouette condensed in the middle of the deployment spell. The energy it gave off was astonishing.

The demon flickered and threw himself at Lin Feng. His demon Qi was ancient and terrible!

Lin Feng waved his hands and condensed Kalpa strength, which moved towards the demon shadow. Thunder boomed as the demon shadow broke apart. Another one appeared and charged him. This demon was holding a gigantic blade, and looked powerful and imposing. More demon shadows were condensing, and it seemed that they could emerge anytime.

“What kind of deployment spell is that?” shouted Lin Feng coldly.

“This is a deployment spell which we inherited from our ancestors in the Ancient Demon Clan. It’s an evolved version of the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony, an all-conquering demon emperor will appear and kill you. You still have time to give us your mysterious skills and techniques!” Jumo shouted back.

Lin Feng frowned. The Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony? It was the second time he heard that word. Back when the Netherworld Demon Emperor had battled against another demon emperor, the Netherworld Demon Emperor had used the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song and the other one had used the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony, which called eighteen demons.

Had the Ancient Demon Clan’s ancestor also obtained the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony?

Unfortunately, I’m too weak. I can’t use the Nine Netherworlds Song properly. Otherwise, I would be able to steal people’s willpower and use it for the benefit of my demon cultivation!, thought Lin Feng. The Nine Netherworlds Demoniatic Song was extremely powerful. With the Nine Netherworlds Demoniatic Song, a cultivator could control other people and make them turn into possessed slaves. They could also influence people’s state of mind.

Back then, when the Netherworld Demon Emperor had used the Nine Netherworlds Song, the many people had all turned into demons, including Emperor Peng.

Now that clan had an evolved version of the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony, it was probably incredible. Lin Feng had already absorbed the entirety of the demon pond, Jumo wasn’t willing to let him leave with it. He didn’t want Lin Feng to use it all, either!

“You have a deployment spell, I can also use deployment spells!” replied Lin Feng coldly. He descended into the demon pond, Kalpa lights glittering around him as a path appeared in the water. It was a spectacular sight!

Lin Feng went to the bottom of the pond, surrounded by walls of water. He started carving marks, and a life and death pattern appeared.

Lin Feng released immortal and earth energies in a billowing storm. The demon pond became his deployment spell territory.

While carving marks, Lin Feng continued releasing Kalpa strength, which rose up and slaughtered the demons descending from the sky to kill him.

Lin Feng finished his life and death deployment spell. Death Qi began to gather. However, Lin Feng didn't stop moving. He continued making shattering deployment spells.

After all that, Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and let the water of the demon pond flow throughout the deployment spells and over his body. He quickly disappeared from the clansmen's field of view. Each time their demons penetrated into the water, they did not come back out, and were destroyed immediately. However, the clansmen continued attacking Lin Feng's deployment spells and breaking them down slowly.

The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were worried. Lin Feng just enjoyed being in the demon pond. At the same time, he started studying new spells. He had many sorts of strength, and had the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures which allowed him to evolve his spells.

He had his Rule technique, the rule of life and death, the strength of life and death. His attacks were becoming more and more explosive.

He also had his Nihilism Sword, and his Nine Kalpa Swords. Basically, on the path of life and death, he could mix anything with life and death energies, and with his incredible speed thanks to his wind cosmic energies, he was becoming monstrously strong!

Chapter 1893: Fighting Over the Milky Way

Out on the vast Milky Way battlefield, there was a kind of natural protective screen that looked like an illusion. It looked like cliffs, but it was transparent. It could usually prevent cultivators from passing through, but if they did, an imprint appeared on their third eye and they couldn't delete it.

At that moment, Juxiao had come to that place from the Ancient Demon Clan. He couldn't see anyone in front of him, as few people came to that place because it was very dangerous. When people did, they could sense some powerful energies.

People who came from Hell knew that the Milky Way battlefield was very dangerous, but people who came from powerful groups could go there if they took precautions. However, crossing over completely was extremely dangerous, because on the other side there were many extremely strong cultivators.

At that moment, Juxiao gazed into the distance sharply, his demon energies pulsing. He already had an imprint on his third eye. He continued flying ahead, as he wanted to see how hard it was to completely cross the area.

"People who come here will die!" said someone in the distance, the air quaking. A silhouette appeared and charged at him.

Juxiao just grunted, and sharp lights emerged from his eyes. His enemy shivered and stared at Juxiao, petrified. Juxiao looked like a celestial demon. He punched out explosively. Endless numbers of golden sun swords appeared, but were immediately destroyed by Juxiao's Deva-Mara punch.

"Break!" after that, the enemy continued attacking crazily, his golden energies became dazzling and assaulting the Deva-Mara punch. Juxiao continued running towards him. A gigantic Deva-Mara hand appeared as Juxiao's body became gigantic.

The strong cultivator turned into a golden body. Juxiao grabbed him with his gigantic hand as easily if he had grabbed an ant.

“Destroy!” snarled Juxiao. He squeezed the golden cultivator with his gigantic hand and crushed him. He said coldly, “According to legends, on the other side, you can find the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I’m curious to see how strong people there are. I follow the path of Ancient Demons and I have a Deva-Mara body. Who can compete with me in this world?”

His body turned into a light beam. Along the way, he killed a dozen people.

However, after a short time, Juxiao stopped upon on a bridge. His body was pitch-black and gigantic, but at that moment, he seemed to feel dizzy and was gazing into the distance. He started trembling.

“The Milky Way’s great war.” Juxiao heard that voice in his head. A boundless army was coming his way. That army sealed the entire sky. There were people spread out over hundreds of kilometers, and they all had a killer Qi. The atmosphere became very oppressive.

“It’s going to be a tragedy for the people from Hell on the Milky Way battlefield!” said a voice in Juxiao’s head. He quickly turned around and started running away. He was very confident, and he knew he was strong. He could kill people easily, he could also fight against a small army. However, the army he was facing wasn’t any ordinary army. They were an elite force! According to the old legends, each time this army appeared, many people died!

—

Ji Chang calmly watched Juxiao escape, not bothering to chase him. They were there for a real war, not to kill one or two people. They wanted to invade and conquer the Milky Way battlefield!

According to legends, on the other side of the Milky Way

battlefield, there were people from Hell. Hell was isolated from the rest of the world. People who wanted to go to Hell said that you needed to find the forbidden area of Jiu You. Few people knew where it was. The ancestor often said that going to the Celestial Country was a way to go to Hell, too. But these were only legends!

People from Hell controlled death strength, and they had explosive powers. In the past, people from Hell usually took the initiative to attack first, but this time people from the Continent of the Nine Clouds made the decision to attack. The troops were composed of people from many different academies. They all had incredible spells and techniques, and came from everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There were hundreds of them here now, a fearsome force!

Ji Chang was in charge of leading the army of Champion University. People who were from the Celestial Champion Ranking List and above were the core troops, and constituted a powerful army. They wanted to get on the other side of the Milky Way battlefield.

“Ji Chang, we should go to the other side of the Celestial Country and kill everyone!” someone next to him spoke excitedly. It was a young man with a golden face.

“This time, we came here to practice! Our purpose is show that in the future, people from the continent can fight together. Our allies today will be our enemies tomorrow. Our main goal is to become stronger anyway,” said Ji Chang. The whole army had already crossed the protective screen, so they all had an imprint in their third eye and were considered intruders. They couldn’t hide themselves.

Some strong cultivators from Hell were on the edge of that vast area. When they saw the army arrive, they were stunned and their faces turned deathly pale as they started running away, trying to escape.

“Die!” shouted Ji Chang furiously. Now, they were going to start attacking!

“Die!...” shouted the whole army furiously. Their voices made everyone shake. A powerful Qi rolled out, and some people immediately started coughing up blood. Their faces all turned pale and desperate.

Destructive strength filled the heavens. People’s faces were as white as sheets of paper as they started drowning in the destructive strength.

In the distance, some people raised their heads and shook when they saw what was happening. They couldn’t keep calm, and all looked terrified. They gazed into the distance, their hearts pounding. A great war over the Milky Way battlefield was going to start!

A powerful wind started blowing. People on the Milky Way battlefield were shaken. People started running away to tell everyone about what was happening. Some people didn’t believe that there could be a war on the Milky Way battlefield. Of course, some people wanted to go and see to make sure, but after going there, they never came back.

The Continent of the Nine Clouds’ army was terrifying. They slaughtered their way forward relentlessly.

Some strong cultivators started gathering on the side of Hell and forming an army.

——

However, Lin Feng didn’t know about what was happening. At that moment, he was still in the Ancient Demon Clan’s great deployment spell. The people from the Ancient Demon Clan also found it difficult to resist him.

On that day, Juxiao suddenly came back. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan quickly went up to him.

“What’s going on?” Juxiao asked the Ancient Demon Clansmen when he saw that they had activated the Great Ancient Demon Deployment Spell, astonished.

Jumo pointed to Lin Feng down in the demon pond and said, “That guy has a mysterious technique and he’s very dangerous. He used the strength of the demon pond to attack us. We couldn’t do anything against him, so we had to activate the deployment spell... but his deployment spells are extremely powerful, too!”

Juxiao looked at Lin Feng and flew towards him. He appeared in the sky above the demon pond, sharp demon lights emerging from his eyes and descending from the sky.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked up at Juxiao.

Juxiao shot down towards Lin Feng in the demon pond, his body swelling immensely in size. He looked like a Deva-Mara demon!

“Die!” shouted Juxiao furiously. He waved his hand and a powerful celestial hand descended from the sky.

Deva-Mara Kalpa strength condensed. Lin Feng released a powerful and explosive Deva-Mara Kalpa attack. The two hands collided, but Juxiao’s hand didn’t break!

“Hmph! Juxiao is walking on the path of enlightenment, he’s an incredible demon cultivator and has the Deva-Mara body. He is invincible!” sneered the Ancient Demon Clansmen coldly. This time, Juxiao had to kill Lin Feng!

Chapter 1894: Condensing strength

“Dao power!” Lin Feng was stupefied. He sensed some Dao power in the demon hand attack.

That level of strength was terrifying. Even some great emperors didn’t know how to use Dao power yet. Lin Feng understood basic things on the path of life and death. He could already adapt his Nihility Sword Scriptures to his life and death cultivation, and he could easily kill high-level emperors with his powers. With life and death stamps, his attacks were even more fearsome. But without Dao power, killing those heroic and talented high-level emperors was difficult.

And now, a demon silhouette had appeared. He had his own path, and his attacks contained threads of Dao power!

Lin Feng released a Kalpa Sword which whistled as it pierced through the air.

The demon hand was cut apart by the Kalpa sword, shocking Juxiao. He hadn’t thought Lin Feng would be strong enough to destroy his Dao power attack.

He was also even more infuriated. Many more demons continued descending from the sky to suppress Lin Feng. Even his soul started shaking!

“Soul attack!” Lin Feng was grim. That soul attack was almost physical, as it contained Dao power strength. His enemy was very powerful. He also had very advanced knowledge and understanding of his own path.

Lin Feng understood what kind of body his enemy had, it gave him the power to make things almost indestructible. His offense and defense were both amazing. With that kind of body, and that kind of Dao, Lin Feng understood that his path and his enemy’s path were completely different.

Sword strength appeared in the sky and pierced through the demons' heads, dispersing them. Juxiao grunted and advanced. Lin Feng could feel Juxiao's powerful soul approach him and weighing down on him.

Lin Feng advanced as well. Lights glittered, and demon strength condensed and dashed skywards before whipping at his enemy's gigantic feet. Water splashed and rolled but the colossus had an indestructible body, and his defensive abilities were incredible.

Lin Feng sighed. He understood the difference between people who had understood the Dao and those who hadn't. They belonged to different worlds. Even Lin Feng only understood rudimentary notions of the Dao, and yet that was enough for him to kill high-level emperors with life and death strength. Now Juxiao was using Dao power attacks to attack him, and Lin Feng was countering with destructive demon strength, but he couldn't even break the enemy's feet.

Huge waves of dazzling Kalpa strength began condensing around Lin Feng

"Go!" The Kalpa strength raged up and moved towards the condensing lights. A dazzling light flew above the demon pond, delivering an explosion that actually blew a hole in his enemy's feet!

"Demon Kalpa strength!" Juxiao was surprised. This guy could use the strength of the demon pond! He could take it and make it turn into Kalpa strength. He had probably obtained some mysterious Ancient scriptures!

"You're quite strong! However, you will never be able to run away from me!" Juxiao swore coldly. Lin Feng looked back at him with murder in his eyes. Even though Juxiao was strong, Lin Feng wasn't worried because he could also imprison this guy in his small world, and he was probably not strong enough to break free from it. However, Lin Feng wasn't sure whether Juxiao had Great

Imperial Weapons or not. If he did have one, then Lin Feng wasn't sure if that weapon would allow him to break free from his inner world.

He knew his small world wasn't indestructible. Back then, he had seen how Emperor Yu's small world had been destroyed in the world he came from, Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Qi had managed to break it. Lin Feng's small world wasn't very stable. Really strong cultivators could definitely destroy his small world in one shot.

"Try then!" Lin Feng answered coldly. Juxiao descended from the sky. Surprisingly, he didn't fear Lin Feng's deployment spell. The empty space in the deployment spell was very oppressive. The water of the pond moved aside, Juxiao didn't want Lin Feng to use the water of the pond.

Juxiao stopped and moved sharply away after he saw the marks at the bottom of the pond. Now he understood that there weren't many possibilities. One was to fight in a great battle against Lin Feng, but Juxiao also understood that a great war had started outside, and they wouldn't be able to protect this place much longer... in which case the demon pond wouldn't be that important anymore.

A loud booming started. Juxiao tried to attack again, descending and trying to use his feet to crush Lin Feng!

Lin Feng's eyes glittered, and the marks under his feet interwove. The life and death strength they contained was incredible as the deployment spell was activated. At the same time, Lin Feng suddenly disappeared, turning into a shadow. He wanted to attack Juxiao from a different angle!

"Empty space teleportation deployment spell." Juxiao was impressed. He saw a silhouette moving towards him. The silhouette turned into two and then three and then even more clones. They all looked real!

“Argh!” Juxiao shouted furiously. A powerful and oppressive soul wave attack surged out, and the clones started breaking apart one after another.

However, at that moment, one of the silhouettes was extremely fast and had dazzling marks under it – holy marks!

“Curse, die!” Lin Feng’s eyes were filled with a dreadful energy. Cursing strength moved towards the Dao power, and at the same time, a Nihility Sword whistled and sliced towards Juxiao’s head.

At that moment, Juxiao’s soul shook, his will had been affected, and his fury rose. He continued releasing more soul strength, while at the same time, punching out with what looked like mountains streaking across the sky.

“Die, die, die!...” Lin Feng shouted and used the power of his Nihility Sword Scriptures, releasing death energies and immortal will. Juxiao was going to pay the price for attacking him!

A powerful hand moved towards Lin Feng, who released his Purple Tank in retaliation. Lin Feng continued releasing sword energies which rose to the skies, countering the thunderous rumblings in the air. Juxiao’s energies did finally reach Lin Feng and force him back, but Lin Feng had already started releasing life energy to recover.

This was precisely the reason why he dared offend those people, and now they had to pay the price.

Juxiao pulled a long face. Immortal energy and a death sword had penetrated into his body, as well as death cursing strength. His body was almost indestructible, but Lin Feng had managed to wound him. He wanted to kill Lin Feng, but he was obviously facing an insane cultivator!

Lin Feng turned into an illusion and moved towards the outside world. When the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan saw that, they were all furious. If they chased him, he would

probably kill them! This insane cultivator had already injured Juxiao!

“If you try to stop me again, I’ll kill you!” shouted Lin Feng explosively, his voice carrying death energy to corrode them. Suddenly, the Ancient Demon Clansmen opened the way. Lin Feng passed between them, creating a sonic boom with his speed. At the same time, they heard a loud voice, “A bunch of trash!”

The Ancient Demon Clansmen were all furious. What a humiliation!

—

When Lin Feng left the Ancient Demon Clan, he appeared on a bridge and placed an imprint there. A light beam leapt into the sky. Lin Feng remained waiting there on the bridge.

After a short time, some people came flying over to Lin Feng. A few of them took out a Jalacandra Talisman, and asked Lin Feng, “You’re from Jalacandra Fairyland?”

“Indeed!” Lin Feng nodded. He also took out his talisman. People from Jalacandra Fairyland were like brothers and sisters there. Surprisingly, they had found one another.

At that moment, someone came up to them. He also had a Jalacandra Talisman, but he didn’t look happy.

“What’s wrong?” asked everybody.

“Some people are coming from the other side of the Milky Way to kill us. A great war over the Celestial Country is going to happen. Nobody can block them. Everybody has to escape, or we’ll die. If they weren’t tired, they would already be here. They’re so fast!” said that person slowly.

Everybody was stunned. A great war in the Celestial Country?

“Over the Celestial Country?” Lin Feng was perplexed.

“According to legends, they come from another world. And now

they have sent a great army to conquer the place and we can't stop them. We have to find a solution, otherwise they'll invade the Milky Way battlefield!"

"People from the Continent of the Nine Clouds are here to kill us?" Lin Feng was stunned. His heart was pounding. He had never thought he'd meet such incredible fighters!

Chapter 1895: Ji Wuyou Nowadays

The Dark Night Region, Holy City, Champion University...

Hou Qing Lin and the others had left their small homeworld a long time ago. After that, they had been to the nine great celestial castles. These days, the headquarters of Tiantai were already incredible, both spectacular and famous. Nobody could challenge their position. Hou Qing Lin and the others were convinced that their teachers would find them soon, or that Tiantai would hear about them someday.

Two people were fighting in one of Champion University's main buildings, a man and woman. The man was extremely young, and obviously struggling, "Sister Qing Yan, your cosmic energies can kill me!"

"So before fighting against emperors, you need to understand force to the extent your force is multiplied by a thousand. Only then will you understand how to control the world around you!" Yun Qing Yan smiled, "Xiao Chen, our teacher told me to take care of you. Don't blame me!"

"How could I? Sister Qing Yan, you're amazing. Xiao Chen knows how to differentiate good from bad!" replied Ye Xue with a smile.

Yun Qing Yan looked at Ye Xue and smiled, "You're helping that little boy. Next time, Huang Fu Long will deal with him, or Tantai."

"No..." protested Xiao Chen, pulling a long face.

"Little boy, we're like uncles for you, you should be happy!" said Tantai, walking up to him. Ye Chen smiled angrily. Tantai walked over to Ye Chen and clapped his shoulders. Ye Chen smiled wryly. Each time Tantai tried to teach him cultivation, it wasn't fun.

"What about our second brother?" Tantai asked Yun Qing Yan cheerfully.

“He’s meditating in seclusion. He’s a cultivaholic,” huffed Yun Qing Yan.

Tantai smiled and said, “Lin Feng is also like that. Thanks to them, Tiantai will become great again. Have you seen how arrogant the members of the Ji Chang’s Club are? Even the Star Group, I want to destroy all of them!”

“Be patient. The Star Group is not a problem. Ji Wuyou, who used to be difficult to defeat, is now in the Moon Group. With our strength, we can easily defeat the Star Group, but the Moon Group is different. But two years is enough,” Yun Qing Yan said solemnly.

“Indeed. I just saw Ji Wuyou. After that guy became a medium-level emperor, they started being arrogant again. Not so long ago, he went to the battle stage for those of the higher ranking list and challenged the fifth one. Then, he became a medium-level emperor and went back to the Ji Clan to meditate in seclusion. I wonder how strong he’s become. Hou Qing Lin and the others will go and see. We’ll be able to get ready,” said Tantai slowly. Yun Qing Yan nodded. Tantai was right. They had to be ready!

Ji Wuyou had dared challenge the fifth of the higher ranking list, which meant he was strong enough.

—

At that moment, Hou Qing Lin was looking pensive. He released reincarnation strength, which swelled around him. A reincarnation hole appeared in the skies above. Hou Qing Lin stared at it and whispered, “On the path of cultivation, what is the destiny of my reincarnation strength? How will it evolve?”

He looked thoughtful as he came out of the cultivation room. Tantai and Yun Qing Yan were both standing there. They knew that Ji Wuyou might defeat the fifth student of the higher ranking list, so Hou Qing Lin had gathered some people to go and watch the battle. They were enemies, but seeing how strong he was was a good thing.

—

At that moment, Ji Wuyou was standing on the battle stage of the higher ranking list. Many people were around to watch him. Back then, Ling Tian had defeated Ji Wuyou. Ji Wuyou wouldn't forget that, he was too proud.

“Que Lan is here. He's the fifth student of the higher ranking list, and extremely strong. He's a highly skilled medium emperor who knows ancient techniques that can attack people's souls. Even people who are higher than him in the ranking list don't want to fight against him. Ji Chang has been meditating in seclusion and has become much stronger, so he dares to challenge Que Lan.”

The crowd commented as they saw someone in fine clothes arrive. That man landed on the battle stage. “Ji Wuyou, even though you're Ji Chang's brother, on the battle stage, I will be merciless.”

Ji Wuyou smiled coldly. He rose up into the air, king's Qi gathering and pulsing around him. A dragon pattern appeared behind him amid dazzling lights. This time, there were three Dragon Totems of astonishing strength. The dragon chants were making the earth and sky shake, filled with power.

“Let's fight. If you can endure my first attack, we'll consider it my loss,” said Ji Wuyou proudly.

Que Lan replied coldly, “Back then, you lost like a nobody, and today you dare act this arrogantly?”

When Ji Wuyou heard Que Lan, he looked at him with murder in his eyes. His dragons roared furiously, reacting to his emotion. Trails appeared behind the dragons in the sky.

Que Lan grunted coldly. He wasn't afraid at all. He started forwards as a gigantic bell appeared, it's ringing shaking people's eardrums violently and painfully. At the same time, imprint shot out everywhere and collided with Ji Wuyou's dragons.

“Destroy!” snarled Ji Wuyou. There was a flash of thunder, and Que Lan’s imprints broke apart, Qi flowing in every direction.

Que Lan’s facial expression changed drastically. How could that happen? He was clearly stronger than Ji Wuyou, why had his energies broken?

Que Lan performed some hand seals and more bells filled the air with their ringing, people’s eardrums were shaking unceasingly.

Ji Wuyou looked at him coldly, and just shouted out angrily again. More rumbles of thunder spread out, and the bells were shattered again!

Suddenly, a destructive strength pressed down on Que Lan. He groaned with pain as his face turned deathly pale. It felt like his soul was about to explode. Thunder rumbled as Wuyou’s dragons crashed onto his body and hurled him away. Blood splashed out of his mouth as he collapsed, his face deathly pale.

He had lost!

The crowd was astonished. Ji Wuyou had become so terrifying. How? The fifth student of the higher ranking list hadn’t withstood a single attack from him.

“He can use Dao power!” a young man spoke up. His eyes were twinkling.

“Dao!” The crowd was astonished and frowned thoughtfully. This was too astonishing! Even some great emperors didn’t understand Dao strength. Only extremely talented high-level emperors started understanding the power of the Dao. Ji Wuyou was just a medium-level emperor, and he already understood Dao power. It was an amazing accomplishment. He was determined to surpass his brother!

Ji Wuyou’s robe was fluttering in the wind, he looked like a proud king. He glanced at Que Lan coldly and said, “There is no cultivator in the world who is undefeated. I lost against Lin Feng

and I was humiliated. Next time I fight against Lin Feng, I'll definitely defeat him!"

"Empty words." said someone in the crowd. Everybody gazed into the distance and saw Tantai.

The crowd was startled to see them. Tiantai's people, Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, they're here. Last time, they defeated the members of the Star Group. They seem much stronger than before, too..., thought the watchers.

When Ji Wuyou heard Tantai, he flashed forwards and stopped above Tantai. He said coldly, "Where's Lin Feng? We can fight right now!"

"You lost last time. Why would he fight against you again?" said Tantai, staring at Ji Wuyou. Lin Feng was very proud. He had beat Ji Wuyou once, why would Lin Feng fight against him again?

Ji Wuyou looked down at Tantai disdainfully. Suddenly, he shouted furiously and his dragons reappeared. Tantai had the sensation his soul was going to explode. He groaned with pain and his face turned deathly pale as he almost collapsed.

Dragons continued roaring furiously. Ji Wuyou looked down upon him and sneered, "Since you don't dare fight, it means you're totally unqualified to talk. Wait until the day of the agreement. Tiantai will be crushed."

"You..." said Huang Fu Long, starting forwards.

However, Hou Qing Lin prevented him from going. He calmly looked at Ji Wuyou and said indifferently, "I've read books about Dao power in the Champion Hall. If you had achieved enlightenment, you would have killed Tantai in one strike. Maybe you're just borrowing someone else's Dao." Hou Qing Lin waved his hand and said, "Let's go!"

Ji Wuyou was frozen. What a humiliation again! He didn't understand Dao, indeed... A strong cultivator of the Ji Clan had

made him study the Dao and had made him use Marks of the Path. However, he hadn't understood precisely how to use them. He could still use some Dao power, however.

“Wuyou, no need to explain anything to those people. They challenged the Moon Group, they will be destroyed. You'll get your revenge then!” said some strong cultivators from the Moon Group as they landed next to Ji Wuyou.

Ji Wuyou nodded. He didn't need to explain anything to them. His brother was in the Celestial Country. He had to make efforts to become stronger and surpass his brother, otherwise, everybody would only talk about his brother his entire life. In the future, people would consider Ji Chang's brother as the stronger one!

Chapter 1896: Destroying the Ancient Demon Clan

The army of the continent was surrounded by corpses. The strong cultivators from Hell who were on the Milky Way battlefield were terrified. They couldn't fight against such a powerful army!

Lin Feng and the others continued running away. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland gathered together because Lin Feng had a demon imprint and the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan hadn't given up after Lin Feng had left. However, when Lin Feng and the others gathered again, the strong cultivators didn't get any closer.

"They're chasing me?" Lin Feng stared at the strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan who had continued chasing him.

"Strong cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan, why are they chasing you?" someone from Jalacandra Fairyland asked Lin Feng.

"They pissed me off! I have to kill them!" said Lin Feng coldly.

The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland were surprised, "The cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan are terrifyingly strong. We can't kill them easily."

"Continue calling our people. We have to destroy the Ancient Demon Clan!" said Lin Feng. He looked furious, his eyes were filled with death energy. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland shivered when they saw him like that.

After seeing what there was coming on the Hell's side of the Milky Way battlefield, many people stopped doubting and gathered together. They stopped traveling alone and fighting against one another. However, they were still running away. They needed to wait for their combined forces to be gigantic.

"Juxiao, he dares say he wants to kill us?" Jumo and the others

noticed Lin Feng. They were all furious. The opposite of before was happening now, Lin Feng wanted to kill and chase them!?

“Let him dream. He can talk, it doesn’t mean it’ll happen!” snorted Juxiao scornfully. He had fought against Lin Feng, he had seen how strong he was. Juxiao didn’t care about Lin Feng’s friends. He had become strong, and high-level Hell emperors couldn’t even pose a threat to him. He could easily defeat most of them by himself!

The members of Jalacandra Fairyland continued calling their friends. Very quickly, there were more than fifty people of Jalacandra Fairyland gathered. That was a fairly big force already. Lin Feng said, “I control life and death Dao intent. When we attack, don’t worry about death attacks, just condense death strength and then we’ll attack together. I want to choke them to death!”

Lin Feng released life energy to cover the group. They frowned together: Dao intent! Lin Feng looked like a low-level Hell emperor and controlled Dao intent!

“Lin Feng, those people are really strong, are you sure?” someone asked Lin Feng.

“We must kill them!” answered Lin Feng, starting forwards. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland sped up and started towards the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan!

“They’re attacking us!” shouted one of the Ancient Demon Clansmen.

Juxiao looked at them with murder in his eyes as he suddenly grew to gigantic size, looking like a giant demon as he shouted, “Fight!”

The Ancient Demon Clansmen turned around and threw themselves at the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland. Juxiao’s hand descended from the sky. In a flash, the

indestructible demon hand pressed down on the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland!

“Attack, lend me some death strength!” shouted Lin Feng from the middle of the group, bathing them in life and death lights. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland bombarded the life and death lights with death strength. The life and death lights became broader and broader. A powerful death Qi filled the air and began to turn it black.

The cultivators forgot about time and released death strength unceasingly. At the same time, they also used spells.

“Die!” Death swords appeared. Two life and death light beams appeared and moved towards Juxiao’s head. At the same time, Lin Feng waved his hands and life and death lights turned into death strength, that then formed a Kalpa sword. Lin Feng was moving lightning fast as energies transformed around him.

“Be careful!” shouted the Ancient Demon Clansmen. The Kalpa sword had dreadful death stamps all over it!

“Kill the six on the side!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland listened to him and released death cosmic energies at the same time, immediately attacking those people. Lin Feng was yelling like a madman, his voice turning into a river of death strength.

Those six clansmen’s faces turned deathly pale. The Kalpa sword pierced through their heads and they collapsed, dead!

“Move away from them!” shouted Juxiao, furiously moving backwards. Lin Feng and his friends were extremely strong and had amazing spells. The Ancient Demon Clansmen couldn’t kill them using death strength, it didn’t work against them. Lin Feng could use those attacks for his own benefit!

The Ancient Demon Clan realized that, too. They all released Qi at the same time. Even though Lin Feng and his friends had killed

six of them, they were still more than thirty of the Clan left.

“Retreat and fight at the same time. Those reached by the death strength will die first!” shouted Lin Feng furiously when he saw that the Clansmen were all attacking at the same time. The whole army pulled back. At the same time, some Hell death energy enveloped some Clansmen. A Kalpa sword streaked across the sky and the Ancient Demon Clansmen who were in front died instantly.

Life and death lights glowed everywhere, surrounding the cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland. Fighting against them with death strength was now impossible.

When Juxiao saw more of his people fall from the sky, his face paled. Lin Feng controlled life and death strength extremely well. He even used their strength for his own!

“Retreat!” shouted Juxiao when he understood what was going on. However, Lin Feng smiled coldly. He wouldn’t let them leave that easily.

Sharp energies whistled. The life and death lights turned into a powerful destructive light beam which rose to the skies. Death strength condensed and turned into a powerful Kalpa sword. Lin Feng said coldly, “Everybody, anyone who controls wind and or empty space cosmic energies, help me!”

The cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland who could released wind and empty space energies, which then surrounded Lin Feng’s death sword. The whistling sounds were strident. The Ancient Demon Clansmen kept running wildly.

“Kill!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. In a flash, the sword lights shone everywhere. They smelled like death.

Cultivators’ heads flew away. The Ancient Demon Clan was extremely strong and proud, like death gods, but at that moment, they looked scared and moved chaotically.

“Let’s use more wind cosmic energies and chase them!” shouted a member of Jalacandra Fairyland. They picked up the corpses’ treasures and continued chasing the members of the Ancient Demon Clan and killed them whenever they could. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan couldn’t fight back against them at all.

Lin Feng was merciless, he wanted to kill all of them. He was also chasing Juxiao!

Juxiao turned around and met Lin Feng’s eyes, which were filled with demonic and death strength. A new sense of terror began to fill him. He was now the last one left! All his friends and family had died on the Milky Way battlefield! Returning the Ancient Demon Clan to life in the Celestial Country would now be very, very difficult. Besides, Lin Feng wasn’t going to let him off, he and his friends from Jalacandra Fairyland continued chasing the demon cultivator.

“Even if I die, you’ll die too!” swore Juxiao. He turned suddenly and shot towards Lin Feng.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Sword energies filled the sky. At the same time, a dozen threads of death strength penetrated into Juxiao’s body. His body turned grey, but continued punching out in Lin Feng’s direction.

“Die!” Lin Feng released life strength. He didn’t flinch. His life and death pattern appeared and at the same time he also released energies to make himself an armored shell.

Lin Feng was bombarded backwards with a bone-crunching impact.

However, Juxiao’s skull was now filled with sword and death strength. There was a final shiver and shake, before his skull finally gave way, exploding in a dark eruption.

All the cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were dead!

“Cough...” Lin Feng coughed up blood. His body felt sore, everywhere. However, he still looked determined. He moved quickly and picked up Juxiao’s treasures. The others didn’t mind. Lin Feng was the one who had defeated the most people!

Chapter 1897: Military Strategy

For the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland, this was a great battle. They hadn't lost anybody, and they had killed famous cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan! They were all amazed by Lin Feng. His understanding of life and death was deep and advanced. Joining hands with Lin Feng was something great! He could even transform their energies!

They had also obtained great things when defeating their enemies. Now, they could defeat more enemies, so they could also obtain more things!

"We should gather together with the other cultivators from Hell. Jalacandra Fairyland can't win alone. We have to join hands with other people," said someone at that moment gravely. They couldn't flinch. They had to move back, form an army and fight for power. The outsiders wanted to invade the Celestial Country!

"Indeed!" many people replied positively.

"Let's go."

Their silhouettes flickered, they retreated and began to gather. Everybody realized that a powerful army was going to attack them.

That kind of battlefield was too terrifying. Two armies from two different worlds were going to fight, and nobody could do anything to stop it.

——

People were running back and forth, everyone was on edge.

Lin Feng and the others gathered together somewhere. Each time people saw them, they shivered.

Someone said to the crowd, "People who don't have an imprint in their third eye must be destroyed, without any exception. There will only be this one battle."

“He’s the descendant of one of the Ten Yama Courts’ kings. His name is Yang Mian. He understands Dao power and is at the top of the Huang Qi layer. He is terrifyingly strong. He sounds like a real leader!” said someone next to Lin Feng. Everybody nodded. In Hell, leaders were all obstinate and unruly.

“Everybody, you all know that those people probably come from the other world. We control death energy, we have the advantage and can win. Therefore, let’s all release death strength and then move together. If they fight in our sea of death strength, we’ll have the advantage!” said Yang Mian loudly. Everybody heard him clearly. They had to agree on some things before fighting and be strategically efficient.

“Yang Mian, we don’t know how strong the outsiders are. We should wait for them here. If the difference between them and us is too big, then we can escape,” said someone in the crowd. Many people agreed.

“Everybody, don’t worry. I’ve already sent some extremely strong cultivators to the front to check them out. They will soon tell us about the outsiders,” replied Yang Mian. Everybody felt relieved. At that moment, everybody was getting ready to protect themselves.

The atmosphere on the Milky Way battlefield suddenly became chaotic. However, people remained silent, although it was rather suffocating to endure.

A strong wind started blowing, Yang Mian and the others gazed into the distance. They saw a silhouette surrounded by a whirlwind, closing on them quickly. The scout said to Yang Mian, “We have about the same number of people, and they’re not far away. They will arrive soon!”

“Alright!” said Yang Mian solemnly. Then he said to everybody, “Everybody, let’s form nine vertical lines and leave some space in between for people to move freely when attacking.”

Silhouettes flickered, turning into a gigantic wall. It was spectacular thing to watch as death Qi began to gather and pulse thickly all over the sky.

“Everybody, remember, after attacking, everybody move back. Don’t move chaotically, let the death strength do its job. Even those who can kill within a short time, do so when they rush over to us. Don’t underestimate them. Be careful. We’ll have the advantage if we fight smart!” said Yang Mian.

Everybody agreed and nodded along. At that moment, in the distance, a powerful and gigantic army appeared, preceded by sonic booms.

Lin Feng was in the crowd too. At that moment, he looked determined. This battle wasn’t going to be as easy as Yang Mian thought it was...

Cultivators didn’t like being humiliated, that was the reason why they joined hands to fight. It had to do with life and death. Lin Feng was going to fight because the other army could pose a threat to all of them, otherwise why would he fight? The battle between Hell and the other world had nothing to do with him.

A light beam suddenly shot across the sky and lit up everything, and the wind picked up. The people from Hell frowned. In the distance, a gigantic fire dragon appeared. Space even started burning around it.

Yang Mian looked glum and said coldly, “Let’s release ice Hell strength to stop their fire.”

After that, the people who controlled ice energy released some. The temperature fell as it moved forwards. The very air started freezing.

The fire and the ice collided. A strong wind brushed against people’s skin. Gigantic whirlwinds appeared, as sharp as blades. The enemies also had a strategy!

“Earth and gold strength!” shouted Yang Mian extremely loudly. In a flash, a shield made of gold and earth strength appeared before them. The outsiders couldn’t see clearly anymore, the earth and gold Qi had also blotted out the sky.

“Destroy!” shouted someone extremely loudly. The gigantic shield broke apart.

Yang Mian made seals with his gigantic hands. An imprint appeared and grew to colossal size. The blade-sharp wind crashed against the gigantic imprint, forcing it back.

“Break!” A powerful strength pulsed out. The atmosphere seemed like it was going to collapse. Dazzling lights appeared everywhere. People could barely see the sky and the air seemed to be squeezing them!

“Release Hell death strength!” shouted Yang Mian extremely loudly. The crowd all released death strength. However, that death strength couldn’t pierce through the enemies’ attacks. The crowd felt desperate and their hearts started pounding.

“Back!” said Lin Feng. The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland looked glum, but they trusted Lin Feng and all of them pulled back.

“Disperse, everybody move in every direction chaotically. Like this, we can’t fight, we’re just easy targets!” shouted Lin Feng explosively. People released strength in every direction, however, the next waves of attacks continued filling the air in their direction. The enemies were getting closer and closer!

The air seemed like it was going to collapse. Another powerful whirlwind appeared, and many people were destroyed. That tactic was deadly!

“Ji Chang!” Lin Feng was astonished. He looked at the outsiders and noticed one of the leaders: it was Ji Chang! Ji Chang was using Cyan Dragon Totem attacks with nine Cyan Dragon Totems on

display. He looked like a king!

When I joined Champion University, he was already an incredible cultivator. Now, so much time has passed. He has even obtained the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. He must be at the top of the Huang Qi layer! He probably knows about Dao intent. Among the people of the Huang Qi layer, he must have no enemy at all!, thought Lin Feng.

In Champion University, the Celestial Country was known, and as expected, there was a passage between the Continent of the Nine Clouds and the Celestial Country. The problem was that back when Lin Feng had joined Champion University, he was still a new student, and only strong cultivators in Champion University knew about the Celestial Country.

Chapter 1898: Fighting Over and Over Again

On Hell's side, the army was moving chaotically. They were being oppressed by the strong cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Ji Chang stopped attacking. He proudly stood in the sky like a king and watched. Lin Feng and the others moved back. They saw many people die and fall from the sky. Their hearts were pounding violently.

"Don't try to protect yourself, just keep bombarding the atmosphere at the same time!" shouted Yang Mian furiously. If they didn't join hands and attacked chaotically, their power was limited. They had to join hands. They were losing too many people, and many of them were also being injured.

"We're going to lose the battle," said Lin Feng. The strong cultivators from Jalacandra Fairyland had underestimated the enemy. They were much weaker. On Hell's side, the losses were too important. The strong cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were slaughtering them.

Yang Mian looked furious. He moved his fists and a gigantic rotating imprint appeared, containing the vitality of the earth and sky. It shot forwards. At the same time, Yang Mian continued attacking. Dazzling imprints appeared and attacked another group.

"Die!" shouted Yang Mian explosively. He felt like an ant fighting against an army of lions.

"We'll lose if we move that chaotically. We have to make them disperse too then! Fighting chaotically can be good too!" shouted Yang Mian furiously and releasing death strength.

Lin Feng waved his hands and a powerful life and death pattern appeared. He didn't need to say anything, the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland understood. They started releasing and

condensing death strength at the same time. At the same time, Lin Feng moved his hands back and the life and death pattern grew to massive size and rained down.

“Condense the death strength in the lights!” shouted a strong cultivator of Jalacandra Fairyland explosively. Many people on Hell’s side noticed the gigantic life and death pattern. They also started condensing death strength, which moved into the life and death pattern. It was more and more magnificent and spectacular. Then, it rolled out like a flying rug in the wind.

The strong cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were taken aback. Who controlled that life and death pattern? He could surprisingly absorb death strength!

“Die!” said Lin Feng. The life and death pattern turned into a deadly ocean of energies. The death strength was destroying the earth and sky. People from Hell were astonished and continued adding more and more death strength.

The gigantic life and death pattern streaked across the sky and enveloped a group of strong cultivators. The death strength started corroding their bodies, and they almost instantly collapsed and died. Instantly, the other army started moving chaotically as well, trying to get away from the pattern.

“Opportunity!” Hell’s cultivators immediately understood there was an opportunity, so they released more death energy. The whole army of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was forced to disperse. If they didn’t do that, they could die all at once!

Ji Chang frowned as he looked over at Lin Feng. He was surprised and blurted out, “It’s him!”

Ji Chang had already seen Lin Feng once, when he had gone to the Godly Wood Valley and obtained the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood. Lin Feng had said he wanted the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood as well, and everybody had made fun of him. He had never thought back then that the next time he’d meet Lin Feng would be

here!

Ji Chang was convinced that Lin Feng couldn't have become too strong. However, he didn't understand why Lin Feng was here.

Lin Feng's third eye didn't have an imprint, which meant that he was on the side of the people from the Milky Way battlefield, from Hell. How had he ended up in Hell? Even for him, a strong cultivator of the Ji Clan, there was only one other way to go to Hell: the legendary forbidden area of Jiu You! Few people knew about it...

There was another possibility, that the person wasn't Lin Feng, he just looked like him a lot.

Lin Feng sensed something and looked back at Ji Chang.

When Lin Feng looked at Ji Chang, his soul started shaking, and he had the sensation his soul was going to collapse. It started shaking violently.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered. Life energy started flowing throughout his body.

"Break!" shouted Ji Chang from the other side of the battlefield. The whole atmosphere shook violently. More energies surrounded Lin Feng, and his blood started boiling even as he shivered.

"Ji Chang's Dao is much more powerful than Juxiao's Dao. He is even stronger than the one with the immortal king body!" muttered Lin Feng, gritting his teeth. His life energies pulsed around him. Lin Feng and Ji Chang were now calmly staring at one another.

It was the first time Lin Feng was facing Ji Chang, Champion University's strongest disciple. Someday, he'd definitely become a Champion. Lin Feng had to surpass him! As they were staring at one another, the two armies moved even more wildly around them.

Finally, Ji Chang stopped looking at Lin Feng and back at his

troops. Even though he was wondering why Lin Feng was there, he had to pay attention and remain vigilant. He needed to lead his army, or he wouldn't be able to win!

More Cyan Dragon Totems appeared. Ji Chang threw himself at Yang Mian, his Dragon Totems trailing streams of light. Someone tried to stop the dragons and died instantly. Nobody could stop Ji Chang!

Yang Mian noticed Ji Chang coming and glared at him furiously. This was going to be his main enemy!

Yang Mian did a knifehand strike, and a river of destructive strength invaded the atmosphere.

“Die!” shouted Ji Chang explosively. Two light beams emerged from his eyes, shooting for Yang Mian. However, at the same time, Yang Mian's third eye became dazzling and a disc imprint appeared. An ancient silhouette appeared behind him, majestic and imposing, and formed kingly hand seals.

The Dragon Totems roared, nine Cyan Dragon Totems baring their fangs. The now-gigantic ancient imprint collided with the dragons, the impact blinding.

What a powerful attack! Unless I use Dao strength, I can't really compete with them, especially in terms of soul strength. I am not qualified at all to fight against them!, thought Lin Feng when he saw them fight. He knew how strong he really was. Ji Chang could easily kill someone like Jumo. Lin Feng had managed to kill the members of the Ancient Demon Clan thanks to his deployment spells and the demon pond. However, there was still a significant difference between Lin Feng and these people!

The battle was frenzied and uncontrolled. There were people fighting everywhere. Someone suddenly threw themselves at Lin Feng. Lin Feng moved back to the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland and they all released death strength at the same time.

“Destroy!” said Lin Feng raising his head. Death lights appeared and pierced through the man’s body. He turned grey and died instantly.

Lin Feng picked up the corpse’s items and gazed into the distance. Strong cultivators kept dying one after another. Lin Feng wondered, How come those people are dying so easily?

Chapter 1899: Understanding the Dao

The two armies kept fighting. The Yellow Springs were filled with strong cultivators' corpses floating on the surface or drowning. Throughout history, trillions of people had died and fallen into the Yellow Springs.

Fewer and fewer people still had the strength to fight. Lin Feng and his friends from Jalacandra Fairyland were strong enough to continue fighting, and their strategy was good, too.

Lin Feng kept pulling back. Strong cultivators kept falling from the sky, dead. The Yellow Springs were turning red from all the blood.

The Yellow Springs were like acid rivers, the corpses quickly dissolved after falling into them.

Suddenly, a band of strong cultivators moved towards Lin Feng, a small group of attackers!

"That person controls death strength. Let's kill him!" said someone coldly. People converged on Lin Feng from every direction.

"Earth cosmic energy, release!" shouted someone coldly. A powerful strength surrounded Lin Feng and his friends. They could sense their blood and bones starting to ache from the pressure.

Lin Feng released a death pattern which moved forwards, and at the same time, the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland released their death strength.

"Empty space cosmic energies!" shouted someone loudly. A golden hand appeared and surrounded the death pattern.

"Kill him!" said Lin Feng coldly. Death strength surrounded the one who had just spoken. A powerful black sword pierced through his body, inflicting a mortal wound.

An explosive strength suddenly turned into a dragon and shot towards the sword. However, at that moment, death strength surrounded him and ate away at his life.

“Destroy!” said a voice which seemed to come from Hell. Sword energies pierced through his head. His face was frozen in desperation. What had happened?... he fell down into the Yellow Springs and his blood tainted the waters below

“Back, attack with strength!” said Lin Feng. He released a Purple Tank, the others used death strength to attack and pulled back at the same time. Lin Feng suddenly directed some death energies to surround someone and said, “Kill him!”

Endless death strength surrounded his target again, and he died almost instantly. He was extremely strong, but he had died in but a heartbeat!

Lin Feng and his friends retreated further and further. They attacked at the same time, and people who got too close to them died instantly. Many people stopped chasing them, some others even retreated from them.

The outsiders realized that they couldn't fight against Lin Feng and his allies. They were too strong, especially Lin Feng. Lin Feng even killed some people who had turned around and had started running away!

The members of Jalacandra Fairyland took deep breaths. The only things Lin Feng was saying were die, kill, destroy! However, their people survived thanks to him. He was smart and had many ways to deal with the outsiders. In case of danger, he made move them back, and when there were opportunities, they attacked. They knew no matter which army won or lost, it would be difficult to defeat them with Lin Feng there!

The outsiders were furious. Fighting against Lin Feng was extremely frustrating. When they approached, he moved back, and when they retreated, he chased them. They knew that Lin Feng

and his band were too strong. The terrifyingly strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland were all obeying Lin Feng's orders precisely!

At their level, if an individual wanted to destroy an army, it was extremely complicated. To do that, a cultivator likely needed a method to make everybody submit before him. Ji Chang had incredible powers, being the first student of Champion University and the leader of a big army of strong cultivators.

Even though nobody had made Lin Feng the leader of his group, things had happened naturally. People trusted him and found him strong enough for the role.

Very quickly, more strong cultivators attacked Lin Feng and the others again. The attackers fell down into the Yellow Springs one after another, dead.

However, Lin Feng could only influence the battle a little bit. They couldn't make their side win. The Hell side had already suffered too many losses, and couldn't get the advantage back. They couldn't reform a powerful army again.

The battle seemed to be lost already. Lin Feng had no interest in wasting his energy trying to win anymore. He could only stand in the air and watch the battle.

What a dangerous fight!

Ji Chang's path must be the Path of Destruction. With the power of his mind, he can probably destroy people easily. He can probably oppress my physical body as well. He can probably kill weak people just by glancing at them. If he became stronger, he'd have the power of his entire army too..., thought Lin Feng while watching Ji Chang fight against Yang Mian.

Nobody could prevent those two people from fighting, they were both far too strong. Yang Mian could prevent people from modifying their strength as they wished. It was a powerful ability.

Of course, neither of them had very high levels on the Path of the

Dao, only basics.

“Yang Mian is one of the descendants of the Ten Yama Courts’ kings. He’s very strong, and even stronger than many people in Hell. Ji Chang is terrifying, he isn’t weaker than Yang Mian,” observed a strong cultivator of Jalacandra Fairyland.

Lin Feng knew that Ji Chang was the first student of Champion University, and he also knew that he had the potential to become the Champion of the city. He was currently the second strongest student in the Holy City. Yang Mian could compete with him. Since he could compete with Ji Chang, it meant that he was probably amongst the strongest people of his generation in Hell.

Ji Chang’s Dao can destroy the earth and sky. Yang Mian’s Dao can turn into explosive vortex imprints. He can also use the strength of the ten thousand things of creation thanks to the Blue Uptala Lotus. How could I be restrained to the life and death pattern on the Path of Life and Death?, thought Lin Feng in a moment of inspiration. He waved his hands, and sharp sword lights appeared, all of them containing black sword lights. However, his sword lights quickly dispersed. Lin Feng sensed something as they did; his Dao was too rudimentary. He couldn’t do the same thing as Ji Chang and Yang Mian.

“Life serves to save people. Death serves to kill people. On the path, I need to make my Death Dao intent into my attacks, and in Hell, death is black water.” Lin Feng’s eyes were glittering and flashing. He made a knifehand strike, and a black river containing death strength appeared.

The black water pulsed with death energy, looking very destructive. When Lin Feng saw that, he smiled. He had understood something! In the future, this would definitely help him when fighting. He wouldn’t need to cast deployment spells all the time. Deployment spells were powerful, but they were static and required time.

Chapter 1900: Dispersion

He's become stronger!?, thought the members of Jalacandra Fairyland as they watched Lin Feng. They were all amazed by his strength. Lin Feng's comprehension was incredible. He was supposed to be a medium-level emperor, but he was way too strong for that!

"Lin Feng, it seems Hell can't win this battle anymore," a strong cultivator from Jalacandra Fairyland said to Lin Feng.

"Those people were prepared a long time ago and came here, they were very organized. When we saw them arrive, we hastily formed an army. Who do you think had the best chance to win?" asked Lin Feng.

"The outsiders, of course. In the past, we always had the advantage, though!"

"Of course. Hell can quickly win again. A year's time isn't much. When the time comes, everybody will disperse and we'll be able to create an army in secret. Then, we'll come back and win!" Lin Feng said calmly.

The others nodded agreement. Indeed. That was fine too. This place was here to practice and become stronger in, anyway.

"What should we do?"

"We can't live together on the same battlefield. We have to make everybody disperse for real," Lin Feng said. Then, he pointed at a small group and said, "Let's go. Let's destroy that group. We'll also become stronger, and it'll be helpful for everybody else on our side."

Lin Feng was thinking of solutions which were good for him. During the coming year, he'd be able to fight and go to the other side to head back to the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He couldn't stay in Hell his entire life. He had also made an agreement with the

Moon Group. Initially, they had three years, and now, less than two years were left. He had to get back to the Continent of the Nine Clouds during the coming year!

Lin Feng and the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland gathered together and destroyed some small bands.

“Condense death strength!” shouted Lin Feng. His pattern appeared again, and they condensed death strength which moved towards the pattern. Some enemies attacked Lin Feng and the others at the same time.

Lin Feng waved his hands, life and death lights appeared and turned into a thread of death Qi. He waved his hands again, and black water washed out towards his opponents.

The black water and the death Qi surged towards the enemies who retreated quickly. However, Lin Feng waved his hands again and the black water surged crazily, drowning some people within. When the water disappeared, those people fell, dying.

The strong cultivators from Jalacandra Fairyland chased them and killed them before picking up their loot.

The outsiders pulled long faces. What a powerful black water! Lin Feng’s attacks were extremely powerful with the help of his friends from Jalacandra Fairyland.

“Die!” said Lin Feng. Death strength turned into death swords and pierced through the air.

The strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland felt even better. Lin Feng’s Dao power was becoming better and better. They could continue lending death strength to Lin Feng, and nobody would be able to resist them. Lin Feng’s achievements on the Path of Life and Death were incredible!

The battle continued. It was constant and cruel, and corpses kept falling into the Yellow Springs.

Finally, the two armies resolved into a gigantic line. It was getting more and more difficult to find people fighting. They had truly dispersed, and the battle had lost all sense of organization. Lin Feng killed a strong cultivator with death strength and looked at the strong cultivators of Jalacandra Fairyland. “We should move!”

“Where are we going?”

“I need to practice for some time, and then I’ll come back and continue fighting. In one year, we can form another army. You can also do what you wish. If you have other plans, it doesn’t matter. But the best thing would be not to disperse. After all, we have to stay safe,” said Lin Feng.

Everybody nodded., “We already did all we could. The battle is already broken up, and we can’t do much more. At the same time, we should also inform other people. We need a bigger army, and then we can come back and kill them,” one of the other cultivators spoke up.

“Alright. I’m sure other people think the same as you. It’s better to be prepared, just in case,” said Lin Feng. Their group started leaving the Milky Way battlefield. They had obtained many treasures and become stronger. They had to think about their own destiny too, though. This battle was too dangerous.

Lin Feng and the others noticed some battles here and there, but they didn’t get involved, they didn’t want to risk their lives. Sometimes, they bumped into some weak people and just killed them. When they left the Milky Way battlefield, they noticed some people who had fought with them against the outsiders. They didn’t fight against one another anymore, they just glanced at one another. On Hell’s side, the losses were too severe.

Everybody in the Celestial Country started hearing about the

great war. Many strong cultivators were terrified and tried to hide. At the same time, others gathered into small groups.

The strong cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds continued slaughtering people. A powerful strength pressured the strong cultivators from Hell. Everybody in the Celestial Country was terrified.

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others arrived in one of the hidden territories of Jalacandra Fairyland. There was nobody inside anymore. Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and started inspecting the items he had obtained in the Celestial Country.

He had killed many strong cultivators and had obtained many things, obviously.

Lin Feng spent one day sorting out everything. He was amazed at his spoils. Emperors were real heroes. They all had incredible treasures, Ancient scriptures, techniques, and talismans.

At that moment, Lin Feng recalled his godly awareness after having inspected a talisman. He was stunned.

Among the people from the Ancient Demon Clan, there was a technique used to make the body stronger. There was also a real demon pond which could cleanse demon cultivators' bodies in an incredible way. They were incredibly powerful.

In the talismans, there were legends and teachings from their ancestors. Maybe the Ancient Demon Clan had the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony!

Lin Feng inspected everything and continued cultivating. He would have to reach the other side of the Milky Way battlefield someday. He had to be extremely strong at that time, but now he was still too weak.

——

In the outside world, the war was terrifying as it continued. The members of the Continent of the Nine Clouds' army were

extremely strong, but everybody in Hell had already gathered. There was blood everywhere in the Celestial Country. All the strong cultivators from Hell couldn't wait for the year to be over. New people from Hell would arrive and avenge them!

Lin Feng left the mysterious place of Jalacandra Fairyland and rose up in the air. There were corpses everywhere. He sighed, thinking of the great war that had happened.

During this time, Lin Feng had already been cleansed a second time by waves of Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. He also learned to control Life and Death Dao strength much better. He could carry out powerful life and death Dao attacks more easily now.

I'll head back to Hell, I wonder whether Officer Shichuan is still there or not. If he's there, he'll help me inform Officer Uptala and then I'll come back to the Celestial Country!, thought Lin Feng. Then, his silhouette flickered and he headed for the edge of the Celestial Country.

"Someone from Hell!" In the distance, some people noticed that Lin Feng had no imprint in his third eye. One of them waved his hands and red blood appeared. Lin Feng's blood started boiling, and he threw himself at those people.

"Die!" said Lin Feng, releasing empty sword energies. The outsider's faces changed drastically. Lin Feng just grunted coldly. Black death energies suddenly surrounded the outsiders as Lin Feng continued moving forwards. He had also put fire into his attack now! The flames immediately burned them alive, and their charred corpses fell down. Lin Feng continued on!

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1801: The Seven Assassins](#)

[Chapter 1802: Heavenly Grace Godly Wood](#)

[Chapter 1803](#)

[Chapter 1804: At The Foot Of The Tree](#)

[Chapter 1805: Heavenly Grace](#)

[Chapter 1806: Chosen by the Godly Wood](#)

[Chapter 1807: Nobody Knows What Awaits Them, But who can't Recognize a Monarch?](#)

[Chapter 1808: Getting Ready To Go Back](#)

[Chapter 1809: Memories](#)

[Chapter 1810: Can I Come With You?](#)

[Chapter 1811: On Yao Ye Island](#)

[Chapter 1812: Apparition Of A Palace](#)

[Chapter 1813: Offering Great Imperial Scriptures](#)

[Chapter 1814: Protected](#)

[Chapter 1815: Tiantai's Growth](#)

[Chapter 1816: Chatting](#)

[Chapter 1817: Forcing The Way](#)

[Chapter 1818: Huge Difference](#)

[Chapter 1819: Responsibility](#)

[Chapter 1820: Slaughtering](#)

[Chapter 1821: Important Decisions](#)

[Chapter 1822: Helping Your Disciple](#)

[Chapter 1823: Armies](#)

[Chapter 1824: Fighting Against Ni Chen](#)

[Chapter 1825: Death Better Than Life](#)

[Chapter 1826: No Choice](#)

[Chapter 1827: Easy Targets](#)

[Chapter 1828: Strong Cultivators Landing](#)

[Chapter 1829: Leaving Sorrowfully](#)

[Chapter 1830: Ba Huang Nowadays](#)

[Chapter 1831: Godly Wood's Sap](#)

[Chapter 1832: The Sword Emperor Rises!](#)

[Chapter 1833: Emperor Wen's Investigation](#)
[Chapter 1834: Come to Jiange Tomorrow](#)
[Chapter 1835: Destruction](#)
[Chapter 1836: Tian Long's Tenth Prince](#)
[Chapter 1837: First Disciple](#)
[Chapter 1838: Worried About Them](#)
[Chapter 1839: Small King of the Underworld](#)
[Chapter 1840: Deadly Injuries](#)
[Chapter 1841: Jiu You](#)
[Chapter 1842: Jiu You's Government](#)
[Chapter 1843: Lin Feng's Wildness](#)
[Chapter 1844: Changes in the Empire](#)
[Chapter 1845: Nothing to Worry About](#)
[Chapter 1846: Jiu You – Nine Netherworlds](#)
[Chapter 1847: Hell](#)
[Chapter 1848: Shrine](#)
[Chapter 1849: Famous Methods](#)
[Chapter 1850: Hei Lao](#)
[Chapter 1851: Blue Uptala Lotus and Hellfire](#)
[Chapter 1852: Blade Technique et Sword Technique](#)
[Chapter 1853: Last Battle](#)
[Chapter 1854: Powerful Battle](#)
[Chapter 1855: A Good Harvest](#)
[Chapter 1856: Incredible Battle](#)
[Chapter 1857: One Against Six](#)
[Chapter 1858: Godly Soul Kalpa](#)
[Chapter 1859: City Government](#)
[Chapter 1860: Blue Uptala Lotus](#)
[Chapter 1861: Two Adorable Sisters](#)
[Chapter 1862: Xue Baguio's Memories](#)
[Chapter 1863: Competition Over Territories](#)
[Chapter 1864: Different Paths](#)
[Chapter 1865: Death](#)
[Chapter 1866: Fury](#)
[Chapter 1867: Acknowledged By The Gods](#)
[Chapter 1868: The Path of Life and Death](#)
[Chapter 1869: Powerful Life and Death](#)
[Chapter 1870: Wang Zhuo's Death](#)
[Chapter 1871: Defeat](#)

[Chapter 1872: Two People](#)

[Chapter 1873: You're The Only Real Loser!](#)

[Chapter 1874: Uptala Army](#)

[Chapter 1875: Challenge of the Celestial Country](#)

[Chapter 1876: Endless Strong Cultivators](#)

[Chapter 1877: Danger All Around](#)

[Chapter 1878: Long and Difficult Battle](#)

[Chapter 1879: Jalacandra Fairyland](#)

[Chapter 1880: Peerless Fighting Ability](#)

[Chapter 1881: Aoxu](#)

[Chapter 1882: Milky Way Battlefield](#)

[Chapter 1883](#)

[Chapter 1884: In The Celestial Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1885: Pathfinder Peak](#)

[Chapter 1886: How to Walk On the Path](#)

[Chapter 1887: Forcing The Way](#)

[Chapter 1888: The Path of Life and Death is Complex](#)

[Chapter 1889: Making the Skies Furious Again](#)

[Chapter 1890: Ancient Demon Clan](#)

[Chapter 1891: Demon Pond](#)

[Chapter 1892: The Evolved Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony's Deployment Spell](#)

[Chapter 1893: Fighting Over the Milky Way](#)

[Chapter 1894: Condensing strength](#)

[Chapter 1895: Ji Wuyou Nowadays](#)

[Chapter 1896: Destroying the Ancient Demon Clan](#)

[Chapter 1897: Military Strategy](#)

[Chapter 1898: Fighting Over and Over Again](#)

[Chapter 1899: Understanding the Dao](#)

[Chapter 1900: Dispersion](#)